This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

B 1,648,866

THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
LIBRARIES

BERNARDO O'HIGGINS.

Latin-American Republics

A HISTORY OF CHILE

By ANSON URIEL HANCOCK

Author of "Old Abraham Jackson," "Coitlan; A Tale of the Inca World," Etc.

CHICAGO
CHARLES H. SERGEL AND COMPANY
MDCCCXCIII

1893

F
3081
.H23

Copyright, 1893. By
Charles H. Sergel and Company

The Sergel Press

PREFACE.

Two periods of Chilean history have already been well presented to the outside world: the period of the revolution and that of the late war between Chile and the Peruvian-Bolivian alliance. Respecting the period between the years 1829 and 1879 there is no connected account in English. Since the war with Peru, Chile has attracted considerable outside attention, and within the past two years there have been several graphic accounts of modern Chile. What is now needed is a volume that will condense the information, which in English is scattered through many books, and give a complete, short history and picture of Chile in a single volume; that I undertake to furnish in this work.

I have devoted considerable space to the late civil war in Chile and have cut somewhat short previous political wars, which, in point of the numbers killed, were quite as bloody as this last. But all grew out of the same political conditions, and the last war, leading to the downfall of President Balmaceda, was in reality the culmination of years of political strife. Were I to go into the details of every skirmish between the forces of contending party leaders, the reader would be wearied with the recital. I have given results rather than ramifica-

164554

tions. Chile has been more fortunate than her neighbors in having a fairly well established government and a better class of leaders; she has subordinated the military to the civil authority and has usually preferred statesmen to generals for her presidents. Still, she has had at different times quite too much of civil strife for the best interests of her exchequer, industries, commercial interests and national well-being. But she has passed her era of constitution making; she has a body of laws and precedents, a historic past, and patriotic, intelligent citizens; the lesson of the civil war of 1891 is, that the dictators will be no longer tolerated; the government must become more and more popular, representative and constitutional. If Chile's intricate foreign relations do not lead her into wars with neighboring republics, an era of progress and peace is before her.

A. U. H.

Chicago, 1893.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PART I—THE COLONIAL PERIOD

CHAPTER I—ALMAGRO'S EXPEDITION—EARLY HISTORY AND INHABITANTS

Pizarro's Rivals—The Inca Empire—Almagro sets out for Chile—His claims to Cuzco—Sends forward Paullu Topu—Hardships encountered in the mountains—Sends forward party to obtain relief—Appearance of Chile—Different tribes—Their civilization and manner of living—Explorations—Almagro reinstates an ulmen—Engagement with the Indians—Return to Chile—Subsequent career of Almagro 21

CHAPTER II—THE ARAUCANIANS—VALDIVIA'S EXPEDITION—THE FOUNDING OF SANTIAGO

Character of Valdivia—Character of the Araucanians—Their military system and social organization—De Hoz and Carmargo —Pizarro ignores the royal commission and appoints Valdivia to undertake the conquest of Chile—The expedition—Founding of Santiago and trouble with the Indians—Battle on the Mapocho river—Disaffection—Discovery of gold 36

CHAPTER III—OPENING AND CONQUERING THE COUNTRY—LA SERENA, CONCEPCION AND OTHER CITIES FOUNDED

Valdivia determines to send Monroy and Miranda to Peru—Murder of a chief's son—Vaca de Castro sends recruits to Chile—Pastene explores the southern coasts—Massacre at Quillota

mines—Founding cities—Conquests—Valdivia goes to Peru, leaving Francisco de Villagran in command—Execution of De Hoz—Destruction of La Serena—Aguirre punishes the natives —Apportioning the lands—Aillavalu gives battle to Valdivia—Lincoyan—Valdivia establishes himself at Concepcion and seeks a title from Spain—Founding of Imperial and Villarica—Expedition toward the south—Recloma—Fortresses built—Aguirre dispatched to conquer provinces Cujo and Tucuman—Founding of Angol, the seventh city—Alderete sent to Spain—Colocolo incites Araucanians to resistance—Caupolican—Stratagems and attacks upon forts—Battle at Tucapel—Lautaro—Death of Valdivia 44

CHAPTER IV—LAUTARO AND CAUPOLICAN—VALDIVIA'S SUCCESSORS—DON GARCIA—DEFEATS AND SUCCESSES

Spaniards in the south retire to Imperial and Valdivia—Skirmishes with the Araucanians—Villagran takes charge of the government—He crosses the Biobio and attacks the Indians at Mt. Mariguenu—Defeat of the Spaniards—Destruction of Concepcion—Villagran undertakes to rebuild the city, but again is defeated—Smallpox—Villagran and Aguirre submit their claims to the Royal Audience—Siege of Imperial and Valdivia—Lautaro proceeds against Santiago—Defeat and death of Lautaro—Events of the year 1557—Shipwreck of Alderete—Don Garcia arrives at Concepcion with a large force—Millalauco . 55

CHAPTER V—CONTINUED WARS WITH THE ARAUCANIANS—DEATH OF CAUPOLICAN—DISCOVERY OF THE ARCHIPELAGO OF CHILOE—FRANCISCO DE VILLAGRAN

Battle of Mt. Pinto—Battle at the Biobio—Don Garcia's inhuman acts—Galvarino—Founding of Cañete—Skirmishes with the Araucanians—Caupolican's stratagem—Rebuilding of Concepcion—The Cunches resort to an artifice—Exploring the Chiloé Archipelago—The poet Ercilla—Death of Caupolican—Caupolican II.—Siege of Imperial—Defeat of the Araucanians—Rebuilding forts and cities—Quiroga 63

CHAPTER VI—ANTIGUENU, PAILLATARU AND PAYNENANCU—QUIROGA, ESTABLISHMENT OF THE ROYAL AUDIENCE—INDIANS OF CHILOE—SOTOMAYOR

The Araucanians prepare for a renewal of the war—Defeat of the Spaniards at Mt. Mariguenu—Cañete burned—Sieges of Concepcion, Arauco and Angol—Defeat and death of Antiguenu—

Defeat of Lillemu—Founding of Castro and Chacao and Chiloé —The Indians of Chiloé—Establishment of an Independent Royal Audience—Renewed hostilities with the Araucanians—Don Melchor de Bravo—Earthquakes—Mestizos—Dissolution of the Royal Audience—Different governors—Continued wars with the Araucanians 73

CHAPTER VII—CAYANCARU AND OTHER TOQUIS—SIR JOHN CAVENDISH—JANEQUEO—LOYOLA

Cayancaru elected toqui—Proceeds against the Spanish port of Karampangui—Lonconobal, Antulevu, Tarochina—Sotomayor builds forts of Trinidad and Espiritu Santo—Cayancaru attacks Arauco—Guepotan—Defeats, successes and expeditions—Nongoniel—Cadeguala elected toqui—Pirates, English and Dutch descents upon the coast—Sir Thomas Cavendish lands at Quintero Bay and is attacked by Alonzo Molina—Angol set on fire—The fortress of Puren taken by Cadeguala—Combat between Garcia Ramon and Cadiguala—Guanoalca elected toqui—Juan Tapia—Events of the year 1589—Janequeo determines to avenge the death of her husband—Defeats the governor—She fortifies herself in the mountains—Her force dispersed—Quintuguenu elected toqui—Spaniards take the fort of Mt. Mariguenu—The younger Colocolo joins the Spaniards—Failure to effect a treaty of peace—Paillaeco succeeds Quintuguenu and is defeated—The governor withdraws the troops to Santiago—Leaves command to Pedro Viscarra and goes to Peru—Loyola appointed captain-general—Paillamachu sends Antipillan to Loyola 82

CHAPTER VIII—GENERAL UPRISING OF THE ARAUCANIANS—VISCARRA, QUINONES, RAMON, LUIS DE VALDIVIA, TALAVERANNO, ULLOA—DESCENT OF THE DUTCH

Loyola founds Coya—Exploits of the toqui, Paillamachu—Forts erected at Puren and Lumaco—Attacked by Paillamachu and demolished—Governor Loyola killed—All the southern cities besieged by the Araucanians—Concepcion and Chillan burned —Viscarra takes charge of the government—Francisco Quinones chosen governor—His cruelties—Valdivia burned and other cities besieged—The Dutch plunder Chiloé—Ramon appointed governor—Rivera succeeds him—The Biobio fortified —Fall of Vallarica, Imperial and Orsorno—Inez Aguillera—Successes of the Araucanians and close of the war—Huenecura as toqui—Ramon restored to the office of captain-general and

arrives with troops—Builds a fort at Boroa—Lisperguer—Huenecura attacks a fort—Ramon's army destroyed—King Philip III. reëstablishes the Royal Audience — Huenecura defeated — Aillavilu, toqui — Luis de Valdivia undertakes to negotiate a treaty of peace—Recall of Rivera—Ancanamon, toqui—Failure of treaty—Utiflame—Talavaranno, Ulloa . 91

CHAPTER IX—THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY

Loncothegua succeeded by Lientur as toqui—Successes of the Araucanians—Cerda succeeds Ulloa as captain-general—Pedro Ulloa—Noruena—Cordova—Putapichion attacks Fort of Nativity—Cordova ravages the Indian country—Governor La Vega carries on war against the Araucanians for ten years—The Dutch—Sir James Narborough—The Marquis of Baides—Treaty of Quillin and close of the Araucanian war—Renewal of the war—Spanish governors to 1665—Second treaty of peace—Events from 1665 to close of the century—French blockade—Condition of the country 101

CHAPTER X—THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

The condition of Spain—The French—Character of settlers—Captains of Friends and renewal of the Araucanian wars—The peace of Negrete—Cano—Founding of cities—Different captains-general—Establishment of the University of San Felipe—Mint—Earthquake of 1751 and the destruction of Concepcion—Amat—Failure of the attempt to compel the Araucanians to build cities—Jáuregui—Conspiracy of Gramuset and Berney—Ambrosio O'Higgins—Condition of Chile at the close of the century—Expelling the Jesuits—Religious orders—Brief accounts of the administrations of different captains-general of this century to the time of the revolution 109

PART II

THE REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

CHAPTER I—THE REVOLT OF SPAIN'S COLONIES

Spain at the beginning of the eighteenth century—Organization of the Juntas—The causes of the revolution—Tyranny of Span-

ish viceroys and captains-general—Spanish monopolies—Tithes —Peculations — Tupac Amaru — Ubalde — Purnacagua—The struggle at Buenos Ayres, La Paz and Quito—The inhuman Goyeneche—The uprising at Caracas—San Martin and Belgrano—The revolution at Buenos Ayres—Royalist successes in Peru—Buenos Ayres decides to assist Chile—Progress of the war in all the colonies—Bolivar—Aim of the first Juntas . 127

CHAPTER II—JUNTAS, DICTATORS AND DISSENSIONS—FIRST STAGES OF THE REVOLUTION

Formation of parties in Chile—Formation of the first junta—Arrest of citizens in 1810—Disposition of the captain-general —Conde de la Conquista made president—Second congress called—Doctor Rozas—Jonte's mission to Santiago—Riot in the capital quelled by Carrera—Execution of Figueroa—Trouble in the congress over representation—Seizure of Spanish officers—The Carreras compel congress to select a new junta—José Miguel Carrera's power—Dissolution of congress—Reaction in favor of the Spanish party—Banishment of Rozas—High-handed measures of the Carreras—The viceroy, Abascal, dispatches Pareja to Chile with an army—Attacks at Yerbas Buenas and San Carlos—Patriot successes—O'Higgins and Mackenna—The royalists besieged in Chillan—Sanchez—O'Higgins given the chief command—Capture of the Carreras—Arrival of Gainza—Attack at Membrillar—Gainza retires to Talca—Lastra named supreme director—Arrival of Captain Hilliar and treaty of Lircay—Founding of the public library, the national institution and other schools—The first newspaper 141

CHAPTER III—1814 to 1817—THE STRUGGLE FOR FREEDOM—SAN MARTIN'S EXPEDITION

The Carreras abolish the office of supreme director—Party dissensions—Arrival of Osorio to reinforce Gainza—Defeat at Cachapoal and Rancagua—Consternation of the patriots—Flight to Mendoza—Osorio restores the authority of Spain—Banishment of citizens—San Bruno and Marco, their infamous acts—San Martin organizes an army at Mendoza—Rodriguez harasses the Spaniards—The passage of the Andes—Battle of Chacabuco and defeat of the royalists—San Martin enters Santiago—Bernardo O'Higgins named supreme director—Confiscations—Skirmishes in the south 157

CHAPTER IV—THE BATTLE OF MAYPO

Abascal sends another army to Chile under Osorio—Unsuccessful siege of Talcahuano—Osorio advances toward the capital—Independence of Chile formally declared—Skirmishes at Talca and Cancha Rayada—Rout of the patriot army—Rodriguez rallies the patriots in the capital—Reorganization of the patriot army—Details of the battle of Maypo—San Martin returns to Buenos Ayres—Execution of the Carreras—Murder of Manuel Rodriguez—The war in the south—Benavides . 168

CHAPTER V—CARRYING THE WAR INTO PERU—NAVAL OPERATIONS

Efforts in forming a navy—Capture of the "Maria Isabel"—Arrival of Lord Cochrane—Departure of the Chilean fleet to Peru—Attack and repulse at Callao—Unimportant naval operations—Cochrane chases the "Prueba"—Capture of Valdivia by Lord Cochrane 179

CHAPTER VI—THE STRUGGLE IN PERU

O'Higgins as supreme director—San Martin's appointees—Efforts to fit out the Peruvian expedition—The purpose of the expedition—Colonel Arenales marches a detachment into the interior—Armistice and diplomatic efforts—Cochrane captures the "Esmeralda"—San Martin establishes his headquarters at Huara—Defection of the Peruvian Numancia regiment—San Martin's conciliatory policy—Lord Cochrane's exploits in the south—The second armistice—San Martin enters Lima—Proclamation of independence—San Martin assumes control of the government—San Martin and Bolivar both seek to possess Guayaquil—Monteagudo—San Martin resigns—Ayacucho and the last battles of the war 186

CHAPTER VII—PARTY DISSENSIONS

Disputes concerning tariffs, and Lord Cochrane's measures to collect duties—Execution of the outlaw, Vicente Benavides—Assembling of congress—Party machinations—Official corruption—Revolt of Concepcion and Coquimbo—O'Higgins is asked to resign—Arrival of General Freire in the capital—He becomes supreme director—Review of O'Higgins' administration 194

PART III

THE ERA OF CONSTITUTION MAKING

CHAPTER I—THE LIBERALS IN POWER—FREIRE AND PINTO

Freire's rule—Doings of the congress—The new tariff—The first constitution—Freire's unsuccessful expedition to Chiloé—Dissatisfaction and demoralization—Dissolution of the senate and setting aside of the constitution—Freire's efforts to build a navy—Cienfuegos, Muzi and Ferreti—First troubles with the church—Financial difficulties—Revival of the *estancos*—Political excitement and attempted assassinations—Congress dissolved—Troubles in the new congress—Political parties—Freire's second expedition to Chiloé—Defeat of the royalists and the incorporation of Chiloé into the republic—Attempts to form a confederacy—Freire first president, Pinto vice-president—Freire resigns—Pinto assumes the office of president—The last acts of the congress—Troubles with the Araucanians—Difficulty between a British officer and a Chilean—Assembling of congress—Further efforts to draft a constitution—Pinto resigns—Party agitations 201

CHAPTER II—THE CONSERVATIVES IN POWER—PRIETO AND PORTALES—FREIRE'S REVOLUTION—EXPEDITION AGAINST PERU—THE BATTLE OF YUNGAY

Political changes and disturbances—Revolution started by Prieto—Junta formed and congress called—Vicuña, Tagle, Ovalle, Portales—Deplorable condition of the country—The battle of Lircay—Bulnes dispatched against the Pincheiras—The constitution of 1833—Freire captured and banished—Santa Cruz—Affairs in Peru and Bolivia—War with the confederation of Peru and Bolivia—Death of Portales—Defeat of Santa Cruz—Distinguished scholars—Educational matters—William Wheelright, and the first steamers—Church dignitaries—Markets and finances 216

CHAPTER III—THE ADMINISTRATIONS OF PRESIDENTS BULNES AND MONTT—THE CIVIL WAR OF 1859

Bulnes' cabinet—University at Santiago—Bello—Literature,

science and art—State institutions—Mines—Colonists—Debt—Punta Arenas—Repressive measures of the conservatives—Political societies—Manuel Montt—Urriola's insurrection—Revolution headed by General Cruz—Battle of Loncomilla—Defeat of the revolutionists—Material advancement—Various laws—Education—The policy of Montt and Varas—Second term—Troubles in the church—Party changes—Renewed insurrections—Civil war of 1859—The elections . . . 227

CHAPTER IV—THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT PEREZ—OUTBREAK OF THE ARAUCANIANS—CHURCH QUESTIONS—THE WAR WITH SPAIN

Perez forms a ministry of moderate liberals and conservatives—His policy—Guentecol—M. de Tounans as King Antoine I—Doings of congress—England claims damages—Catastrophe in a Jesuit church—Railway opened between Santiago and Valparaiso—Measures to aid colonization—Exciting debates upon religious questions—Cause of the war with Spain—Ports blockaded—Naval operations—Bombardment of Valparaiso—Efforts to arrange treaty of peace—Immigration—Skirmishes with the Araucanians—Attempted impeachment of the supreme court—Political reforms—Treaty with the Argentine Republic—Agricultural exhibition 237

CHAPTER V—THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT ERRAZURIZ

Elections—Active canvass of church questions—Reformatory measures passed by congress—Circulating libraries—Party differences—The Patagonian and Bolivian boundary questions—Earthquakes—Coal fields—Loans negotiated—Railroads . . 255

CHAPTER VI—THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT PINTO

Political agitations—Pinto, Amunategui, Mackenna—Pinto's cabinet—Boundary disputes—Financial difficulties—Paper money—Failure of crops—Nitrates and minerals—Statistical items—Schools—Disputes in respect to church questions—Taforó—The Roman delegate—The civil marriage law . . . 263

PART IV

THE WAR WITH PERU AND BOLIVIA

CHAPTER I—THE BEGINNING OF THE WAR

Causes of the war—The Chileans take possession of Antofagasta—Skirmish at Calama—Peru seeks to arbitrate—The armies—The navies—The Army of the South formed at Iquique—Naval operations—Bombardment of Pisagua 272

CHAPTER II—NAVAL BATTLES—PRAT AND GRAU

President Prado sails south with the Peruvian fleet to take command of the army—President Daza of Bolivia arrives with troops—Captain Grau attacks the "Esmeralda" and "Covadonga"—Loss of the "Independencia"—The "Huascar" sinks the "Esmeralda"—Heroic death of Captain Prat—Other naval operations and engagements—Changes of Chilean officers—Gallant act of Lieutenant Diez—Battle between the "Huascar" and the "Cochrane"—Death of brave Captain Grau 280

CHAPTER III—THE WAR IN THE SOUTH—PISAGUA, SAN FRANCISCO, TARAPACA—PERU LOSES DESERT PROVINCES

Description of the desert provinces—Forces in Tarapacá—Capture of Pisagua—Cavalry action at Jeramia—Army manœuvres—Battle of San Francisco—Defeat of the allies and evacuation of Iquique—Battle of Tarapacá—Ports blockaded—Pierola heads a revolt in Lima, Campero in La Paz—Operations along the coast—Attempts of Peruvians to destroy Chilean vessels—Callao blockaded 289

CHAPTER IV—THE OCCUPATION OF MOQUEGA, TACNA AND ARICA—NAVAL OPERATIONS—THE ADVANCE UPON LIMA—FIRST ATTEMPT TO ARRANGE A TREATY

The battle at Los Angeles—Revolt headed by Colonel Silva against Campero—Cavalry action at Locumba—The battle of Tacna—Assault of Arica—Further attempts made by Peruvians to blow up Chilean men-of-war—Lynch's expedition—Naval

engagements at Callao—Failure to arrange treaty of peace—Pierola turns over the government to La Puerta . . . 298

CHAPTER V—THE BATTLES OF CHORILLOS AND MIRAFLORES—OCCUPATION OF LIMA AND CALLAO—ESTABLISHING A GOVERNMENT

Peruvian army at the capital—Active preparations for the defence of Lima—Movements of the Chilean troops—The battles—Acts of vandalism—Burning of Miraflores—Mob rule—Calderon selected as provisional president—Skirmishes in the interior—Caceres—Failure to effect treaty of peace—Pinto's administration 309

CHAPTER VI—THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT SANTA MARIA

Active political canvass—The liberals divided—Two conventions—Baquedano a candidate—Pinto favors Santa Maria—Santa Maria's cabinet—The war in Peru—Continued skirmishing in the interior—Caceres defeated at Huamachuco—Engagement at Huancayo—Peruvian officers submit to Lynch—Treaty signed—Iglesias made president of Peru—The terms of the treaty—Expense of the war—Chile's gain of territory—Bitter disputes with the church—Turbulence caused by church questions and legislation relating thereto—New laws and public improvements 318

PART V

BALMACEDA AND THE CIVIL WAR OF '91

CHAPTER I—PRESIDENT BALMACEDA—MATERIAL PROGRESS

Turbulence in elections—Opposition to the liberals—Reforms—Railroads and public improvements—The gathering storm . 329

CHAPTER II—THE REVOLT

The constitution—Congress opposes the president—Party opposition—Changes of ministries and votes of censure—The Constitutional Committee calls a congress—Balmaceda issues a manifesto—The Supreme Court declares his acts illegal—Naval officers declare for congress, the army adheres to the

cause of the president—The congressional fleet—Captain Montt takes the "Huascar" out of Valparaiso harbor—The congressionalists proceed to Iquique—Skirmish at Zapiga—Pisagua captured and bombarded—Defeat of Colonel Robles—Fight at Huarez—Iquique taken by Colonel Soto, who subsequently surrenders it—Impressments—Defeat of Robles at Pozo al Monte 333

CHAPTER III—BALMACEDA'S POSITION—NAVAL OPERATIONS

The opposing forces—The Tarapaca nitrate fields—The approaching elections—Claudio Vicuña—The parliamentary president—General view of the struggle—Various naval engagements—Sinking the "Blanco Encalada"—Exploits of the torpedo-catchers, "Condell" and "Lynch" 345

CHAPTER IV—TRIUMPH OF THE REVOLUTION—THE AFFAIR OF THE BALTIMORE SAILORS

The government's forces—The new congress—Elections—Diabolical plots—The opposition army embarks for Quintero—The landing—Consternation—The battle of Concon, or Colmo—Balmaceda's efforts to bring forward a new army—Movements of the respective armies—The battle of Placilla—Defeat of the Balmacedist army—Flight of government officers—The affair of the "Lynch"—Wild scenes iu Valparaiso—Riotous acts in Santiago—Suicide of Balmaceda—Formation of a new government—Jorje Montt elected president—Claudio Vicuña in Paris Feeling between the United States and Chile—The real cause of the difficulty—Attack upon the sailors by a Valparaiso mob—The victims—Diplomatic correspondence—Settlement of the affair 356

PART VI

CHILE OF TO-DAY

CHAPTER I—THE PEOPLE OF CHILE

Character of the people—Tastes and habits—Scholars—Liberals and conservatives—Social traits—The ladies—Church-going—

Santiago and Valparaiso society—The English in Chile—The Germans—Peons, their habits, dress and manner of living—Wakes—The Indian population—Character and habits of the Araucanians—Their huts, marriage, customs, religion, superstitions, manners—Patagonian tribes—People of the extreme south 372

CHAPTER II—EXTENT AND RESOURCES

Boundaries and extent—Geography of the country—Climate—Rains—Rivers—Lakes—Crops—Grape culture—Irrigation—The southern districts—Forests—Immigration—Hardships encountered by immigrants—Coal mines—Manufactures—Nitrate works—Minerals—Mines 386

CHAPTER III—NATURAL HISTORY

Physical divisions of the country—Mountains—Deserts—Valley and coast country—Lakes—Character of streams—Earthquakes—Destruction of Concepcion—Harbors—Islands—Straits of Magellan—Juan Fernandez—Animals, reptiles, fish and birds—Forests—Plants—Vegetables—Fruits . . . 398

CHAPTER IV—RAILROADS—ARMY AND NAVY—EDUCATIONAL MATTERS

Government ownership of railroads—Cost of same—Different lines in operation—The Transandine Railway—Other Transandine lines projected—Private lines—Military schools—The army—National Guard—The navy—Naval officers—Commercial fleet—Pacific Steam Navigation Company—Subsidies—Education—Instructions in the capital—Lyceums—National library—Painting, music, science 409

CHAPTER V—CITIES AND GOVERNMENT

The cities of Chile and their population—Description of Santiago, Valparaiso, Concepcion and other places—Political parties—Character of the government—The president—Intendentes—Governors—Sub-delegates—Courts—Congress—Deputies—Political divisions of the country 418

APPENDIX

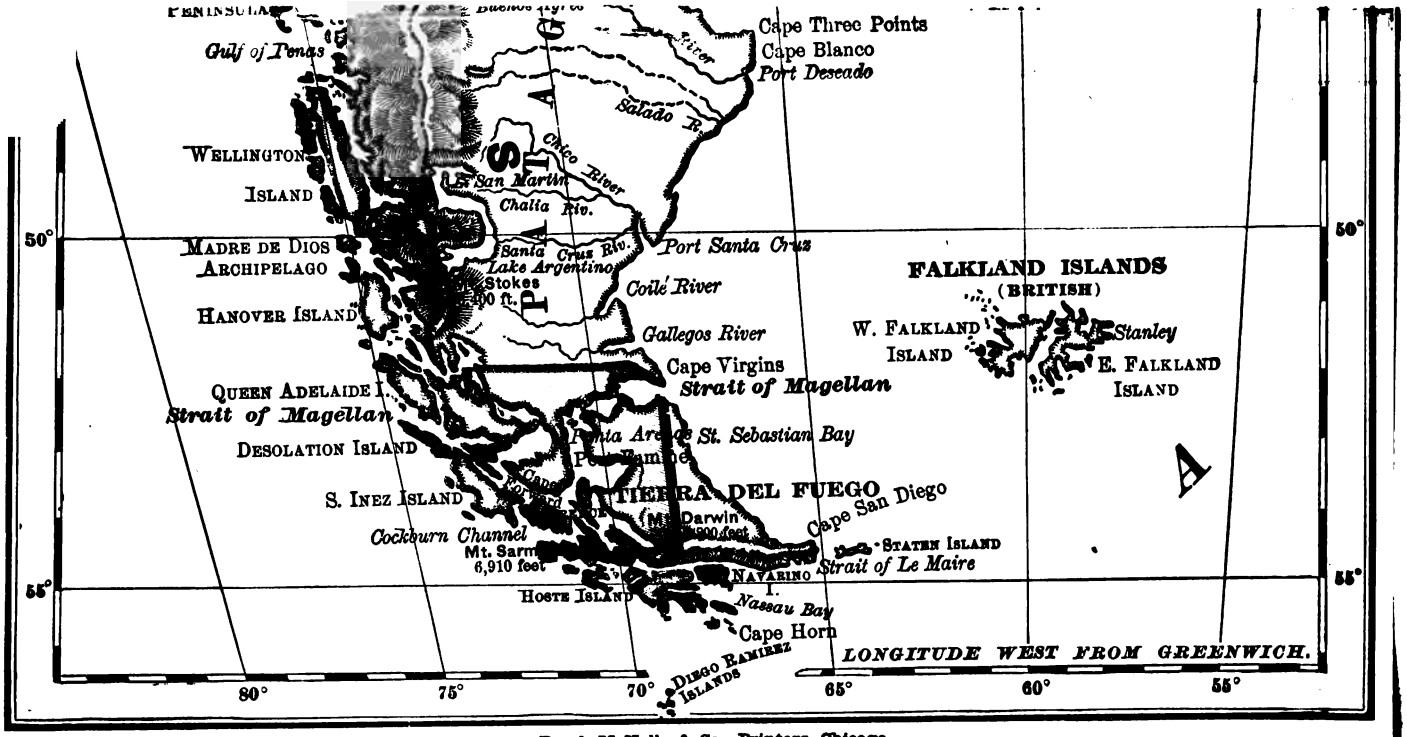
Provinces and capitals—Debt, receipts and expenditures—Banks—Money 423
Constitution of Chile 425
Authorities for the History of Chile 456
Index 459

ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
Bernardo O'Higgins,	FRONTISPIECE
José de San Martin,	133
Manuel Blanco Encalada,	179
Railroad Bridge between Santiago and Valparaiso,	241
Houses of Congress,	263
José Manuel Balmaceda,	329
The Plaza Victoria, Valparaisc,	363
A Private Residence in Santiago,	377
Plaza del Armas, Santiago,	418

MAPS

General Map of Chile,	21
Battle of Tacna,	299
Closing Battles of the War of 1891	359



Rand, McNally & Co., Printers, Chicago.

A HISTORY OF CHILE

PART I.—THE COLONIAL PERIOD

CHAPTER I

ALMAGRO'S EXPEDITION—EARLY HISTORY AND INHABITANTS

When Francisco Pizarro achieved the conquest of the ancient empire of Manco his sway was disputed by rivals. Chief among them were Almagro and Alvarado. Alvarado, Cortez' dashing captain, he who was called by the Mexicans Tonatiuh, set out from Guatemala with an expedition to seize upon Atahualpa's northern kingdom of Quito in defiance of Pizarro's rights, but found himself so stubbornly opposed by Benalcazar, an old rebel chief of the north, that he was glad to welcome Almagro, who had been sent against him by Pizarro, and to sell out to him his fleet, army and pretensions. Then after witnessing and participating in a friendly tournament arranged in his honor by Pizarro and his officers at Pachacamac, Tonatiuh departed for his own country, taking leave of his successful rival with many expressions of friendship.

With his other formidable rival, however, Pizarro

was not so fortunate. Almagro was one of the three partners in the famous compact drawn up at Panama for the exploration and conquest of the unknown regions south of the equator, whence rumors of fabulous wealth had come to the ears of the Spaniards. Father Luque, the partner who had furnished the funds, and Almagro, had been content at first to allow Pizarro to carry out his hazardous enterprise without interference or dictation. But no sooner had the indomitable captain, with his adventurous cavaliers, conquered the disunited empire of the Incas and dragged Atahualpa from his golden throne at Caxamarca, than Almagro appeared with reinforcements and sought to share in the benefits of his partner's successes. Then bickerings began over the distribution of the immense booty. This great empire, which Tupac Yupanqui and Huayna Capac had built up and extended from the river Esmeraldas to the river Maule, conquering and subduing both the ancient kingdom of Quito and, in the South, all the ancient northern tribes of Chile—an empire containing, as some say, ten millions of souls, and with as high a civilization as that of Egypt—this beautiful and wealthy empire had poured its immense treasures into the little town of Caxamarca to ransom its beloved Inca from the hands of a corporal's guard of Spaniards. In a few weeks, Pizarro and his cavaliers had become immensely rich; what more natural than that this should excite the envy of Almagro and his men, who arrived too late to share in the distribution of the booty. Strifes and rivalries began, which, with frequent hypocritical reconciliations between the leaders, were kept up between Pizarro and his partisans on one hand and Almagro and his followers on the other, until the battle of Las Salinas (April 1538), removed Almagro, the father, and the battle of

Chupas (Sept. 1542), led to the downfall of the son, Diego. Francisco Pizarro, too, came to his death because of this feud with the Almagrians; he was assassinated by young Diego Almagro's followers, June 26, 1541.

In the contention between Almagro and Pizarro begins the Spanish history of Chile.* Almagro, the Marshal, as he was usually termed by the early Spanish writers, was sent by Pizarro to Cuzco to take command of the ancient Inca capital, in the early part of the year 1535. He had so far smothered his animosity, as to consent to take this command under his ancient partner, in obedience to a royal mandate. Pizarro also empowered him, either personally or through his officers, to undertake the discovery and conquest of the countries lying to the south of the Atacama desert. Pizarro's seemingly friendly object was soon apparent. Almagro had been suspicious of his rival, and had taken the precaution to send emissaries to Spain when Hernando Pizarro had undertaken a mission to the mother country in the interests of his brother. Hernando's mission had resulted in the royal confirmation of his brother's grants. Knowing that Almagro had agents at court to represent his interests, Hernando had not dared to unfairly present the partner's claims, so that Almagro was empowered by King Charles, to discover and occupy all that country lying south of Pizarro's grant for a distance of about six hundred miles. The royal commissions were delayed, but Pizarro at Lima had an intimation of their contents. The boundary of Pizarro's territory on the south was not clearly defined, so that when tidings from his agent reached Almagro at Cuzco he

*Ferdinand Magellan had passed the straits bearing his name in 1520, in the first circumnavigation of the globe, and touched at the island of Chiloe.

felt elated at finding himself at last independent of the Pizarros and forthwith intimated that he acknowledged now no other superior than his king. In this, Almagro was upheld by his partisans and the claim was urged that Cuzco fell within his grant. Pizarro, not as yet made acquainted with the fact that his own territory had been extended by the royal grant a distance of two hundred miles farther south, sought to anticipate Almagro's claims, which he knew his rival would set up as soon as the royal commission, which had been delayed, had arrived. He, therefore, sent his brothers, Juan and Gonzalo, to Cuzco to reassume there the command which they had yielded to Almagro by their brother's previous orders. But Almagro had received tidings from his secret agent, as we have seen, and the feud was already ripe. Pizarro, however, did not court a resort to arms with his old partner, at this time, so the difference was temporarily arranged by a compact, in which the Almighty was called upon to visit death and loss of property upon him who should not strictly adhere to its terms. These compacts were often resorted to by Pizarro, and as often broken as made, which was the case in this instance.

Almagro now undertook the project of subjugating Chile. He sent forward Paullu Topu, a brother of the Inca Manco, the Incarial successor of Atahualpa, accompanied by Villac Umu, the Cuzco high priest, and three Spaniards, to prepare the way by negotiation with the natives. Paullu and the venerated Villac were to use their influence to pave the way for the Spaniards with the Inca's subjects south of the Atacama desert, who had been brought under the Cuzco domination by the renowned Inca Yupanqui, grandfather of Atahualpa and Huascar, about a century

before this time. A detachment of about 150 men under a Spanish captain, named Saavedra (he who afterward discovered and named Valparaiso) next followed. Almagro himself tarried in Cuzco a while, attending to the collecting of recruits, but, suspecting that Pizarro was again trying to circumvent him, he set forth before his levies were completed, leaving orders that the remainder of his forces should follow him as soon as they could be brought together.

So at the end of the year 1535, Almagro, with sanguine hopes of attaining immense booty—for reports of the immense wealth of Chile had been repeatedly received by the Spaniards in Peru—set out over the mountains upon one of the Inca's great military roads with an army of 570 Spaniards and about 15,000 Peruvians commanded by Paullu. Great stone-flagged military roads radiated from Cuzco into every part of the Incarial empire. Two of these roads led to Chile; one followed the trend of the seacoast across the desert of Atacama, where for three hundred miles there is neither shrub nor water nor living thing; the other passed over the snow-capped Andes for a distance of over one hundred miles. The latter road was the one selected by Almagro, perhaps because it was the shorter route, or it may be because his Indian allies warned him against encountering the dangers of the great Atacama desert. The desert, however, could not have caused them worse fatigues and hardships than they encountered in crossing the mountains. On account of the intense cold and the frequent skirmishes with savages, 150 Spaniards and 10,000 Peruvians perished amid the gloomy forests of pine, in the gorges of snow, and upon the barren table-lands—the desolate *despoblados* where shrubs never grew. It was just at the beginning of winter, when snow covers

the passes, which in summer are passable. The army was now destitute of provisions and not clad for this wintry climate. The unfortunate natives were compelled to do service as beasts of burden, chained together in gangs, and were in other ways treated with the harshest cruelty. This Almagro affected to deprecate, but his own conduct afterward in causing a large company of Chileans to be burned alive for the massacre of three of his men by some outraged Indians, would seem to indicate that he was not sincere in his expressions of displeasure concerning some of the cruelties perpetrated by his men upon this and other occasions.

The expedition might have perished in the mountain defiles, leaving no survivor to tell the story, had not the veteran commander—now nearly seventy years of age—pushed forward resolutely with a small party of his horsemen and obtained timely relief from the natives at Copiapo. By this assistance those Spaniards with the more robust constitutions and a few of the Peruvians were enabled to extricate themselves from the snows of the mountains.

They emerged into the green vales of Chile.* The natives at first were friendly, and received the newcomers with hospitality, because of their respect for Paullu. Almagro dispatched an officer in advance with a strong party to ascertain the character of the country to the south. A party of his recruits soon arrived under the intrepid Orgañez. Almagro also received sometime after this, his long delayed royal warrant defining his grant and powers. It appeared quite probable that Cuzco fell within his jurisdiction, and many of his men urged his return to take posses-

*A word perhaps derived from the Quichua word Chiri (cold), for many Peruvian words seem to have crept into the Chilean language. Or, perhaps, it may have been from Tchile (snow).

sion of Cuzco. "You will," they said, "by so doing, confer a great boon and blessing upon your young son, Diego, who will be your heir." Friends at Cuzco also sent him letters, privately urging him to return and take possession of the capital. But the persevering commander—having encouraged his soldiers by a largess of 500,000 ducats worth of gold, which Paullu had compelled the natives to bring in, in order that he might show his own importance to his leader—pressed forward through the beautiful country, dotted everywhere with busy villages and giving evidence of a considerable degree of industrial progress and civilization.

The primitive inhabitants of Chile had not, indeed, arrived at the degree of urban civilization possessed by Paullu's followers, by the Inca's subjects at Cuzco and by the numerous Peruvian cities and villages, such as Xauxa, Huamachuco, Huanuco, Caxamarca, and Tumbez, cities scattered throughout the old Incarial empire. Nor were their power and prestige equal to that of the old Quitoan kingdom, which Atahualpa's father, the renowned Huayna Capac, had wrested from the last Scyri, who died of a broken heart when his scepter fell, while Huayna married his beautiful daughter and ingratiated himself into the hearts of his subjects, the valiant people of the north.

During the time that Huayna was extending the Incarial power and prestige toward the north, Yupanqui, his father, was subjugating Chile, through his famous general, Sinchi Rocca. The northern tribes, the Copiapins (or Copayapuans), Cuquimpuans, Quillotanes and Mapochinians, were reduced to subjection. Promaucians (Pururnaneaes, or Promaucaes) allied with the Pencones and Cauques resisted Sinchi Rocca so successfully in a four day's battle that it is doubt-

ful if the Incarial arms were ever borne beyond the river Maule.* Thus the southern tribes of Chile, the Promaucians, Curés, Cauques, Pencones, Araucanians, Cunches, Chilotes, Chiquilanians, Pehuenches, Puelches and Huilliches, were free from the powerful autonomy of Cuzco, and at this time primitive manners, laws and customs prevailed among them. And even with the northern tribes, the Incas had not dared to hazard the attempt to introduce their form of government, language and manners, as they were wont to do when they had conquered a new territory; so that the Spaniards found everywhere among the fifteen tribes inhabiting Chile, primitive manners, laws and usages.

We can imagine with what curiosity the invaders looked upon the natives as they wended their way southward. Here was a people who had risen above savagery and had reached the stage of settled communities, cultivating the soil, mining, and carrying on all the industries usual to semi-civilized races. They spoke a language, which for richness of vocabulary and harmony of sound, was scarcely inferior to the cultivated Quichua of the Incas. So complete was their language that a grammar could be formed, in fact, one has been formed, and a volume would be necessary to contain its radical and compound words.

Chile, like Peru, Mexico and Central America, as the architectural remains would indicate, had once been the home of a race more highly civilized than the warring tribes with which Almagro and his followers now became acquainted. Undoubtedly the people of Chile had once been of one nation, for all the tribes

*Garcillasso says they went onward to "the valley of Chile," which has been thought to be the valley of Mapocho. By some it is thought that the river Rapel was as far as the Inca fixed his southern boundary, as there were remains there of what appeared to be an ancient Peruvian fortress.

spoke the same language and bore general physical resemblance to each other. They were all men of great strength, those of the mountains exceeding the ordinary height of man, so that at Cuzco they spoke of "Atacama giants." Their complexion was reddish brown, the typical Indian color, but of a lighter hue than that of other Indians. One tribe, indeed, is spoken of as being nearly white.

As in Peru, so also there, Almagro and his conquistadores beheld substantial aqueducts for watering the fields, which were fertilized and highly cultivated. Though the Chilean plow was a mere wooden spade, yet so industrious were the people that they grew immense crops of maize, potatoes, magu, guegan, tuca, pulses of all kinds, and various other plants and vegetables. They had domesticated a rabbit and the Araucanian camel, and tradition says they had pigs and fowls, but tradition is not always reliable. They cooked all their food, made bread, using a sieve to sift their meal and leaven to raise their dough.

They used nearly a dozen different kinds of spirituous liquors, and were as habituated to drunkenness as the Peruvians. They had no large cities, as had the Peruvians and Mexicans, but gathered themselves together in patriarchal hamlets, each of which was ruled by a chief, or ulmen, who in turn was subject to a supreme cacique holding power over the whole tribe. The right of private property was everywhere recognized. Each farmer was absolute master of the field he cultivated and he could transmit it to his children; this was unlike the Peruvian paternal system, where the soil was considered to be the Inca's by divine and paternal right and was by him apportioned in *topus* to his subjects. Here, in fact, was the radical difference between that wonderful paternal system, which had

been gradually built up in Peru through fifteen or more generations of Yupanquis and Amautas, and the Chilean system. The Chileans were somewhat like the ancient free German tribes, the Peruvians were subjected to a Persian or Egyptian absolutism. The Peruvians submitted to authority and formed an invincible empire; the Chileans, lovers of liberty then as they ever since have been, were the Highlanders, the Swiss, of the ancient Pacific coast nations. They were even jealous of the inherited prerogatives of their own ulmenes and toquis, and maintained their democratic love of freedom to the uttermost. In consequence of this, the Chileans could not be subjugated by the imprisonment of a Montezuma or Atahualpa; they were bushwackers and had to be fought in about the same manner as the colonists of the United States fought the five nations. Almagro had no easy task before him in essaying to do what Yupanqui had failed to accomplish. For many generations the invincible Araucanians could maintain their independence against Spanish arms, long after the subjects of Montezuma and of Atahualpa had bowed their heads beneath the Spanish yoke and became merged with their conquerors. It is the mountaineers who preserve the liberties of men, perpetuate courage and individuality, and infuse regenerating life blood into nations and society which highly complex civilizations tend to corrupt.

These Chilean Indians, like their Peruvian neighbors, manufactured cloth for garments, making use of the spindle, distaff and loom; the women sewed and embroidered. They made excellent clay pots, cups, plates and jars. Not only did they use clay in their manufactures, they also made utensils from wood and even from marble, as did the Peruvians, polishing,

painting and varnishing them. They mined gold, silver, copper, tin and lead and made therefrom ornaments, utensils, axes, hatchets and edged tools. They manufactured salt upon the seashore and extracted it from the mountains. They made fixed dyes, used the bark of the quillai for soap, and from seeds they made oil. They made baskets and mats, robes, fishhooks and canoes. Their arms were as well manufactured as those of the Peruvians or Aztecs. They had invented numbers by which they could express any quantity; they used a mnemonical device similiar to the Peruvian *quipu*—a bunch of interwoven colored threads and knots—by means of which they preserved the memory of their transactions. They had, like the Peruvians, only incongruous notions of art, and were even less skilful in drawing and carving; but they had made considerable progress in physics and astronomy.

The Araucanians, at least, and perhaps other tribes as well, worshiped the sun and moon, and, like the Peruvians, called themselves the "children of the sun." Death they considered a long sleep during which time they passed to a happy country on the other side of the great sea. Like the Puritan fathers, they believed in witches, and stabbed bewitched persons to death with daggers. They had few laws, but these were executed with Draconian severity, capital punishment with tortures being usual. They were in those days, like the Inca's subjects, a cleanly people, performed ablutions after each meal, took especial care of the teeth and were so fastidious that they were careful never to let a hair appear on their faces, or even grow on their bodies. They were as scrupulous about such matters as were the ancient Egyptian priests. The women were clad modestly with a woolen dress of greenish color, a girdle and a short

cloak; the men wore woolen ponchos, also of greenish color, shirt, vest, breeches, bandages of wool around their heads and, those of the higher classes, woolen boots or sandals.

Such were the people dwelling in the fertile valleys of Chile, when Almagro and his little army descended from the mountains and astonished them with their prancing war horses, glittering armor, flashing weapons and thundering guns. The Spanish chroniclers say they found the valleys filled with inhabitants, and doubtless the population then was not so far below the rural population of Chile at the present day. Here was a country densely populated, with valleys as fertile as any under the skies, with an ocean front of nearly 2500 miles, an average breadth of 140 miles, covering over 300,000 square miles stretching from the desert of Atacama to the Straits of Magellan, watered by more than 100 rivers of considerable size, enwalled by the towering Andes where fourteen volcanoes belched smoke constantly and others occasionally, and protected against invasion from the north by three hundred miles of treeless, verdureless desert. Here was as favored a land, that the veteran Almagro looked down upon from the Andean passes, as the land flowing with milk and honey which the storied one of old beheld from "Nebo's lonely mountain." Here was a climate quite as salubrious as that of Italy or California, where thunder storms are unknown, rains gentle and winds attuned to an Eolian pitch; where in many districts, the hills are verdant and the valleys and plains covered with crops and fruitage and carpeted with flowers; where the bowels of the earth are full of metals, both precious and useful.

Coming down from the mountains into these valleys, feasting their eyes upon this verdant landscape, upon

all this incomparable natural beauty, mingling with these strange pastoral and agricultural Indians, Almagro and his men had but one thought in mind, gold, gold! They would not have taken the stretch of mountains, valleys, rivers and cultivated farms as a gift, had this been Elysium itself. How different was the colony which Valdivia afterward led into the country to establish cities and colonize the valleys. Gold was the object of the toil and search of these Almagrians, and when the expedition sent forward to make explorations returned after about two months, bringing unpromising accounts of the southern regions of Chile, there arose at once a clamor to return to Peru. Almagro listened to those who maintained that Cuzco lay within his grant, yielded to the importunities of his men, and, with little reluctance, decided to take up his return march to Peru by way of the desert of Atacama.

During his stay in Chile, which with his going and returning was from the latter part of the year 1535 to the first part of the year 1538, Almagro accomplished but little toward the making of his grant a Spanish province. He founded no important settlements, left no good impressions upon the minds of the natives. While at Copiapo he adopted Pizarro's tactics and undertook to ingratiate himself with one faction of the natives by ousting a usurping ulmen and reinstating a lawful heir. He gained the desired object: the natives applauded this seeming act of justice. But the contrary result followed his efforts at disciplining the aborigines. Two marauding soldiers were put to death by Indians at Huasco. For this Almagro, having proceeded to Coquimbo, put to death by burning, the ulmen, the ulmen's brother—

the same who was the usurper at Copiapo—and twenty other natives.

From this time the aspect of affairs with the natives grew ominous. As they advanced further into the country of the Promaucians, the Spaniards were opposed with much intrepidity. On the banks of a foaming mountain river an engagement took place. Almagro put forward his Peruvians under Paullu, but they were soon routed. The Spanish cavalry advanced and a furious battle raged until nightfall. The Promaucians were not defeated, though they had been severely punished; the following morning they were ready to renew the fight. But the Spaniards, though not defeated, thought it not worth their while to fight with no booty in sight. They retreated, and Almagro, still urged by some of his followers and more and more impressed by the letters he had received from his friends in Cuzco, determined to return to Peru, as we have already stated.

The subsequent career of this intrepid Spaniard does not concern us in a history of Chile, so that we will give it in a few words. Upon his return he took possession of Cuzco, and, after several futile efforts to negotiate a settlement with Pizarro, fought the battle of Las Salinas in 1538 with Pizarro's brother, though too infirm to sit upon his horse at the time. His forces were defeated, but he himself made his escape to Cuzco. He was captured, thrown into irons, tried, condemned on a pretended charge of levying war against the crown and conspiring with the Inca, and executed as a public disturber by the Pizarros. By the terms of the royal grant he was authorized to name his successor; this he did, naming his minor son, Diego. Diego, as we have seen, did nothing to further the Spanish interests in Chile. Almagro's old

veterans, called "the men of Chile," to the number of several hundred, remained scattered throughout Peru, feeling the most bitter hatred of the Pizarros for the deprivations and insults to which they were constantly subjected. They became young Diego's active partisans and compassed the death of Francisco Pizarro, but were at last defeated at the battle of Chupas, which decisive engagement ended the factional wars and bickerings so long continued between the adherents of Almagro and those of the Pizarros. Another leader, Pedro de Valdivia, is more intimately connected with the opening of Chile to Spanish interests than Almagro.

CHAPTER II

THE ARAUCANIANS—VALDIVIA'S EXPEDITION—THE FOUNDING OF SANTIAGO

A marble statue of Valdivia on the hill of Santa Lucia, at Santiago, tells us that the "*valeroso capitan*" was "*primer gobernador de Chile,*" and founded Santiago on the 12th of February, 1541. History further tells us that the valiant conquistador was Pizarro's quartermaster, a prudent officer, (a statement which his career in Chile does not altogether justify), an active officer, (as he certainly was), who had gained experience in the Italian wars. He unquestionably possessed a superior mind, great political ability and a high order of military talents, and there is not imputed to him many of those acts of cruelty which stain the escutcheons of so many of the early Spanish conquerors. True, some of the old records hint at cruelties which he exercised toward the natives; but considering the character of the Araucanians and their allies with whom he had to deal, this is not surprising, as that was not an age for delicate sensibilities and the Spanish conquistadores were not wont to resort often to mere mild words of persuasion in their conquests. But we read of no needless shedding of blood by Pedro de Valdivia, as we do in the case of

Almagro, and there are few revolting pages in the history of his early Chilean conquests, not more in fact, than in the pages of English conquests.

Valdivia's great fault was his overweening confidence in his own prowess and military strength. Perhaps he had been led to think, from his former acquaintance with Indian warfare in Peru, that twelve Spanish knights, chivalrous and bold, were able anywhere to cope with the whole Araucanian army. This confidence in Spanish valor, led to his death and the almost total destruction of his seven cities, which he had supposed himself able to defend with a handful of Spanish cavaliers and a small army of uncertain allies. He knew not the enemies with whom he had to cope.

The river Biobio is the Rhine of South America. From the middle of the sixteenth to the middle of the nineteenth century, hardy and warlike tribes of Indians have maintained this as their frontier, and have doggedly resisted every encroachment upon their territories and combated every effort at their subjugation. Only since 1882 have the Araucanians become true subjects of the Chilean government; only since 1889 have the Indians of Southern Chile so far submitted to the civil authorities as to permit the withdrawal of military supervision. Fifty thousand of them still remain in a state of half dependence, living under the protectorate of the Chilean government, but still maintaining pertinaciously their primitive habits, and loath to permit their pure blood to mix with that of the Spaniards. They are still proud, independent, well-built, well-dressed, and industrious, though confirmed drunkards. They have been the most heroic, the most persistent, of the American Indians; but, like the cognate races of the western hemisphere,

they at last have succumbed to superior arms and numbers and will soon be known only in history. Still this almost unconquerable race leaves behind a hardy progeny and infuses its valor into the very air of Chile, until to-day the little republic stands at the head of Spanish-America, the most war-like, the most pugnacious and uncompromising of all the minor nations of the earth. These Southern Chilean tribes apparently withstood the conquering arms of the ancient Incarial dynasties, which for ages rose and fell in Peru like the Pharoahs of Egypt; for three centuries and a half they have fought for their liberties against the dominant race, raising up hero after hero like the Highlands of Scotland, until Chile, like Scotland, has heroism quickening the flow of her blood by all the memories of her historic past. Therefore, Chile is aggressive, heroic and progressive.

We have already given a brief epitome of the appearance, habits and customs of the natives Almagro found occupying Chile when he first descended into its verdant valleys. Some insight into the military system, social organization and disposition of the Araucanians and their allies, should be here given, that we may better know the character of the enemies with whom Valdivia had to cope.

These Indians have from time immemorial inhabited the country lying south of the river Biobio, their territory extending to the vicinity of the city of Valdivia, and covering all the region between the Andes and the Pacific. The province of Arauco gives the leading tribe its appellation, or rather, perhaps, the province is named after the tribe. They divided their country into four political divisions running from north to south, calling each divison a uthul-mapu. The first was named in their language the Maritime country

and comprised the provinces of Arauco, Tucapel, Illicura, Boroa and Nagtollen; the next, the plain country, comprised Encol, Puren, Repocura, Maquegua and Mariquina; the country at the foot of the mountains, included Marven, Colhue, Chacajco, Quecheregua and Guanagua; the country of the Andes—Piremapu—included all the valleys of the mountains inhabited by the allied tribe, the Puelches. They had three orders of nobility, the toquis, who stood at the head of each uthul-mapu, the apo-ulmenes who governed provinces under the toquis, the ulmenes who were the chiefs and under the apo-ulmenes.

The military system was efficiently organized. A grand council determined upon war, and elected a general-in-chief, to whom all the toquis and ulmenes were subjected, and whom they implicitly obeyed during the continuance of hostilities. Envoys were then dispatched to the confederate tribes; each toqui directed what number of men his uthul-mapu should furnish, and in this way an army of five or six thousand men could be soon raised.

Before proceeding to hostilities, a three days conference, at which everyone was permitted to speak, was held, when the situation of enemies, condition of affairs, and necessity for war, were thoroughly canvassed. If war was decided upon, the vice-toqui, who had been previously selected, assumed command of the right wing of the army, assigned the left wing to an experienced officer and then each soldier put on his leathern cuirass, took up his heavy war club or long spear, and prepared to die with his face to the foe, rather than flee the battlefield. Impressed, like the Saracens, with the idea that to die in battle is the highest earthly honor and a sure passport to the happy country beyond, they advanced singly to combat, and,

shouting like fiends, sought to penetrate to the center of their enemy's forces in a hand to hand encounter.

Their foes discomfited, they divided the spoils of war and enslaved their prisoners, sometimes offering up one or more of them to propitiate their gods of war, after they had humiliated the captives with all the marks of ignominy they could devise and had heaped innumerable execrations upon the principal leaders of their enemy. Usually there was but one prisoner sacrificed; when dead, the leaders sucked a little blood from the victim's warm heart, and then his skull was formed into a bowl from which wine, in true Hunnic fashion, was drunk at a banquet. At the termination of their wars with the Spaniards, a congress was always called on a plain situated between the Biobio and Duqueco rivers, where the Spanish president and the vice-toqui met in the presence of the armies and agreed upon the articles of peace.

The Araucanians made war a principal business, and their youths were early instructed in the use of arms, seldom punished, and were even applauded for lying and insolence. It was a saying with them, that chastisement makes men cowardly. We do not read of their having such grand military contests and chivalrous initiations as the Incas provided for the young men in their annual *huaracus*, but there were many military games in which the boys engaged; the games called *peuco* and *palican* were those most participated in, the first of these being a mimic siege of a fortress, the second having every appearance of a drawn battle. Having given some general insight into the political and military organization, the disposition and appearance of the Araucanians, we will now turn our attention again to Pedro de Valdivia.

By the death of the elder Almagro, Pizarro fancied

himself in a position to attempt the conquest of Chile, which he supposed might prove an important acquisition to his possessions. Two cavaliers, Pedro Sanchez de Hoz and Carmargo had been sent out by Spain after the death of Almagro to subjugate and take possession of Chile. Pizarro ignored the royal commission held by these men, and, with characteristic assurance, appointed for the undertaking Pedro de Valdivia, his own quartermaster, whom he directed to command the forces destined for Chile and to take De Hoz with him. Valdivia thereupon determined to form a permanent settlement in the new country, and for that purpose arranged that his little army, consisting of two hundred Spaniards and a considerable body of Peruvian auxiliaries, should be accompanied by a number of priests and women; also, that everything requisite for a new settlement should be taken with them.

Crossing the Andes in summer, the cortége arrived without losses upon the northern confines of Chile, where they were met by the natives, who opposed there progress at every turn as they wended their way through Copiapo, Coquimbo, Quillota and Melipilla. These provinces had formerly been under the Inca's domination, but with the fall of Atahualpa had found themselves free. They were not, however, united, and were, therefore, unable to make common cause against the Spaniards, who pushed on, despite constant skirmishes, to the vicinity of the present Santiago. Here the leader determined to make a settlement. It was far enough from Peru, being six hundred miles distant, to render it a difficult matter for his soldiers to desert him and return; the fertility of the surrounding country and the great natural advantages appeared to him to make it a suitable place to

plant his colony. Here then on February 14, 1541, he established a town which he called St. Jago, in honor of the apostle; and this is Santiago, a city which, two centuries later, contained less than a hundred thousand people, and which in 1892 had a population of more than two hundred thousand. A cathedral, bishop's palace and government buildings were immediately erected, magistrates appointed and a fort constructed upon the hill of Santa Lucia.

The Mapochinians were not disposed to look upon this settlement in their territory in a friendly spirit, and soon organized an active opposition. Valdivia, suspecting their designs, confined some of the chiefs in the fortress, then went with sixty cavaliers to the river Cachapoal to watch the movements of the neighboring Promaucians, whom he suspected of being about to unite with their neighbors in an uprising. The Mapochinians availed themselves of the opportunity afforded them by the absence of the commander to fall furiously upon the colony. One half of the new town was reduced to ashes; the inhabitants fled to the citadel where they defended themselves against repeated onslaughts. A woman among them seized a hatchet, and, single handed, beat out the brains of the captive chiefs. Inez Suarez can hardly be eulogized as a Joan of Arc for this zealous act, as the death of the chieftains in no way aided Valdivia's cause, or dismayed the Mapochinians. From daybreak to nightfall the battle raged around the citadel, fresh hordes of assailants constantly taking the places of those that fell. Alonzo Monroy, who had been left in command of the fortress, communicated with Valdivia during the day, and the latter, upon receiving the dispatch, returned hurriedly to the scene of the conflict. The Indians posted themselves on

the banks of the river Mapocho where they fought desperately, but were slaughtered by the incessant musketry until they were obliged to fly the field. Though so roughly handled, they again and again renewed the contest, until the fruitful valley of the Mapocho was laid waste and the ancient tribe, giving it its name, utterly ruined. For six years this desolating war lasted, until the colony of St. Jago was reduced to starvation, and in desperation, organized a conspiracy to take Valdivia's life and then return to Peru. Discovering this disaffection in time, the commander caused the ringleaders to be executed, and then sought to regain the confidence of the colonists by instilling into their minds flattering hopes for the future. Fortunately gold was discovered in the ancient mines of the valley of Quillota in such paying quantities that soon no one thought of quitting Chile. A frigate was built and dispatched to Peru for aid and recruits.

CHAPTER III

OPENING AND CONQUERING THE COUNTRY—LA SERENA, CONCEPCION AND OTHER CITIES FOUNDED

The history of these early days in Chile has its Pocahontas story. It runs in this wise: As the state of affairs at Santiago was in a critical condition, Valdivia determined to send Monroy and Miranda, with six companions in arms and thirty men on horseback, to Peru for assistance. With spurs and caparisons of gold, that they might make an enviable impression upon their countrymen in Peru, they set forth overland. At Copiapo they were attacked by a certain Coteo, whose band destroyed the whole company, sparing only the two leaders. These they brought before the ulmen, who decided to put them to death forthwith, by some sort of refined torture. The ulmen's wife thereupon interceded for their lives, and, having softened the cacique's savage heart, unbound the captives, dressed their wounds, and then made a certain request of them, which was in substance that they should teach her son to ride a horse. This they promised to do. But while they were giving his young highness his first lesson, Monroy stabbed him; at the same time Miranda seized a lance and put the guards to flight. Not stopping to say adieu to their

benefactress, they made their escape across the Atacama desert to Cuzco. This treachery the Copiapans avenged three years afterward by massacring a party of forty Spaniards.

Vaco de Castro was at that time at the head of the Peruvian government, and having been informed by the emissaries of the condition of affairs in Chile, dispatched thither a company under Monroy, and further sent recruits, under Juan Bapista Pastene, by sea.

Pastene upon his arrival was immediately dispatched by Valdivia to explore the southern coast of Chile as far as the Straits of Magellan. Having accomplished this task, he thereupon sent back to Peru for more recruits, for the Indians were warlike and seemed likely to cause further trouble. They had succeeded by a bold stratagem in massacring all the soldiers in the Quillota mines. As the Inca Manco had at one time led the credulous Spaniards out of Cuzco into an ambush to look in a thicket for a golden statue of Huayna Capac, so the Quillotanes had deluded Gonzalo Rios and his companions at the mines and led them a will-o'-the-wisp chase after a fanciful pot of gold. They found not the pot of gold, more than Soto did El Dorado, but they did fall tumultuously into an ambuscade, which had been cunningly prepared for them, from which only Rios and a negro escaped. The arsenal and the new frigate which had shortly before been built, were thereupon destroyed by the Indians.

The indomitable Valdivia immediately punished the natives, built a fort to protect the miners thenceforth, and continued the mining operations.

Sometime afterward (1544), the commander founded the city of La Serena at the mouth of the Coquimbo, naming it in honor of the place of his birth. The

name Coquimbo, however, was too old to be replaced, and soon prevailed over that of La Serena which Valdivia gave it. This settlement was made primarily as a strategical point in the north, but it was situated in a fertile plain and soon became the center of a thriving province.

The next year (1545) was occupied in extending the Spanish authority over the territory of the warlike Promaucians. No battles are recorded, and it appears probable that the Promaucians were induced to join the Spaniards against their foes the Araucanians, whence sprang up the antipathy which has ever since existed between the former and the latter tribes. The following year Valdivia extended his conquests south to the river Itata, but there met with such reverses in a skirmish with the natives at a place called Quilacura, that he decided to halt there and make that for a while the limit of his conquered possessions; retracing his steps, he returned to Santiago.

He had been long expecting supplies and recruits from Peru. These not arriving, the commander decided to go thither himself and raise a company of troops sufficient in size for his purpose of conquering the Araucanians. Leaving Francisco de Villagran as acting governor in his absence, and taking with him a large quantity of gold, Valdivia set sail with Pastene for Peru, where, at this time, a civil war was in progress between Gasco and Gonzalo Pizarro. Valdivia was in time to fight under Gasco's standard, in polite forgetfulness of his old-time obligations to the Pizarros, for which service he was rewarded by a confirmation of his title as governor of Chile—a confirmation he had been long seeking—and given a vast amount of military stores, with two boat loads of Peru-

vian adventurers, who afterward proved a menace to his colonies.

Villagran had taken it upon himself during Valdivia's absence to rid his superior of the unwelcome presence of De Hoz, who, as will be remembered, had been deprived of his royally commissioned rights by Pizarro at the time of Valdivia's appointment for the Chilean campaign. Whether or not De Hoz was now plotting to usurp the government as charged, may be questionable, but he had, at least, acted foolishly in keeping himself in the way of his rival. Villagran had him publicly beheaded, thus pleasing his master no doubt, even if he had not been secretly instructed to essay this dastardly piece of diplomacy.

The Copiapins, having been successful in killing a party of Spaniards in revenge for Monroy's and Miranda's cruelty practised while ostensibly teaching their young prince horsemanship, were emulated by the Coquimbanes, who at this time rose up and razed La Serena to the ground, massacring all the inhabitants there. Francisco Aguirre was ordered thither, punished the revolting natives, and became the founder of the new town, which he built in a more advantageous location.

Valdivia had now been nine years in Chile. Having effectually conquered and settled the country, he now apportioned the land among his followers, in a manner somewhat like the feudal tenures of Europe. Each assignment carried with it the Indians who might be living upon it at the time. Thus each soldier became a sort of baron, and the rights of the natives were but little taken into account.

Having received a large body of recruits, Valdivia again undertook his southern campaign. He journeyed 240 miles southward from Santiago and halted on the

shore of the bay of Penco, which Pastene had explored some time before. There on the 5th day of October, 1550, the city of Concepcion was founded, being the third of Chile in historical sequence. The place was destroyed by earthquakes in 1757, and in 1764 New Concepcion was established further south.

Concepcion was founded within a territory whose inhabitants did not intend to become chattels upon Spanish *repartos*, for their forefathers had long resisted the Incarial mitimæs. The surrounding tribes made common cause with their neighbors and allies, the Araucanians, to whom they usually looked for assistance, and the latter resolved to free the country from the unwelcome invaders. Toqui Aillavilu crossed the Biobio with 4,000 warriors and gave battle to Valdivia, who had advanced to meet him. A hotly contested combat ensued which lasted several hours, when the toqui was killed and his army compelled to retreat.

Valdivia thereupon built a fort near his new town, to protect the place against those fierce enemies. But the Araucanians, nothing daunted, elevated a new chief, a person of gigantic stature, to the command, and sent forth another army. This Goliath should have been given a war club and not the axe of authority, for he was irresolute and unfitted to lead. However, in the year 1551, he decided upon war and marched against the Spaniards with his army conducted in three divisions. The Spaniards celebrated mass and hurried within their fortifications. Lincoyan, not understanding such defensive tactics, which were not in accordance with Araucanian notions of valor and methods of warfare, and fearing some stratagem, ordered a retreat. Valdivia was quite as sorely puzzled as his antagonist, and so did not dare follow

the fugitives. As at the slaughter of Caxamarca when Atahualpa was seized, and as in one of Cortez' battles when De Morla came riding up on a dapple-gray horse, St. James was again, in this instance, alleged by the Spaniards to have aided their cause in putting to flight the natives; he rode up on a white charger and with his flaming sword struck terror into their ranks.

Valdivia was so well pleased with Concepcion that he determined to establish himself there, to subjugate the Araucanians, and then to ask of Spain the provinces of Arauco and Tucapel, with the title of marquis. A marquisate of a wilderness and tribes of unconquerable savages was something in those days. He published statutes for the government of the city, established police and regulated the affairs of the place. These things occupied his attention during the remainder of the year 1551.

The following year, having received reinforcements, he determined to attack again the Araucanians and hoped this time to subdue them. He marched into their territory without encountering serious opposition and, at the confluence of the rivers Cauten and Damas, founded the city of Imperial, naming it in honor of Charles V. This city flourished for a time, as we shall see, but was laid waste and abandoned because of the incessant wars of the frontiers.

Valdivia now believed himself master of the country and therefore determined to apportion the territory and natives among his followers. But this time the grants were more fanciful than real, for the Araucanians were not to be made vassals so easily. Alderete was dispatched with sixty men to found a settlement on the shore of Lake Lauquen. Gold was found there and the place given the name of Villarica.

Leaving the settlement of Imperial, Valdivia pushed toward the south, seeing a favorable opportunity for attacking Lincoyan, who timidly kept out of his way. Passing through Arauco, the Spanish leader came to the river Callacalla, beyond which was the territory of the Cunches, allies of the Araucanians. Here again a native woman, more humane than the Spanish Inez Suarez, interceded for the Spaniards. Recloma persuaded the Cunches, who were in battle array on the opposite side of the river, to permit the Spaniards to pass.

Upon the southern shore of the river, Valdivia perpetuated his name by founding his sixth city and calling it Valdivia. The city attained some early importance, on account of the discovery of gold mines in the vicinity, and the harbor, which was one of the best on the southern coast.

On his return north in 1553, Valdivia built fortresses in the provinces of Puren, Tucapel and Arauco, to protect his settlements and form bases for future military operations. These forts were, indeed, bases for many future military enterprises. At Santiago, he received a body of troops and 350 horses. With this increase of his forces, he determined to dispatch Aguirre with two hundred men to conquer the provinces of Cujo and Tucumen, east of the Andes. Valdivia himself soon returned to the province of Encol and there founded his seventh and last city, Angol.

Returning to Concepcion, after having regulated the affairs of his new city, Valdivia instituted the military offices of quartermaster-general, serjeant-major and commissary, then sent Alderete to Spain with an account of his conquests and a large amount of gold for the purpose of obtaining for him the long wished-for title of Marquis of Arauco and the perpetual gov-

ernment of the provinces he had conquered. He also sought to open up more direct communication with Spain by sea, and with that end in view dispatched Ulloa to examine the Straits of Magellan.

Valdivia now supposed that he had practically finished the conquest of Chile. Alas, his seven cities were as cut off from the world and from each other as the seven golden cities of the mediæval legend situated on a mythical island in the mid-Atlantic! The would-be Marquis of Arauco had overreached himself, Arauco was not yet his.

The Araucanians had, in the meantime, become dissatisfied with their toqui, Lincoyan. An old chieftain, by name Colocolo, with a passionate love for his country animating his heart, determined to arouse his countrymen to heroic exertion. With this end in view, he traversed the Araucanian provinces and sought to arouse the natives, and to induce them to select a new leader and make a desperate resistance against the encroachments of the invaders.

His appeals were successful; the various ulmenes immediately assembled at the accustomed national trysting place, a feast was ordered and plans for a campaign discussed. There were many competitors for the military toquiship—Andalican, Elicura, Ongolmo, Renco, and Tucapel, being the most distinguished. Tucapel was foremost, but the contention was so heated, that Colocolo suggested the name of Caupolican, ulmen of Pilmayquen (a district of Tucapel), a modest and valiant man. This choice pleased the assembled ulmenes, and forthwith Caupolican, a true Patagonian in stature, with a wise looking face despite the fact that he had but one eye, assumed the authority as vice-toqui, curbed the excited ones,

and formed his military plans with much caution and wisdom.

A party of eighty Indians had been conducted by Caupolican to the Arauco fort; they were employed in taking forage to the Spaniards. In place of these auxiliaries, the wily toqui substituted eighty of his own warriors. These were to conceal arms in the bundles of hay which they carried and to set upon the guards and hold the gates until the Araucanians could rush in. The guards were attacked, according to the prearranged plan, but the garrison, commanded by Francisco Reynoso, came to their assistance and drove back the Indians before Caupolican could bring up his troops. Nothing daunted the Indians attacked the walls on every side, but the fire from eighty cannons within soon compelled the attacking party to withdraw. They then threw a line about the fortress and prepared to besiege the place.

Failing in repeated sallies to dislodge their assailants, the Spaniards resolved to cut their way out and retire to the fort at Puren, for if they remained much longer they would starve. Waiting until the night was far spent, they rushed out in a body and made their way safely through the lines of their confused enemies.

The fortress in Tucapel was next assailed. Here there was a garrison of forty men, commanded by Martin Erizar. After many sallies, continuing through several days, the Spaniards escaped through some well planned artifice and made their way to Puren, where they joined the garrison, already augmented by the soldiers from Arauco.

Valdivia was at Concepcion. Hearing of the assaults upon his forts, he started immediately for Arauco with all his forces, probably amounting, all

told, to 200 Spaniards and four or five thousand Indian auxiliaries.

When well on the march Diego del Oro was sent forward to reconnoitre the enemy's position. This entire company of men, consisting of ten cavalrymen, were slain by Caupolican's troops, their heads cut off and suspended from trees by the roadside. The spectacle served the purpose for which it was intended: it filled the minds of the Spanish soldiers with horror, and many of them desired to return to Concepcion. But Valdivia was rash, as well as valiant, and pushed forward, though probably ten thousand Araucanian Indians were under arms ready to oppose him. On December 3rd, 1553, the Spaniards came in sight of the Indians at Tucapel. There the two armies manœuvred for some time for position within full view of each other. Mariantu commanded the right wing of the Araucanian army, the fiery Tucapel, the Marat of the Araucanians, after whom the province of Tucapel had been named, led the left wing.

Mariantu began the battle, moving against Bovadilla, who commanded the Spanish left. These Spaniards were immediately surrounded and cut in pieces.

A detachment sent to reinforce the left was in a like manner annihilated. Tucapel now began an impetuous attack upon the Spanish right, and the fight thereupon became general along the whole line. The Spaniards mowed down the ranks of the Indians, but they quickly filled the gaps with fresh men from their reserves. Valdivia fought as a common soldier, animating his troops by his heroic example. Three times the Indians retired in order and reorganized out of range of the artillery, and then returned to the combat; but the slaughter was too great and at last they gave way and were about to fly the field. But

there was a youth of sixteen years among them with courage and patriotism animating his young heart. Lautaro had been captured by Valdivia sometime before, baptized and made his page. Quitting the Spanish ranks at the critical moment when his countrymen began to waver, the lad began to call to his Indian friends, reproaching them for their cowardice and exhorting them to return to the combat. Grasping a lance, he turned upon the Spaniards and shouted to his countrymen to follow him. They returned with new zeal to the fray, and charging furiously, routed the Spaniards and their Promaucian allies, only two escaping the carnage.

Seeing that the day was lost, Valdivia retired with his chaplain to pray, but his devotions were soon rudely interrupted by a party of the victors who took him prisoner and forthwith conducted him before Caupolican.

Of the chief he asked that his life might be spared, and promised in return for the boon that he would quit Chile with all the Spaniards. He begged Lautaro, his recent page, to intercede for him, and this the youth did, for he was magnanimous, as well as brave. But an old ulmen standing near, sneering at Valdivia's promises, made short work of the matter by dispatching him with his war club.

The day following, the ghostly heads of the Spaniards and Promaucians were suspended from the trees by the great meadows where the Araucanians were wont to hold their festivals and celebrate their victories; and there for sometime the Indians held high carnival.

CHAPTER IV

LAUTARO AND CAUPOLICAN—VALDIVIA'S SUCCESSORS—DON GARCIA—DEFEAT AND SUCCESS

Lautaro, the young hero of the battle of Tucapel, was accorded high honors in the great festival which followed the victory. Caupolican appointed him his special lieutenant, and invested him with authority in the army nearly equal to his own. By birth, the young man was of the Indian gentry, and, beside this advantage, was endowed by nature with nobleness of character, beauty and affability.

Another campaign was projected. The veteran Colocolo, the Ulysses of the Araucanians, was of the opinion that all the Spanish posts ought at once to be destroyed. Tucapel, on the other hand, argued that they should first go to Santiago and strike an effective blow while the Spaniards were in their present state of dismay. Caupolican, as usual, adopted Colocolo's advice.

The Spaniards in Ancol and Puren, as well as those of Villarica, hearing of the disaster which had befallen their hitherto invincible arms, retired to the towns of Imperial and Valdivia. In those cities Caupolican determined to besiege them. Lautaro was thereupon given in charge the defence of the country

about the Biobio, and, immediately assuming the hazardous task, fortified himself on the precipitous mountain of Mariguenu, one of the strongest natural defences in the south.

About this time, Lincoyan fell upon a party of fourteen Spanish horsemen on their way from Imperial to Tucapel and so destructive was the slaughter that but seven of the cavaliers made their escape. Tidings of these reverses, reached Concepcion, as well as the two Promaucians who had escaped from the battle of Tucapel, and, as we may suppose, filled the hearts of the inhabitants with terror, stout hearted Spaniards though they were. Valdivia having been slain, the secret instructions which he had left were opened by the magistrates. He had signified that, in the event of his death, the successors in the government of Chile should be Alderete, Aguirre and Villagran. Alderete, as we have seen, was at this time in Europe; Aguirre was conquering the province of Cujo on the other side of the mountains; Villagran alone, therefore, was prepared to assume the reins of government.

Making careful preparations, Villagran crossed the Biobio with a small Spanish army and a body of Indian auxiliaries and began a march against the Araucanians. In a narrow pass at the Mariguenu mountain, a strong force of Lautaro's men fell upon him and gave him three hours of hard fighting, at the end of which time the Indians withdrew to the mountain, where Lautaro commanded in person behind a strong palisade. A body of Spanish horsemen undertook to force a passage up the side of the steep mountain, but were met near the summit with such a shower of missiles that Villagran ordered the musketeers and artillerymen to advance to their support.

Lautaro had dispatched a body of his warriors to

surround the Spaniards, but Villagran advancing prevented this manœuvre from being successfully carried out. Perceiving now that his main losses came from the cannonading, Lautaro ordered Leucoton to capture the guns, bidding him not to dare to show his face until the order was executed. Leucoton with his company thereupon fell so furiously upon the artillerymen that they were driven back and the cannon captured. Lautaro followed up this advantage by a vigorous attack in front, which threw the Spaniards into confusion and soon put them to flight. Of Spanish soldiers and auxiliaries, three thousand lay dead upon the field. Villagran himself was barely saved by the almost superhuman efforts of three of his soldiers, who picked him up wounded and put him upon his horse.

It was necessary for the Spaniards in their flight to repass the narrow defile where the battle had begun. This the cunning Lautaro had ordered obstructed by means of felled trees. There was a furious combat before the few remaining Spaniards could make their escape. The Araucanians pursued them to the river Biobio; but fatigued as the Indians were, having sustained a loss of about seven hundred men, Lautaro halted to give his troops time for rest with the intention of crossing the river the following day. The fugitives made their way to Concepcion, where Villagran hurriedly put the old men and women aboard ships and sent them to Imperial and Valparaiso.

The remaining inhabitants started by land for Santiago, leaving their property behind them, so that when Lautaro entered the deserted city he found there much rich booty. The place was razed; after which the young hero returned to Arauco to receive the plaudits of his nation.

Caupolican was in the meantime slowly besieging Imperial and Valdivia. Villagran sent forward reinforcements, whereupon the Araucanian general raised the siege and joined his forces with those of Lautaro. He afterward remained for some time in his encampment, in fact until the time when Villagran, obeying a behest of the court of the Royal Audience of Lima, undertook to rebuild Concepcion, and had proceeded thither with eighty-five families for that purpose. The surrounding tribes again called upon the Araucanians for assistance and Caupolican sent forward two thousand men under Lautaro, who met the Spaniards drawn up in battle array on an open plain, defeated them, drove them back into Concepcion and followed them precipitately into the fortress through the open gates. The inhabitants fled to the woods and to the ships in the harbor, and escaping, made their way back to Santiago. The Indians again burned the city and carried off much booty.

About this time, perhaps a little while before, smallpox broke out among the Indians and nearly depopulated several districts. Since that time the Araucanians have used the utmost vigilance in protecting themselves against this dread disease, by rigorous methods of quarantining and by stamping out the plague upon its first appearance.

About this time, too, Francisco Aguirre came over the mountains with sixty of his followers, determined to place himself at the head of the government. He and Villagran agreed to submit their claims to the Royal Audience of Lima, with the final result that Villagran was directed to take charge of the government until further orders, and to rebuild Concepcion; the latter he attempted with such result as we have already described.

Stimulated by Lautaro's success at Concepcion, Caupolican determined to begin again the sieges of Imperial and Valdivia; Lautaro, in the meantime, being required to march against Santiago to create a division of the Spanish forces. The young chief thereupon selected six hundred men, traversed the provinces lying between the Biobio and Maule rivers, and then fell upon the country of the Promaucians, the Spanish allies, which he laid waste. Fortifying himself on the banks of the Rio Claro, he sent out spies and awaited information of the state of affairs at Santiago. In the latter place, preparations for defense were actively begun. Juan Godinez with a body of horsemen was sent forward into the Promaucian country to gain information of the whereabouts of the much dreaded enemy. He was attacked by a party of the Araucanians, by whom his little force was severely handled. Those escaping fled to Santiago, and the city was soon in consternation over the news.

Villagran was ill at the time, and therefore placed his son, Pedro, in command of a body of troops, with which he ordered him to march against Lautaro; the approaches to the city he directed to be hurriedly fortified. Young Lautaro had not come three hundred miles into the enemy's country to be defeated by young Pedro; being attacked by the latter in his intrenchments on the banks of the Rio Claro, he feigned a retreat and thus drew the Spaniards into the enclosure. No sooner were they inside than the Araucanians fell upon them, furiously slaughtering all of them, with the exception of the cavalrymen, who were able to effect an escape.

Pedro received reinforcements and three times attacked Lautaro, but was each time repulsed. Thereupon he withdrew his forces to a meadow. Lautaro

took up a position on a neighboring mountain, and there formed the plan of turning at night the waters of a branch of the Mataquito upon Pedro's camp. The encampment might have been flooded, had the young commander not been informed by a spy in time to retire to Santiago and thus escape the disaster.

Villagran, having recovered from his sickness, marched against Lautaro with a little army consisting of 196 Spaniards and 1000 Indian auxiliaries. To effect a surprise of the Araucanian intrenchments, a secret route was taken by the seashore. At break of day Lautaro was aroused by his sentinels, and going to the side of the fortification to look at the approaching enemy, was pierced by a dart, fired by one of the Indian auxiliaries, and fell dead in the arms of his companions.

A fierce combat ensued, in which the Araucanians fought like wild beasts until all of them had been slain. The Spaniards lost heavily, but returned victorious to the capital, where for three days the fall of Lautaro was celebrated. And well they might celebrate his fall, for this young man at the age of nineteen was a veritable young Hannibal. The "Chilean Hannibal" he has been not unworthily called.

Caupolican, learning of the death of Lautaro and the defeat of the troops sent against Santiago, at once abandoned the siege of Imperial, which was opportune for the besieged, as they were reduced to extremities.

These are substantially the more important events of the year 1556.

In April, 1557, Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza arrived in the bay of Concepcion to take charge of the government of Chile, having been appointed captain-general by his father, the viceroy of Peru. As will be remembered, Francisco de Villagran, was one of

the three named by Valdivia to take charge of the government in the event of his death. At the time of his death, Valdivia's agent, Alderete, was at the court of Spain soliciting a marquisate and the independent governorship of Chile for his superior. Philip II. had succeeded his father, Charles V., on the throne of Spain, and learning of the death of Valdivia forthwith gave the government and conquest of Chile in charge of Alderete, furnishing him for that purpose six hundred soldiers and a ship. Alderete's sister appears to have been a reader of sixteenth century novels, and furthermore was accustomed to read in bed. While at this pleasant occupation one night, she accidentally set the ship on fire. The vessel was burned; Alderete and three soldiers were all that escaped. The former, overcome with grief, died on the island of Taboga. It was upon hearing of these things, that the viceroy of Peru had appointed his son to the governorship of Chile. Villagran thereupon went to Europe to seek personally from the court his reinstatement in the office to which he had been appointed by Valdivia.

Mendoza, or as he is generally called, Don Garcia, anchored his ten ships in Concepcion bay near the island of Quiriquina. He had brought a large number of soldiers from Peru, together with a great quantity of military stores; with these he determined to make such a display as would intimidate the natives. The latter opposed his landing on the island, but a few rounds of artillery firing sent them flying on their *balsas* for the mainland. Don Garcia captured two of them and these he appointed as emissaries to visit the neighboring Araucanians and to inform them that he desired to negotiate with them a lasting treaty of peace.

Caupolican, acting upon a suggestion from old Colo-

colo, dispatched to the Spaniards, Millalauco, an Indian of a diplomatic turn of mind, with instructions to congratulate the new governor upon his arrival and to express the wish that an amicable settlement might be reached; but in reality, the envoy was to ascertain the strength of the Spanish camp, for the ulmenes had no notion of entering into a treaty of peace. They doubted the intention of the Spaniards too seriously to think of permitting them to obtain a firm footing in their territories.

The Spaniards sought to impress upon Millalauco their importance and strength, and so conducted him about their camp, saluting him with the artillery and regaling him magnificently. All which Millalauco accepted like a Stoic, and, returning home, gave Caupolican full information of the strength of this new arrival of invaders. Caupolican immediately placed sentinels in such a manner that the movements of the Spaniards could be at all times observed, and then took up his axe of authority and prepared for war.

Don Garcia's cavalry forces had not been placed aboard the ten ships, but were making their way overland from Peru under the command of Garcia Ramon, the quartermaster-general. The governor, therefore, decided to await the arrival of these before beginning an active campaign against the Indians. For this purpose, and also that he might obtain what troops the cities of his jurisdiction could furnish, he remained in camp on the island from April until August.

CHAPTER V

CONTINUED WARS WITH THE ARAUCANIANS—DEATH OF CAUPOLICAN—DISCOVERY OF THE ARCHIPELAGO OF CHILOE

On the 6th of August, 1557, Don Garcia de Mendoza, having, as we have seen, spent the winter months on the island of Quiriquina, cautiously landed 130 troops with engineers at Concepcion and fortified Monte Pinto by mounting upon it a number of guns and by the construction of a moat. The mountain commands the harbor, and thus a strong natural defense was secured for a future base of operations. All which proceedings on the part of the Spaniards were observed, and information concerning the same immediately communicated to Caupolican by his secret sentries. The Araucanian general forthwith collected his warriors and on the 9th began a vigorous attack on the Spanish forces upon the mountain, from three sides at the same time, having first sent forward an advance party to fill up the moat with logs. The attack was obstinately conducted, the Indians mounting the mole, some even leaping down within the fortification led by the fiery Tucapel, who with his own hands slew four Spaniards with his ponderous war club and then leaped over the precipice followed by a shower of bullets. So terrible was the slaughter that the ditch

was soon filled with the dead and wounded, over whose prostrate bodies other combatants rushed in their mad attempt to scale the walls.

Seeing the imminent danger of those within the fortification, Don Garcia sent forward reinforcements from the island. These Caupolican met with a portion of his troops, whereupon a combat ensued which lasted for several hours. The Indians, hemmed in between this fresh force and the mountain, were handled so roughly that they were at length forced to beat a retreat.

Nothing daunted, Caupolican raised a larger army and determined to proceed again to Concepcion; but, learning of the arrival of the Spanish cavalry, which had been sent overland from Peru, and being informed that the Spaniards had received reinforcements consisting of two thousand auxiliaries and a body of Spaniards from Imperial, the Araucanian leader halted on the banks of the Biobio, unwilling to begin the siege.

With his force greatly augmented by the new arrivals, Mendoza now took the initiative, crossed the Biobio in boats and prepared to attack Caupolican, who had taken up a position not far from the river, his rear protected by a tract of timbered land into which he could readily retreat in case of defeat. After some skirmishing, in which two parties of Spaniards, one headed by Garcia Ramon, the other by Alonzo Reynoso, were cut to pieces, the battle began. The Indians adopted their usual tactics of rushing upon their foes and seeking by a hand to hand encounter to penetrate to their center; but the firing of the Spanish musketry was so rapid that they failed in their attempt; their ranks were soon so depleted that they were unable to fill the gaps, where-

upon they were thrown into confusion, the Spanish cavalry pressed in and a complete rout followed.

The Indians fled into the woods and the victorious army, abandoning the pursuit, marched into the province of Arauco, but on the way were constantly harassed by bands of Caupolican's troops. Mendoza, more inhuman than any of his predecessors, had put to death some, and mutilated others of the prisoners taken. A brave fellow named Galverino had his hands cut off by the Spaniard's orders, and then was set free, perhaps for the purpose of inspiring the Araucanians with terror. The contrary, however, was the result. The bloody arms of their wounded comrade aroused in the Indians feelings of revenge, so that even the women took up arms and became veritable Amazons.

At a place called Melipuru, the Spaniards were met again by the Indian army, which advanced upon them at daybreak in three lines, having previously sent forward word, in a spirit of bravado, that they would meet them in such manner. Here a closely contested battle was fought, the outcome of which was for a long time doubtful. The Spanish cavalry was met by the Indians with levelled spears and forced back in confusion; the Araucanians penetrated into the center of the infantry, and were on the point of routing the whole Spanish army, when Don Garcia brought up a reserve force and with it charged that part of the enemy's lines commmanded by the giant Lincoyan. This threw them into such confusion that the whole Araucanian line was broken, seeing which Caupolican ordered a retreat. To save the army, Rencu, a valiant chieftain, posted himself in such a manner with a few brave followers as to attract the attention of the Spaniards. While Don Garcia was attacking his

party, Caupolican was effecting a retreat, by which means, perhaps, the Araucanian army escaped total destruction.

Having hung twelve of the ulmenes captured—Galverino, whose hands had been previously cut off, being among them—as a warning to the other Araucanian chiefs of what they might expect if they continued the war, Don Garcia next proceeded against the province of Tucapel. On the spot where Valdivia had been massacred, a city, called Cañete, was founded by Mendoza, the name being derived from the titular appellation of his family. A palisade, protected by a ditch and rampart, having been constructed, Alonzo Reynoso was given the command of the post; Don Garcia himself proceeded then to Imperial, from which place he undertook to dispatch provisions to his new city of Cañete. But a band of Araucanians fell upon his convoy and carriers in a narrow pass, obliging them to drop their burdens and flee to Cañete for safety. The latter place was now attacked by Caupolican, but after five hours of severe fighting the Araucanians were repulsed.

Caupolican now resorted to stratagem, by means of which he hoped to get his troops inside the palisade. He sent one of his chiefs, named Pran, to the garrison in the character of a deserter. His plan might have been successful if Pran had not formed a friendship with one of Reynoso's auxiliaries to whom he communicated his plot and requested of him his assistance in carrying it out.

The Indian pretended to be in sympathy with Pran's scheme, but immediately disclosed it to Reynoso. The plan was for the Indian, who was called Andres, to admit some of the Araucanians within the palisade while the Spaniards were taking their morn-

ing sleep, as they were accustomed to do after their nightly vigils. Reynoso bade Andres carry out his plan. This was done; but when a certain number of the Indians had rushed inside the fortification the gates were closed; the cannons, loaded with grape-shot, were turned upon those without, while those within were slaughtered in a hand to hand combat, with the exception of three ulmenes who were taken prisoners, and who were afterward tied to the mouths of cannons and blown into shreds. The cavalry sallied from the gates and fell upon those of Caupolican's forces without which had chanced to escape the cannonading. Caupolican, with a few followers, escaped to the mountains.

Having brought the Araucanian war to a successful termination, Don Garcia rebuilt Concepcion, and then undertook an expedition against the Cunches (1558).

These Indians had not yet been at war with the *conquistadores*, although one of the allied tribes of the Araucanians, as their territory was situated in the south of Chile and at some distance from Concepcion.

The story is told that when the Cunches first heard of the arrival of Don Garcia's forces, they met in a great council to canvass the situation. One Tunconobal, an Araucanian exile, chanced to be present and advised them to hide all their gold and other property and to send such presents as would lead the Spaniards to believe the country destitute of all those riches which alone would make it appear valuable in their eyes. This was done. Tunconobal was dispatched to meet the Spaniards, clothed in rags, shaking with fear, and bearing a basket of baked lizards and fruits. This had the desired effect; looking upon Tunconobal and his shaking companions, the Spaniards burst out laughing and inquired of them the best road south,

fully believing that they had come to a second Atacama desert. Tunconobal assigned one of his companions for a guide at the request of the Spaniards. The army was conducted along a desolate and difficult coast road and left on the fourth day by their treacherous guide in a barren and mountainous region, from which they extricated themselves with much difficulty.

This journey was not altogether fruitless. Pressing forward, the Spaniards observed, from their high position on the mountains, the beautiful island of Chiloé. Not more pleased was Balboa, when from the top of a high mountain he discovered the mighty Pacific spread out before him. The channels were thronged with boats; one of these was manned by fifteen Indians who pulled from the shore upon seeing the Spaniards. The chief inquired who the newcomers were and what they wanted. The half-starved Spanish troops asked for food; this was given them. The natives brought fruit, maize and meat in their *balsas*, in the same manner as the unsuspecting people of Tumbez loaded canoes with provisions and hospitably entertained Pizarro when he landed upon their shores.

Provisioned, and accompanied by the natives, Don Garcia and his followers explored the archipelago. Some of the islands they found well cultivated, the women plying distaffs and needles, the people industrious and happy.

The poet Alonzo de Ercilla went further south than any others of the party and inscribed his name with the date on the bark of a tree. This was on January 31st, 1559. This young soldier and poet who served through the Araucanian wars, from 1554 to 1562, has celebrated in stirring poetry the scenes of these bat-

tles, written at the time, night after night upon the battlefields.

Soon after this Garcia returned to Imperial, without opposition, through the country of the Huilliches, east of the territories of the Cunches. About this time, too, the city of Osorno was established.

For sometime the brutal Alonzo Reynoso had sought to obtain information of the whereabouts of Caupolican; he had offered rewards and subjected the natives to torture in his efforts to force them to disclose their chief's hiding-place, but all to no purpose. At last a mercenary spy was found who consented to conduct a company of horsemen in search of the chieftain. Caupolican was surrounded, together with a few of his followers, and made prisoner. His wife exhorted him to die rather than surrender, which exhortation not being heeded, she threw his infant son at him and upbraided him for being a coward.

Brought before Reynoso, the veteran chief was ordered to be impaled and shot to death with arrows. Caupolican met his cruel fate like a hero, warning the blood-thirsty Reyñoso, who was detested both by Indians and Spaniards, that from his death would arise many and more fortunate Caupolicans.

Another Caupolican indeed, like a phœnix, soon arose from the old chief's ashes. Acting under the advice of their wizard, Colocolo, the Araucanians elevated young Caupolican, eldest son of their late chief, to the position held by his father; Tucapel was at the same time elected vice-toqui. This young chief, whom chroniclers call Caupolican the Second, raised an army, crossed the Biobio and marched toward Concepcion, which was now indifferently garrisoned. Reynoso proceeded against him with five hundred troops and overtook him at Talcahuano, where a sharp

conflict ensued in which the Spaniards were cut to pieces and utterly defeated. Tucapel chased Reynoso and a few of his followers across the Biobio; these were all who escaped the slaughter.

Reynoso collected another army and returned to the contest, but was again defeated by the young Araucanian general. Young Caupolican, encouraged by his successes, was about to proceed against Concepcion, when Millalauco arrived, bringing information that Don Garcia had quitted Imperial with troops and was attacking the Indian provinces. Caupolican thereupon went to the assistance of his friends and allies and, although caught in an ambush prepared for him by the way, yet defeated his assailants and then pushed forward rapidly to Imperial, whither Don Garcia had retired with his troops.

Caupolican now besieged the city, but with poor success. Then he sent two emissaries as spies to solicit the aid of the Spanish auxiliaries, but the plot was discovered and the emissaries impaled within the walls, together with one hundred and twenty of the treacherous auxiliaries. Assault after assault was next made and such deeds of heroism performed as have immortalized the plains of Troy; and yet Imperial held out. Caupolican at length withdrew his army and effected a junction with the troops he had left behind to oppose Reynoso.

Numerous battles occurred within the month which followed, in some of which Caupolican was victorious; but in the end he was at a disadvantage, for his warriors were decreased in number by the constant fighting, while the Spanish commander constantly received recruits both from Spain and from Peru. Seeing that his heroic resistance was of little avail, the Araucanian general fortified himself in a place

called Quiapo between Cañete and Concepcion, and determined there to protract the struggle behind his defences.

Don Garcia marched against the young commander at Quiapo. Andres was sent as an ambassador to the Araucanians, but was coolly received by Caupolican, for the latter had not forgotten the Indian's treachery to his father. The following day Andres paid the penalty of his former duplicity; being taken as a spy, he was hung by the heels and suffocated with smoke.

Caupolican made a desperate resistance, but, in a sally undertaken to dislodge the Spaniards from about his intrenchments, his officers were killed, Tucapel, Colocolo, Rencu, Lincoyan, Mariantu, Ongolmo and others of his bravest heroes fell, while his troops were mercilessly slain, in fact annihilated. Fortifications were rebuilt at Arauco and Angol; Villarica was reëstablished, and its mines re-opened. In the capital a bishopric had been established.

D. Fr. Bartolemé Roderigo Gonzales Marmolejo, of Carmana in Andalusia, was the first bishop of Santiago, appointed by Pius IV. He erected the church in 1563 and governed it until 1565, when he died. In 1567, D. Fr. Fernando Barrionuevo of the order of San Francisco, a native of Guadalajara, Spain, was elected to the bishopric. He held the office eighteen months, when he died. Following Barrionuevo's death the office remained vacant five years.*

Troops were sent to the assistance of Aguirre in the conquest of Cujo. The latter conquered the natives, the Huarpes, and established the cities of San Juan and Mendoza east of the Andes. These provinces

* In 1564, D. Fr. Diego Medellin, a Franciscan from Estremadura, came from Lima and was made bishop. He governed the church until 1593. The office was then vacant for two years. In 1595, D. Fr. Pedro de Azuaga was promoted to the office but died before he received the episcopal consecration.

east of the mountains, we may add, were subsequently transferred to the Argentine Republic.

Hearing of the arrival of Francisco de Villagran at Buenos Ayres, who had been appointed to succeed to the governorship of Chile, Don Garcia de Mendoza turned over the charge of Chilean affairs temporarily to Rodrigo de Quiroga and returned to Peru. The appointment of Villagran as captain-general of Chile is usually considered as marking the close of the period of the conquest.

CHAPTER VI

ANTIGUENU, PAILLATARU AND PAYNENANCU—QUIROGA, ESTABLISHMENT OF THE ROYAL AUDIENCE—INDIANS OF CHILOE—SOTOMAYOR

Francisco de Villagran, having succeeded Don Garcia de Mendoza in command, fully believed that the stubborn Araucanians were at last subdued, and, therefore, turned his attention to wresting the province of Tucuman from the vice-royalty of Peru. This province had formerly belonged to Chile. Gregori Castaneda was given this enterprise in charge, and, having defeated the Peruvian commander, Juan Zurita, restored the province to the government of Chile. Eventually, however, Tucuman was again attached to Peru by an order from Spain.

But the Araucanians were by no means subdued, notwithstanding the slaughter at Quiapo and the loss of their most celebrated chiefs and heroes. The caciques escaping the battle assembled in a wood and elevated one Antiguenu to the rank of commanding toqui. He was a prudent general, and readily perceived that, in the present demoralized condition of the Araucanian army, it would be impolitic to hazard another battle. So he retired with his followers to a swamp, and caused scaffolds to be erected upon which

his troops might encamp above the moist earth, like the ancient lake-dwellers of Switzerland. Here he rapidly accumulated an army, calling together the youth of the country and exercising them daily in military tactics, until he deemed himself sufficiently strong to quit his retreat and send out expeditions into the Spanish settlements.

When news of these expeditions reached Villagran at Santiago, he hurriedly collected a small force and dispatched his son Pedro against the Indians. For a while unimportant skirmishes took place between the opposing forces. In the first of these Antiguenu met with slight reverses; at another time he defeated a body of Spaniards under Arias Pardo. At length Antiguenu stationed himself upon the top of the almost impregnable Mariguenu, the stronghold of the Araucanian country. The son of Villagran was sent with a strong force against him, but was himself killed in the battle which ensued and his army cut to pieces.

Antiguenu, greatly elated with his signal victory, now marched against Cañete. The inhabitants learning of his approach, withdrew to Imperial and Concepcion, and the Indians burned the deserted town.

About this time the indomitable Villagran died, it is said of grief, appointing as his successor his son Pedro. Antiguenu was now more active than ever. Collecting an army of 4,000 warriors, he sent one half of it against Concepcion under the command of his able vice-toqui, Antunecul. With the other division he marched against the fort in Arauco, which was garrisoned by troops under Lorenzo Bernal.

Antunecul with his division defeated the governor, Pedro, in two attacks, and then began the siege of Concepcion which he continued for two months. The Spaniards received provisions by way of the sea,

which Antunecul could not intercept; thus the siege failed and the Araucanian commander withdrew his troops.

Antiguenu invaded Arauco, as we have seen, and the siege had been long protracted, when by stratagem the Araucanian general led Lorenzo Bernal, the Spanish commander, to believe that his Indian auxiliaries were intriguing with the enemy, whereupon the auxiliaries were discharged and sent outside the walls. Antiguenu immediately fell upon them and put them to death by tortures in sight of the Spaniards. After this the Araucanian chieftain challenged Bernal to single combat to decide the fate of Arauco. The challenge was accepted and the champions fought for more than two hours without serious results, neither of them receiving any wound or injury. Then they were separated by their respective troops, and the siege continued. Unable to secure provisions, as boats sent to their assistance had been repeatedly cut off by the besiegers, the Spanish commander at last withdrew his garrison; the Indians, perhaps by agreement, allowed the troops to pass and then destroyed the town.

The attempt to reduce Angol was not equally successful. The Araucanian division dispatched at first defeated a body of Spaniards, but was itself in turn defeated. Antiguenu himself proceeded there with 2,000 reinforcements, but was met at the confluence of the Biobio and Vergoso and defeated by the Spanish army under Lorenzo Bernal; not, however, until after a contest in which the Spanish infantry, which had once been put to flight, had been checked and reformed by the cavalry. Carried along in the rout of his troops, Antiguenu fell over a high bank into the river and was drowned. It is not known whether he met

his death by accident, or whether, like a Roman general, he preferred death to the dishonor of defeat.

This battle was fought in 1564, and closed the war for a season, or until the following year. At the same time the Araucanians met with disaster in another quarter. A detachment had been sent under another leader, called Lillemu, to lay waste the provinces of Chillan and Itata. Pedro Balsa went against him with a party of eighty Spanish troops, but was defeated. The governor then marched from Santiago with one hundred and fifty Spaniards and with this force cut off a detachment of Lillemu's troops. The latter chieftain came with reinforcements to their assistance, but found that they had been already dispersed. The Spaniards fell furiously upon their reinforcements, and it was only by taking a stand in a narrow pass that Lillemu was able to effect a retreat of his forces; but this stratagem cost him his own life together with the lives of a large number of his bravest warriors.

During the year following, Pedro de Villagran who had been appointed to the governorship merely as the temporary successor of his father, was succeeded by Rodrigo de Quiroga, who was appointed to the office by the Royal Audience of Lima. The Araucanians elected as Antiguenu's successor a relative of Lautaro, Paillataru by name. He was a cautious commander who contented himself with leading occasional incursions against the Spanish provinces.

In 1565 Quiroga rebuilt the fort of Arauco and the town of Cañete, also a fort on the spot where the battle of Quiapo had been fought.

In 1566 formal possession was taken of Chiloé with its accompanying archipelago, consisting of eighty outlying islands, and the city of Castro with the port

of Chacao was founded on the island. No opposition was encountered from the peaceable inhabitants, though these islands are said to have had at the time a dense population of more than seventy thousand people, industrious, mechanical, quick to learn, good seamen, but rather timid in disposition. In language and appearance they were similar to their fierce Araucanian neighbors, but their island home had protected them from the wars which raged for generations along the Maule and Biobio, until they had become in habits pacific agriculturists. They submitted to a handful of Spaniards, and their seventy-six ulmenes henceforth became subject to the Spanish authority. The Araucanians had apparently been a bulwark protecting their southern neighbors against old Tupac Yupanqui's arms, and those of his successors, for a hundred years. It is creditable to these warlike tribes of southern Chile that they had not turned their arms for pillage against the rich country, the well tilled fields and prosperous communities, of their wild neighbors. In fact, there is much in the Araucanian character which claims our admiration. They were heroic but not usually savage, brave but not often cruel.

As the governors of Chile from Valdivia to Quiroga had not succeeded in subjugating the Araucanian nation, and as it seemed highly important that the conquest of this rich country should be effectively accomplished, Philip II. detached Chile, in a measure, from the government of Peru and established an independant Royal Audience for the political and military government of the country. Quiroga was removed and the command of the army given to Ruiz de Gamboa, who at once hastened to Cañete where Paillataru was preparing to begin a siege. The two armies met near

Cañete and Paillataru was defeated. The Araucanians were so demoralized that for the period of a year they offered little resistance to the inroads of the Spaniards, who laid waste portions of their territory and enslaved their women and children. But the liberty loving Indians would accept no proposition looking toward a treaty of peace.

Not succeeding as well as had been anticipated in its military administration, the Royal Audience turned over that part of its functions to Don Melchor Bravo de Saravia in 1568, constituting the offices he was to fill under three heads, president of the Royal Audience, civil governor, and commander-in-chief of the forces.

It is said that Saravia was a much better governor than general; at any rate, Paillataru defeated him at the memorable Mt. Mariguenu, and the president at once resigned his military honors to Gamboa and Velasco, marshal and quartermaster respectively, with orders to abandon Arauco. Again was Arauco given up by the Spaniards. While Gamboa and Velasco were conducting its inhabitants to Cañete, they were attacked by Paillataru, but succeeded in driving back their adversary.

Paillataru took Quiapo, then again marched against Cañete. Gamboa marched out to meet him and a fierce battle ensued, in which the Spaniards were victorious. They then proceeded into the Araucanian territory, but Paillataru had collected another army and with this the Spaniards were driven back. After this indecisive war there was a calm for a period of four years, during which time the exhausted belligerents were not disposed to take up arms. Paillataru died in 1574.

In 1570 a bishopric was established in the city of Impérial, the first bishop being D. Fr. Antonio de San

Miguel y Solier, a Franciscan.* About this time, too, occurred the first earthquake, which did great damage to the cities. Concepcion was destroyed almost as totally as it was afterward in 1730 and in 1751.

The condition of Chile had apparently changed but little since Valdivia's day. Yet sufficient time had passed since the early settlement for children to become men. Descendants of Spaniards and Indians—mestizos—had become numerous, and the Araucanians recognized the advantage of attaching this strong party to their interests. So on the death of Paillataru, a half-breed named Alonzo Diaz, who had taken the name of Paynenancu and had fought with the Araucanians for ten years, was made toqui. He was, however, a rash leader and attacked without caution or sufficient preparation. Bernal defeated him in his own intrenchments on the Biobio, and Rodrigo Bastidas routed him at Villarica.

The war continued in a desultory manner during the year, and the court of Spain, dissatisfied with the condition of affairs, sent out a special examiner, who undertook to cut down expenses. He dissolved the Royal Audience, ordering the members of it back to Peru. Don Rodrigo de Quiroga was again appointed governor and governmental affairs were arranged on the old basis.

In the following year, 1576, Quiroga raised an army and marched against Paynenancu, who had long been harassing the settlements by frequent attacks. Failing to engage him in a pitched battle, Quiroga again laid waste the Araucanian territory.

---

* San Miguel governed the church until 1589. He was a native of Vergara and was elected to his office by Pope Pius IV. He erected the Referida church in Imperial, April 1, 1574. The next bishop was D. Fr. Augustin Cisneros, a Spaniard of Nacimiento, and dean of the church at Imperial. He governed the church until his death, which occurred in September, 1594. D.Fr. Reginaldo Lizarroga was then elevated to the mitre (1596).

Quiroga died in 1580, naming Martin Ruiz de Gamboa, his father-in-law, who had founded the city of Chillan, as his successor. Gamboa conducted the affairs of the government for a period of three years, during all of which time he was engaged in border warfare with the Araucanians, who were still led by the half-breed Paynenancu. At the same time the Pehuenches and Chiquillanians, were induced by the Araucanians to attack the Spaniards from their mountain fastnesses. These latter tribes inhabited the mountain regions north of the allied tribes of the Araucanians, and east of Santiago and the river Maule. They were wandering tribes more like the North American Indians, yet far different in disposition, as they were industrious and commercial in their habits, though fond of the chase and of moving from place to place.

The court of Spain nominated Don Alonzo de Sotomayor as governor of Chile in place of Quiroga, deceased. Sotomayor in 1583, landed at Buenos Ayres with six hundred regular troops and marched across the country to Chile. He elevated his brother, Don Luis, to the office of commanding colonel of the province—an office which he seems to have created for him—and the latter proceeded to the relief of Villarica and Valdivia, which Paynenancu was at the time besieging. The Araucanians stubbornly opposed the Spaniards in two contests, but were defeated. They were defeated also while proceeding against two detachments of their enemy that had been sent to ravage their territory.

The Pehuenches likewise were repulsed and driven back from Chillan. Then with an army of seven hundred Spaniards and a large following of auxiliaries, the governor entered the Araucanian territory, which

he laid waste, and, taking many prisoners, ordered them to be mutilated and turned loose, thinking by these abominable measures to intimidate the Indians. The hunted tribes fled from some of the provinces, destroying their houses and crops behind them.

Despite all these vigorous measures, the Araucanians received reinforcements from their allies and from the mestizos, and were even joined by some Spaniards, so that Paynenancu, with the eight hundred men he was thus enabled to get together, soon gave battle to the whole Spanish army. The contest was stubborn, and not until the Araucanian army was slain almost to a man and Paynenancu taken prisoner, was the battle won. The heroic chief was executed, and the governor rebuilt the oft destroyed fort of Arauco—the battle having been fought in that vicinity—which he placed in charge of Garcia Ramon, the quartermaster.

CHAPTER VII

CAYANCARU AND OTHER TOQUIS—SIR JOHN CAVENDISH—JANEQUEO—LOYOLA

Paynenancu had not been lacking in valor, but his rashness had cost the Araucanians dearly, and their repeated defeats for some time depressed their military ardor; but their heroic spirit was not broken. In 1585 Cayancaru, ulmen of the district of Mariguenu, was elected toqui, and forthwith messengers were dispatched with the symbolical arrows calling the different provinces to arms. A new army was soon in the field, and with this Cayancaru proceeded against the Spanish post of Karampangui, his troops being led in three divisions by Lonconobal, Antulevu and Tarochina. Marching by three different routes, bodies of auxiliaries which the Spaniards had thrown out were first encountered and defeated.

The Indians began their attack by moonlight, but the Spaniards, after momentary confusion, formed in line of battle and opened such a vigorous fire of musketry upon their assailants that they were at length compelled to give way. A charge was ordered by the governor, but it was only after hard fighting and great loss that the Indians were repulsed.

At daybreak, however, the Araucanians returned to the attack. A battle ensued in the open plain, in

which the Indians were again repulsed, though the combat resulted in heavy loss to the Spaniards.

Quitting the Indian country, Sotomayor built two forts upon the frontier, one on each side of the Biobio, Trinidad and Espiritu Santo, and then set about raising recruits. Two thousand cavalry and a considerable reinforcement of infantry were soon added to the troops already under his standard.

Cayancaru, as soon as Sotomayor had removed to the Biobio, determined to attack the fort of Arauco. To create a diversion, Guepotan, at the head of the Puelches, was ordered to ravage the country in the neighborhood of Villarica, from his strong position at Fort Liben, where he had defied the Spanish arms for a period of more than two years. Cadeguala, who was to be Cayancaru's successor in the toquiship, was directed against Angol; Tarochina was instructed to guard the Biobio, Melilanca and Catipillan were sent toward Imperial.

These projects met with varying successes. Guepotan lost his fort of Liben, Tarochina captured a number of boats on the Biobio. It was not, however, until the following year that Cayancaru began the siege of Arauco. The place was strongly invested, but the besieged made so desperate an onslaught against their enemies that they forced their ranks and compelled them to fly, whereupon Cayancaru, feeling much chagrined, resigned the leadership to his son Nongoniel, and retired to his own district. Nongoniel again invaded Arauco, and with such success that the garrison was obliged to evacuate. Then the successful young commander proceeded against Trinidad, but was attacked on the way by a strong force of Spaniards under Francisco Hernandez. Nongoniel lost an arm in the engagement and was forced to retire to a

mountain. Here he was drawn into a combat and slain, together with fifty of his warriors. Cadeguala was then elected toqui.

There had been frequent descents of pirates, corsairs, English and Dutch, upon the coasts and at diverse times. La Serena, Valparaiso, Concepcion and Valdivia had been sacked. In the year 1586, three ships commanded by Sir Thomas Cavendish landed at Quintero Bay north of Valparaiso and sought to subject the Spanish provinces to English power. While he was entering into negotiations with the natives he was attacked by Alonzo Molina, corregidor of Santiago, and driven from the place. This incident, serving to divert the Spaniards, led Cadeguala to plan an expedition against Angol. Some of the inhabitants of that place were friendly to his interests and these instigated some Chilean Indians, who were in the service of the Spaniards, to set the houses on fire during the night of his attack. The plan was successful. Fortunately Sotomayor arrived just before the attack, and inspired by his presence, the inhabitants at length retired to the citadel. Reorganizing their forces there, a successful sally was made against the enemy at daybreak and the Araucanian general compelled to withdraw his troops.

Next Cadeguala undertook the reduction of the fortress of Puren, and invested it with an army of four thousand men. The governor hastened to its relief with reinforcements; but Cadeguala met him on the way and obliged him to retreat. The toqui now offered the besieged the alternative of retiring upon parole, or joining his army. The terms were rejected by all of the garrison with the exception of one, Juan Tapia, who availed himself of the terms and joined the Araucanians. Cadeguala now offered to settle the siege by single combat with the commander, Garcia Ramon.

The challenge was accepted, the combat being arranged for the third day after. In this tilt Cadeguala fell, pierced by Ramon's lance, and the Araucanian army withdrew.

Guanoalca was elected toqui in place of Cadeguala and at once returned to the siege. Juan Tapiá, the Spaniard who had accepted the terms of the Araucanians and had gone over to their side in the previous siege, informed Guanoalca that the garrison was short of provisions and divided in sentiment. This no doubt was true, as the besieged soon evacuated the place and retired to Angol, the Indians permitting them to pass unmolested.

Guanoalca next determined to take the new fort which had been erected recently near Mt. Mariguenu. Learning, however, that the post had been strongly reinforced, he changed his plan and proceeded against Trinidad and Espiritu Santo. On his approach, the governor abandoned the forts, transferring the garrisons to a new fort he had had constructed near Angol upon the river Puchanqui. These events occurred during the year 1589.

It was not unusual for women to wield spears in the Araucanian wars. A woman now took up arms who proved to be a veritable Joan of Arc. Janequeo was the wife of the heroic Guepotan, who after he had lost Liben, had retired to the mountains, where he was sometime afterward killed by the Spaniards, preferring death, it is said, to being taken prisoner. Janequeo determined to avenge the death of her husband, and for that purpose placed herself, in company with her brother Guechiuntereo, at the head of the Puelches.

During the year 1590 she began to harass the Spanish towns and showed no quarter to any of her enemies who chanced to fall into her hands. The governor pro-

ceeded against her with a considerable army, but she occupied the mountainous regions and attacked his troops in van and rear until he was obliged to beat a retreat. An Indian prisoner taken was hung. This act enraged the Puelches and they clamored for vengeance.

The intrepid woman next attacked the fortress of Puchanqui, but was unable to take it, though she defeated a part of the garrison and killed the commander, Aranda. She now withdrew to the mountain fastnesses of Villarica, where she fortified herself in a cañon. From this retreat she carried on a lively warfare against Villarica, so that the inhabitants were afraid to leave the streets.

Complaints were made to the governor, who immediately dispatched his brother, Don Luis, against the almost impregnable stronghold of the enemy. The issue of the expedition was for sometime doubtful, as Janequeo repeatedly repelled the assaults of the Spanish forces led by Don Luis, Castillejo and Penalosa; but her troops were at last dispersed by the artillery and she herelf was obliged to seek safety in flight. Her brother was captured, and promised to prevail upon his sister to lay down arms on condition that his life should be spared. The Spaniards dismissed him for that purpose and he immediately presented the matter to a council of the nation. An old cacique present, Catipiuque, scorning all proffers of peace, slew the valiant warrior while the debate was in progress.

Guanoalca was an old man; he died toward the close of the year 1590, and the following year Quintuguenu was elected in his place. The new toqui was a young chieftain enterprising and ambitious. But his career was of short duration. He took the fort of Mt. Mari-

guenu, and fortified himself upon its redoubtable summit. This inaccessible mountain, which had been the retreat of the Araucanians for half a century, had always enabled them to hold out against the Spaniards. The governor marched against Quintuguenu at the head of one thousand Spaniards and a large following of auxiliary troops. To oppose these, Quintuguenu had two thousand men posted upon the mountain. Half way up the height the Spaniards were attacked with such fury that the governor with great difficulty succeeded in preventing a rout; passing among his men, he urged them forward until they gained the lost ground on the top of the mountain. The Araucanians fought like wolves at bay, but notwithstanding their valor were cut in pieces. Quintuguenu fell, bleeding from three wounds, while those of his troops who were not killed in the engagement betook themselves to headlong flight down the precipitous sides of the mountain. Among the Spanish Indian auxiliaries the slaughter had been so terrible that the greater part of them were left dead upon the field. Of the Spaniards, about twenty were killed.

This victory, the first obtained by the Spaniards at the ill-omened Mariguenu, was celebrated by general rejoicings, by discharges of artillery, and by broadsides from the Peruvian fleet, which, sailing down the cost after the English, chanced at this time to be in the harbor. Taking advantage of the enthusiasm aroused by this victory, the governor sent to Peru by the fleet to obtain reinforcements, intending to prosecute to a successful issue the war which had now raged so many years with only occasional periods of peace.

Sotomayor next abandoned the fort of Arauco, and reëstablished it upon the coast, where it could

not be so readily besieged. Colocolo, a son of the famous wizard, to whom we have already referred, was ulmen of the territory where the new fort was built. In attempting to drive off the invaders he was taken prisoner, and to save himself promised to persuade his subjects to submit to the Spanish government. This, however, his people refused to accede to, so that Colocolo, enraged at their obstinacy, joined the Spaniards and led them against his own people.

We have now reached the year 1592, and the Araucanians are no nearer being subjected than when the Spaniards first crossed the Biobio. They had raised up commander after commander, army after army, and recovered from defeat after defeat, scorning all propositions looking toward a treaty of peace, which they well knew meant to yield their liberties and territories to the Spaniards. At this time a Spanish prisoner among the Indians undertook to effect a treaty of peace between the belligerents, but failed to satisfy either Spaniards or Indians by his proposals. The governor made a last proposition; this not being accepted by the Indians, he marched an army into the province of Tucapel, which he laid waste far and near. Paillaeco, having succeeded Quintuguenu, sought to draw the Spanish army into an ambush, but was himself deceived by his enemy's pretended flight and thus drawn into an open field where he was killed and his troops mercilessly put to the sword. The few escaping fled to the swamps.

Notwithstanding these repeated victories the loss of the Spaniards had been so great that the governor decided to withdraw with his forces to Santiago and there await the expected recruits from Peru. These not arriving, he determined to go there himself for assistance, leaving the command of the army and the

government to Pedro Viscarra, the quartermaster. He never came back. Don Martin Oñez de Loyola was soon after this named his successor by the court of Spain. Loyola had won renown in Peru, as the conqueror of the rebellious Inca Tupac Amaru, who made a most stubborn resistance to the Spaniards and revived much of the ancient martial spirit of his race before he was finally overthrown. This brilliant conquest had obtained for Loyola not only the government of Chile, but the Princess Clara Beatrix, or Clara Beatrix Coya, daughter and heiress of the Inca Syri Tupac. The new governor assumed his office at Santiago in 1593.

But Loyola was soon to find that conquering Tupac Amaru and subduing the Araucanians were different matters. Paillamachu had been elevated to the chief toquiship, and to him was reserved the honor of accomplishing what his predecessors had attempted in vain, the destruction of the Spanish settlements in Araucania and the recovery of the ancient independence of the race. He was an old man, wise as Colocolo, and his first act was to appoint two of his best officers vice-toquis, Pelantaru and Millacolquin. Next he withdrew to the marshes of Lumaco to discipline an army with which he might hope to cope with the Spaniards, led by so renowned a leader as Loyola.

Loyola, that he might carry on the war from a nearer base than Santiago, had proceeded to Concepcion. Paillamachu sent to him there an officer named Antipillan, ostensibly to compliment him, but in reality to obtain information. Acting as his predecessors had often done, Loyola sought to impress the envoy with an idea of the extent of his resources, and intimated that the Araucanians would do well to treat with him. The politic Antipillan replied so truly, that the Span-

iards, by seeking peace, only wished to subdue them, that Loyola was struck by his patriotic sentiments and dismissed the Indian with many expressions of esteem. There was something in the Araucanian character that commanded the admiration of their foes; an enemy's cause has seldom been treated with so little prejudice as in the case of the Spanish historians who have depicted the Araucanian campaigns.

CHAPTER VIII

GENERAL UPRISING OF THE ARAUCANIANS—VISCARRA, QUINONES, RAMON, LUIS DE VALDIVIA, TALAVERANNO, ULLOA—DESCENT OF THE DUTCH

In 1594 Loyola crossed the Biobio and founded a new town, which, in honor of his wife, he called Coya. This was in the vicinity of Angol and near the gold mines of Kilacoyan, both of which places the fortresses of Coya were intended to protect. Magistrates were appointed, churches erected, monasteries founded, and two citadels, called respectively Jesus and Chivecura, were constructed in such favorable positions as to commmand both shores of the Biobio.

In the following year Paillamachu ordered Loncothegua, one of his officers, to take the fort of Jesus. This task had been nearly accomplished when the brave captain was killed; whereupon his troops withdrew, after having burned a part of the fort.

After this unsuccessful enterprise, Paillamachu remained quiet until the next year, 1596, when he began to make expeditions into the Spanish settlements to obtain forage for his army and to give his troops military exercise, but he was careful not to bring on an untimely engagement with the Spaniards sent out against him.

To prevent these incursions as far as possible, the governor erected two forts, one at Puren and the other on the borders of the marshes of Lumaco, which he strongly garrisoned. Not long after he sent a company to found a young city, San Luis de Loyola, in the province of Cujo.

Paillamachu, having at length in the year 1597 raised a formidable army, descended with fury upon the new fortresses at Puren and Lumaco. The latter place was razed, the former reduced to extremity, when a reinforcement opportunely arriving under Pedro Cortez, the Araucanians withdrew. The governor, however, deeming the forts of little worth ordered their demolition and transferred the garrisons to Angol. Imperial being threatened, he withdrew his forces to that city, repaired the fortifications of the place, as well as those of Villarica and Valdivia, after which he started with an escort to the river Biobio. While encamping in the valley of Caralava, the Araucanian general fell upon him with a small party of two hundred warriors and killed him with all his companions.

Governor Loyola had been killed on the night of November 22, 1598; forty-eight hours after, all the Araucanian provinces, including the tribes of the Cunchese and Huilliches, were in arms. It is said that every Spaniard found outside of the fortifications was put to death. Sieges were at once begun against Osorno, Valdivia, Villarica, Imperial, Cañete, Angol, Coya and Arauco. At the same time, Paillamachu burned Concepcion and Chillan, then recrossed the Biobio in safety with immense booty.

These reverses so discouraged the Spaniards that many were in favor of abandoning the country entirely, but better counsels prevailed and Pedro de Viscarra

was chosen to conduct the affairs of government until the due appointment of another governor. He remained in office six months, during which time he crossed the Biobio with such troops as he could get together and conducted the inhabitants of Angol and Coya in safety to Concepcion and Chillan, which he sought to repeople.

The viceroy of Peru, learning of the critical condition of the provinces in Chile, dispatched thither Francisco Quinones as governor, with an army and an abundance of military supplies. Quinones, after several unsuccessful engagements with the Araucanians north of the Biobio where the Indians were ravaging the country, ordered the evacuation of the forts of Arauco and Cañete and transferred the inhabitants to Concepcion. Quinones, like so many of his predecessors, was a soldier of cold blood; having taken several prisoners in an engagement with Paillamachu on the plains of Yumbel, he ordered them to be quartered and hung upon trees. As we have before observed, these measures of extreme cruelty served only to enrage the enemy.

The sieges of the fortified places within the Araucanian territories went on, except that of Valdivia, which had been razed. Paillamachu continued to ravage the Spanish provinces, which, having effectually accomplished, he next proceeded against Valdivia with 4,000 troops, crossed the river at night, attacked the city early in the morning, slaughtered the inhabitants, burned the houses, and even attacked the shipping in the harbor. In this onslaught he obtained two million dollars worth of booty, cannon, arms, and four hundred prisoners. A force of three hundred troops under Campo arrived from Peru after the destruction of Valdivia, and made an unsuccessful attempt to re-

lieve Osorno, Villarica and Imperial, which were still invested by the enemy.

The European wars resulted now and then in attacks being made by the contending parties on the American colonies. The English had sent expeditions against Peru and Chile under Drake and Cavendish (1578—1585), Holland now dispatched five warships (1598—1600) to the coast of Chile. These plundered the island of Chiloé and massacred the Spanish garrison stationed there. At the island of Talca, however, the invaders were driven back with a loss of twenty-three of their men, in an attack made upon them by the Araucanians dwelling there, who seem to have taken them for a fresh arrival of Spaniards.

Quinones requested to be recalled from the undesirable government of Chile, and Alonzo Garcia Ramon was appointed to succeed him. Ramon was the Anthony Wayne of Chilean Indian battles but succeeded no better than his predecessor, despite his long experience in Araucanian warfare.

Alonzo de Rivera was appointed by the court of Spain to succeed Ramon. The new captain general had won spurs in the wars of the Low Countries, and, having brought with him from Spain a regiment of veterans, much was expected of him. His first act was to fortify the Biobio with a series of strong forts. This infused new courage into the hearts of the despondent Chilean settlers but it did not save the Araucanian cities which Valdivia had established, and which had been defended so many years with so great an outlay of Spanish blood and treasure. After a siege of nearly three years Villarica and Imperial fell into the hands of the Araucanians. The latter place held out long after the garrison had been reduced to the utmost extremities, encouraged thereto by the

heroic spirit displayed by a Spanish lady, Ines Aguillera, who, having lost husband and brothers in the siege, yet by her heroic example and ardent words, persuaded the garrison to hold out until a favorable opportunity presented itself for an escape by sea. Osorno also fell about this time, the besieged inhabitants having undergone terrible hardships, being compelled to subsist on the most loathsome food.

This for a period closed the Araucanian wars, as the cities and forts were not rebuilt in the Indian territories. Paillamachu, the most successful chieftain of the Araucanians, died in 1603, and was succeeded in the toquiship by Huenecura.

Of the Spaniards in the Araucanian territories, many who were taken prisoners, afterward intermarried with the natives. Spanish women, on the other hand, were conducted to the homes of the conquerors; many captives settled in the Indian country and dwelt there, uniting themselves with the tribes.

In those days, when the Spanish succession was of paramount interest, it was a courtier's duty to obtain his royal patron's permission when he wished to wed a lady in the favor of court. This, Alonzo de Rivera failed to do when he married Aguillera's daughter, in consequence of which he was transferred from the governorship of Chile to that of Tucuman and Alonzo Garcia Ramon was restored to the office. The latter was, at the time of his restoration to office, given 1250 soldiers, veterans from Europe and Mexico, which swelled the Chilean army to three thousand Spanish troops, beside a large body of auxiliaries. With this army the captain-general marched into the Araucanian territories, and, encountering no opposition, went as far as the province of Boroa, where he built a fort and garrisoned it with three hundred men

under the command of an officer named Juan Rodulfo Lisperguer.

No sooner had Ramon retreated with his main army than the toqui, Huenecura, proceeded against the new fort. Falling in with a detachment of one hundred and sixty men commanded by Lisperguer in person, he almost destroyed the whole party, Lisperguer himself being among the killed.

Next the Indian commander attacked the fort, but it was so valiantly defended by the garrison under Negrete, who had succeeded to the command, that the Araucanians were obliged to suspend their attacks and to begin a siege. Hearing of this, the captain-general withdrew the garrison. Then the old story of fort building and fort destroying, attacks and repulses, was repeated, and in the end, Ramon's army was destroyed. He had sent his troops in two divisions, commanded respectively by Alvaro Pineda and Don Diego Saravia, to lay waste the enemy's country. Huenecura fell upon the divisions and destroyed each in turn so completely that it is said not a single man escaped death or captivity.

These disasters caused the new king, Philip III., to establish an army of two thousand troops on the frontiers, for the support of which an appropriation of nearly $300,000 was annually made; and also, in the following year, September 8th, 1609, to re-establish the Royal Audience court in Chile. This court, formerly held at Concepcion, now began its sittings at Santiago, Garcia Ramon receiving by this change the titles of president of the Royal Audience, and captain-general of Chile.

This court was composed of one regent (*rejente*), one senior (*decano*), three judges (*oidores*), and one fiscal, and was presided over by the governor. Its functions

were not alone to administer justice, but also to aid the governor in the direction of governmental affairs and in the conduct of war.*

The veteran, Ramon, enjoyed his gubernatorial honors less than a year. On the 10th of August, 1610, he died at Concepcion; not, however, until after he had obtained a victory over Toqui Huenecura in the marshes of Lumaco. He had marched an army of two thousand men against the enemy, and the battle which ensued was characterized by all the old time fury upon both sides. The governor placed himself in the front rank when his lines were about to give way, and so animated his men that what had been nearly a rout was converted into a victory. Perhaps no captain-general of Chile was more endeared to the people, or more esteemed by the Indians, than Garcia Ramon. For that age he was a humane man. He was succeeded by Don Luis Merlo de la Fuente, the oldest member of the Royal Audience. Toqui Huenecura about this same time died of a wound he had received in battle and was succeeded by Aillavilu the Second, who proved to be one of the best of the Araucanian generals, though his achievements are not to be counted with those of Paillamachu.

Luis de Valdivia was a Jesuit missionary. He desired to convert the Araucanians to the Christian faith, but found it no such easy task as Father Valverde had in converting the Incas or Father Olmeda the Aztecs. It was impossible to preach while battles were constantly being fought. Animated by religious zeal, he proceeded to Spain and had an audience with Philip III. who was a zealous catholic. The king

* The governor was president of the Royal Audience. For this reason he is often referred to by Chilean historians as *presidente*. The three names, governor, captain-general and president, are given indiscriminately by different writers. In this book the three titles are used.

immediately sent orders to Chile to the effect that war should cease, that lasting peace should be concluded with the Araucanians and that the river Biobio should henceforth be considered the boundary of the Spanish possessions. The priest was placed at the head of the government, which had been for a short time conducted by Juan de Xara Quemada, but Valdivia refused to exercise any civil authority whatever, and selected Alonzo de Rivera for the office, which nomination was confirmed and that person recalled to Chile.

Upon his arrival in Chile in 1612, the priest at once communicated with the Araucanians relative to the proposed treaty. He brought with him a letter from Philip, but to all of this Aillavilu gave little heed, as he supposed it merely a piece of Spanish deception. He was, however, soon succeeded in the toquiship by Ancanamon, who thought it the part of wisdom and good policy to send the ulmen, Carampangui, to confer with Valdivia. The result of the conference was, that Valdivia met a deputation of fifty of the Araucanian chieftains at Nancu in the province of Catiray, and to these he read the royal letter and made known the terms of the proposed treaty. The assembled caciques listened attentively, thanked the priest for his efforts, and promised to make a further report to their commander.

When Valdivia had returned to Concepcion accompanied by Carampangui, Governor Rivera, pleased with the progress already made toward establishing peace, sent an ensign, Pedro Melendez, to Ancanamon with the king's letter and a request that he should come to Paicavi to confer with him in respect to the treaty. The toqui went with a small guard, and was received with due honors. Then the terms

were discussed. These were that the Biobio should henceforth be the boundary, that neither nation should pass that river with an army, that all deserters should be mutually returned, and that Christian missionaries should be permitted to preach to the Araucanians.

The toqui required, as a preliminary step to satisfy himself of the good faith of the Spaniards, that the forts of Arauco and Paicavi, recently established upon the seacoast, should be abandoned. Thereupon the fort of Arauco was abandoned and the governor promised to withdraw the garrison from the other as soon as the treaty of peace should be agreed upon. Satisfied with this, Ancanamon departed to confer with his chiefs.

But the negotiations were suddenly interrupted in an unexpected manner. Ancanamon had a Spanish wife in his seraglio. During his absence she fled to the governor; with her were two children, as well as two other wives and two daughters, of the toqui. These refugees were kindly received by the Spaniards and this so incensed Ancanamon that he gave up all thought of peace. He demanded of the governor the return of his wives and children. This demand was, after considerable parleying, refused on the ground that the refugees had embraced the Christian faith, and that they could not be permitted to run any danger of loosing so great a blessing by a return to their Indian master.

Thus the negotiations were about to fail of any satisfactory result, when the head ulmen of Illicura, Utiflame, who had long been a most inveterate foe to the Spaniards, came to visit Valdivia at Arauco out of regard for the priest's benefaction to him in returning sons who had previously been taken as prisoners. He

was civilly received both by Valdivia and the governor, and grateful for his treatment, offered to receive the missionaries into his territory and to use his influence in persuading Ancanamon to accept the proposed treaty. Valdivia appointed Utiflame to carry on the negotiations, and by the advice of the chief, turned over to him Ancanamon's wives, whom he was to conduct safely home. Utiflame departed, accompanied by three Spanish missionaries, Horatio Vecchio, Martin Aranda and Diego Montalban.

When Ancanamon learned of Utiflame's arrival at Ilicura accompanied by the missionaries, he repaired there with two hundred horsemen and slew the whole party. This brought an end to all efforts looking toward a treaty of peace. The Spanish army cried loudly for vengeance. Ancanamon renewed the struggle and laid waste the Spanish settlements. He was succeeded by Loncothegua, who opposed the Spaniards in several engagements with varying results.

Rivera died in 1617 and was succeeded by Fernando Talaveranno. Ten months afterward, Talaveranno was succeeded by Lopez de Ulloa as governor.

CHAPTER IX

THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY

The next toqui, succeeding Loncothegua who resigned, was Lientur, whose military exploits were noted for their dash and daring, so that he was designated the wizard (*brujo*) by the Spaniards. Levipillan was selected as vice-toqui, and proved himself an able second in his chief's undertakings. They ravaged the Spanish territories north of the Biobio, captured at one time four hundred cavalry horses, and at another time defeated the corregidor of Chillan, who was killed. He also defeated Robolledo, commander at Yumbel, captured Neculguenu in the following year, the garrison of which place was put to the sword, and invested Yumbel, which however was saved by Ximenes, the commandant. These reverses and constant anxieties so weighed upon the mind of Governor Lopez de Ulloa that he died, November 20th, 1620. He was succeeded by the eldest member of the court of the Royal Audience, according to the custom. This person was Cristoval de la Cerda, who held the office one year, during which time he built a fort on the Biobio and had several encounters with Lientur. Pedro Sorez de Ulloa succeeded Cerda and held the reins of government until September 11th, 1624, when

he died. The office was then filled for six months by his brother-in-law, Francisco de Alva y Noruena.

During all this time the war was continued with Lientur, but that chief was aged and much broken in strength by his constant exertions, and, therefore, resigned the command, September 11th 1624, and appointed for the position Putapichion, a young warrior of ability and courage whose youth had been spent as a slave among the Spaniards.

The Spaniards also received a new commander, Don Luis Fernandez de Cordova y Arce, Señor del Carpio, a relative of the viceroy of Peru, who received from the latter an army and a large quantity of military stores, with orders to carry on an offensive warfare against the Araucanians. He introduced reforms in the Chilean army, paid the soldiers the arrears due them, and assigned various offices to Creoles who had been hitherto neglected and slighted. It was during his administration, that the boundaries between Chile and Peru were definitely fixed at El Paposo.

Having arranged affairs in a satisfactory manner, the governor directed Alonzo Cordova, his cousin, to make an expedition against the provinces of Tucapel and Arauco, with a force of six hundred men. In this incursion, one hundred and fifty prisoners, both men and women, and a number of cattle, were taken.

One of the strongest places held by the Spaniards on the Biobio, was the fort of Nativity. This post, situated on the top of a mountain, was thought to be impregnable. Putapichion determined to win for himself undying military fame by the capture of this important stronghold. He came unexpectedly upon the garrison, scaled the difficult ascent and set fire to some of the works; he also captured the ditch. The garrison rallied to the defence and poured such a con-

tinuous rain of lead into the enemy's ranks, that the Araucanian leader was compelled to retreat.

Crossing the Biobio, Putapichion proceeded against Quinel, a strong port garrisoned by six hundred troops, but the attack proved a failure, whereupon, the toqui turned his attention to sacking the Spanish settlements in Chillan. The governor sought to retaliate in the following year (1628), by invading the Araucanian territories in three directions. Many prisoners were captured and rich spoils taken, when Putapichion presented himself with an army of three thousand men and offered battle to the division commanded in person by the governor. The outcome was about equal on both sides, the slaughter being everywhere great. The quartermaster, who had commanded one of the three divisions, was more fortunate than the governor in that he captured a vast amount of booty, droves of horses, a thousand cattle and two hundred prisoners; but, transferring them aboard ship, he lost them all at sea during a tempest. The third division, commanded by the sergeant-major, accomplished nothing worthy of note, as the natives along the Andes, against whom he had directed his march, fled to their mountain fastnesses, where he was unable to follow them.

Don Francisco Laso de la Vega succeeded Cordova, being appointed captain-general by the Spanish court. He was a gallant and experienced officer, and humane in his policy of treating the natives. His first act with reference to the Araucanians was to send home all the Indian prisoners and undertake to arrange a treaty of peace with them. Failing in this, he began and carried on an effective war against that unconquerable nation for a period of ten years. There were many evenly contested fields, Piculgue, Robleria,

and many less important engagements, which do not materially differ, either in detail or result, from the many battles we have already described. Putapichion was defeated and killed in a battle at the port of Alvarrado. Quepuantu was next in command and sought to rally the Araucanians to a charge after the fall of the leader, but in vain; the army fled, pursued for a distance of six miles by the victorious Spaniards.

Thus the war continued during the whole long period of Laso's government, little quarter being shown on either side. Each nation was so decimated that a treaty of peace became possible under Laso's successor, Don Francisco de Zuñiga, Marquis of Baides. Quepuantu, who succeeded Putapichion as toqui, was surprised at his home by a force of four hundred Spaniards, and, his party being slain, he himself was killed in a combat he had accepted with Loncomallu, chief of the Spanish auxiliaries. He was succeeded by Loncomilla, who in the following year shared the fate of his predecessor. Guenucolquin became leader and was slain in an engagement with a Spanish force of six hundred men; Curanteo once routed the enemy, but was killed in a subsequent battle; Curimilla was also killed—a sure fatality seemed to attend the axe of Araucanian leadership.

In 1638 a Dutch squadron, consisting of four ships of war, made a descent upon the Chilean coast, but the vessels were scattered by a storm. The crews sought assistance from the natives of the islands of Mocha and Talca, but were attacked and killed, as the Indians were suspicious of the intentions of all Europeans. In a second attempt five years afterward the Marquis of Mancura sailed into Valdivia harbor with ten warships to give battle to the Dutch, but the invaders had gone; he then fortified the harbor. An

English squadron under Sir James Narborough, made at one time a similar attempt but failed.

The Marquis of Baides arrived in Chile in 1640, and acting under instructions, at once sought to bring about a treaty of peace with the invincible Indians. Lincopichion had succeeded Curimilla, and with him the governor sought a personal interview in which terms of a treaty were discussed and agreed upon by the commanders. They fixed upon the 6th of January following for a ratification of the treaty, the place designated being the village of Quillin.

At the time agreed upon the governor appeared at Quillin escorted by more than ten thousand persons; the Araucanian general appeared at the head of the toquis and ulmenes of his nation and was followed by a large body of attendants. A llama was killed, blood sprinkled, speeches made and the treaty ratified, being similar in its terms to the one which had been sanctioned by King Philip some years before, but with the additional stipulation that the Araucanians should not permit the troops of a foreign nation to land upon their coast, nor furnish supplies to enemies of the Spaniards. Notwithstanding specious arguments and all manner of obstructions interposed against the arrangement by interested schemers of both nations, who were desirous of having hostilities kept up, the treaty was ratified and an end put to the desolating war, which had continued with few interruptions for nearly a century.

The Araucanians for some time adhered to the treaty. In 1643 they refused to join the Dutch, or to furnish them with provisions, when they made a second unsuccessful attempt to conquer Chile by building forts in the harbor of Valdivia, where they expected to receive aid from the natives and to proceed against the

Spanish provinces. They observed the terms of the treaty faithfully during the six years of the Marquis of Baides' government, and during that of his successors in office, Don Martin de Muxica and Alonzo de Cordova y Figueroa. Don Antonio de Acuña y Cabrera succeeded to the government, and during his administration the war between the Spaniards and Araucanians broke out afresh, but of its causes we have little information.

In 1655 there was a renewal of the war, caused principally by the cupidity and stupidity of the *maestre de campo* and the sergeant-major, relatives of the governor, who commanded the army. The people of Concepcion were so incensed that the timid governor fled to Santiago to escape their fury. Clentaru was elected toqui and defeated the Spanish army under the sergeant-major. He also captured the forts of Arauco, Colcura, San Pedro, Talcamavida and San Rosendo, which the Spaniards had built and repaired; he crossed the Biobio, defeated the governor at Yumbel, destroyed several forts and burned Chillan. The war lasted during a period of ten years, Pedro Portale Casanate, Diego Gonzales Montero, Angel de Pereda, Francisco de Menesés being the governors.

Generally speaking, the Araucanian leaders—Clentaru, and the mestizo, Alejo—seem to have been usually successful in military exploits, so that in 1665 the Spaniards were satisfied to conclude another treaty of peace with the Indians, similar in its terms to the treaty made at the time of Baides in 1640, which treaty was afterward kept by both nations until 1722. Menesés was as unfortunate as Rivera before him had been, in marrying without the royal decree. He married the daughter of the Marquis de la Pica, in which affair he was seriously opposed by the Royal Audience,

as the alliance was against the king's interests. To settle the matter the king sent out the Marquis of Navamorquende, who sent Menesés to Peru and installed himself in his place.

From 1670 to the end of the century the captains-general were Montero (second time), Juan Henriquez, Don José de Garro, and Don Tomás Martin de Poveda. Nothing of importance occurred during this period. Nor, for that matter, is there much of importance to record during the governments of Francisco Ibanez de Peralta, Juan Andrés de Ustariz and José de Santiago Concha, to the year 1717. Ibanez was banished to Peru for taking sides in the war of the succession against the House of Bourbon. The islanders of Chiloé once revolted, but were subdued by Don Pedro Molina, who was sent against them.

From 1707 to 1717, during the wars of the succession, the French blockaded all the Chilean ports and took possession of the commerce of the nation. It is said they took from the country large sums of gold and silver, and that many of them settled there permanently when the fleet was withdrawn. Father Feuillé, the French naturalist, made extensive botanical and other scientific investigations during a three years' residence in the country, at the time the French were occupying the ports.

At the close of the seventeenth century, Chile was behind other South American countries in material advancement. The population was scattered and the only towns of any importance were Santiago, the capital, Concepcion, Chillan, La Serena, Castro and Valdivia. These were little more than villages separated by wide stretches of almost uninhabited country. In Valparaiso there were only a few small warehouses and a row of poor buildings; Santiago had a popu-

lation of about 8,000 Spaniards, Indians, mestizos and negroes. The houses were poorly constructed, all of one height, and many of them covered with straw. There were a few temples, convents and monasteries which ministered to the spiritual wants of the sparse population.

The first governors had been distinguished generals but inferior statesmen. Preoccupied with the Araucanian wars, they passed their time in Concepcion and on the frontiers, neglecting the capital and the best interests of the people. They sought military glory and private gain and made Chile a stepping-stone to wealth, titles and viceroyalties.

CHAPTER X

THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

At the opening of the eighteenth century, political despotism and religious intolerance had prostrated the energies of Spain, whose cavaliers were once so chivalrous and daring. The American colonies had come to serve the purposes of the kings principally in enabling them to sustain destructive religious wars against the English, the Germans and the Hollanders. Considering herself rich in the exhaustless mineral wealth of her American colonies, Spain discarded peaceful and useful labor and in the end encountered poverty, for her gold went to enrich the more industrious stranger.*

Charles II. was the last of the kings of the Austrian dynasty: he died in 1700, leaving no lawful successor. An archduke of Austria and a prince of France disputing the Spanish throne, the war which followed, devastating and pitiless, resulted at length in placing the grandson of the powerful Louis XIV. of France upon the throne of Spain, with the title of Philip V.

The first kings of this new Bourbon dynasty brought to the administration of the affairs of the kingdom, ideas more liberal and tolerant than those held by

* "Sus fábricas fueron desapareciendo, i su oro paso á enriquecer la industria estranjera que los surtio de mercaderiás."—GASPAR TORO.

their predecessors. They undertook important reforms and one of these brought about good results, in fact, went far to better the condition of prostrate Spain and her American colonies. The king permitted his French compatriots to open trade in America—with Chile by way of Cape Horn. French manufactures were introduced directly into Chile, whose ports had hitherto been closed against her. This gave a new impetus to commerce and increased the receipts of the custom-house, which before had been nominal. At the same time a new activity was given to immigration, both of French and Spanish. During the first years of the seventeenth century there was a heavy emigration from Aragon and the Basque provinces of Spain. These people were hardy and industrious classes of settlers and soon became thrifty farmers and merchants. Perhaps to this fact, more than to any other, is due the later energy and progress of Chile. Instead of hunting for chimerical Eldorados these settlers set about developing the resources of the country.

In 1722 the Araucanians became enraged over the conduct of a class calling themselves Captains of the Friends, (*Capitanos del Amigos*), whose pretended business seems to have been the guarding of the missionaries. This organization sought to exercise certain surveillance and authority over the natives, a course of conduct that was highly distasteful to them. They therefore resented it and chose a war toqui, Vilumilla, and took up arms.

The new commander held very ambitious views; he not only desired to obtain justice for his race, but also to expel the Spaniards from Chile. He actually sent emissaries to all the Indians throughout Chile, and requested them to take up arms at a given signal—the building of fires on the tops of the highest mountains.

The fires were kindled on March 9th, 1723, but the Indians did not all respond, those north of the Biobio being timid and fearful of the issue.

Vilumilla requested the missionaries to quit the Araucanian territories; then, as soon as they had crossed the Biobio, he proceeded against the fort of Tucapel, which he captured. The fort of Arauco was also occupied, and that of Puren reduced to extremities. Gabriel Cano de Aponte had succeeded Concha; the new governor now marched against Vilumilla with an army of five thousand men. The Araucanian general offered battle, but the governor thought best to withdraw the garrison of Puren and retire. A succession of insignificant battles followed until peace was established at Negrete, where the order of Captains of Friends, so odious to the Araucanians, was abolished and the treaty of Quillin reaffirmed.

Cano ruled Chile satisfactorily for a period of fifteen years. Francisco Sanchez de la Barreda, Manuel de Salamanca and José de Manso followed Cano. Manso founded, in 1742, the cities of Copiapo, Aconcagua, Melipilla, Rancagua, San Fernando, Curico, Talca, Tutuben and Los Angeles; this was done under orders from the king to collect the inhabitants of the country in urban societies. The governor was at one time obliged to forego his labors in city building to attend to the defence of the coast which was threatened by an English squadron sent out by Lord Anson. The usual Cape Horn tempest, however, caused the English to repair to the island of Juan Fernandez.

Chile at this time had become a stepping-stone to promotion, so that the office of governor, or captain-general, was much sought after; from captain-general of Chile the splendid office of viceroy of Peru often followed. This was true of Don José de Manso; as a re-

ward for his services in Chile he was made viceroy of Peru and given the title, *Conde de Superunda.*

Succeeding Manso, were Francisco de Obando and Domingo Ortiz de Rosas, who continued the plan of founding cities and gathering the population of Chile in them. Rosas founded Huasco, Choapo, Petorca, Ligua, Curico, Quirihue and Coelemu. For this service the king recompensed him with the title of *Conde de Poblaciones*—Count of Populations. He also undertook to people the island of Juan Fernandez.

By authority of his king, Philip V., Rosas established a university in Santiago, which he called the University of San Felipe, after the king. This was in the year 1747. The first rector of the institution was Tomás de Azua. The college was regular and gave courses with the degrees of Bachelor and Master. A theatre was attached to it in which amateur plays were rendered. The arts, philosophy, and theology were taught, all in bad Latin; medicine and law were taught in a superficial manner. One result of founding the college, however, was to take some of the educational facilities out of the hands of the monks and Jesuits, who had long been almost the sole instructors of the Chilean youth.

Two years after the university of San Felipe had been founded, Rosas established a mint in Santiago, also by authority of the king, and began the work of coining money, both of gold and of silver; from that time the monetary circulation became much more active.

It was during Rosas' administration that the third great earthquake occurred, 1751, which destroyed Concepcion by a wave of the sea and caused much destruction in Santiago and outlying villages, and in the new cities. Concepcion was reëstablished on a new site about two leagues from the sea. An earthquake dur-

ing the rule of Cano had done much damage to Santiago and other places. Some years later, during the time that the Marquis of Aviles was governor, an earthquake caused considerable damage in the cities of Copiapo, Huasco and Coquimbo. Other less severe shocks were felt frequently but the damage done was comparatively trifling.

The captain-general succeeding Rosas, Don Manuel Amat, continued the policy of founding cities, and established Santa Barbara, Talcamavida and Hualqui.

Don Manuel de Amat y Junient was a military genius of considerable repute. The robbers and other criminals of the country had reasons for fearing and hating him. He persecuted them, as it were, with a rod of iron, and filled the jails with them. He organized patrols of dragoons and vigilance committees, and created a militia to defend the coasts against the ravages of pirates. He also organized civilians into military bodies and these afterward, in the war of the revolution, did much good service. When Amat was promoted to the viceroyalty of Peru, the corregidor in Santiago, Luis de Zañartu, continued to prosecute these rigorous measures against criminals, and, having filled the jails, put them to work constructing a stone bridge over the Mapocho.

The next captain-general, Don Antonio de Guill y Gonzaga (Berroeta having acted a short time provisionally), undertook to gather the Araucanian Indians into cities. The outcome of this chimerical scheme was a renewal of the war, as the Indians proceeded to elect a toqui and prepare for hostilities in case the Spaniards should persist in their course. Curignancu was elected toqui: two or three cities were begun, but the Indians demanded tools with which to work, offered all manner of excuses for the purpose of delaying the enterprise,

and finally, these efforts failing to dissuade the Spaniards from the undertaking, they slew their superintendents and besieged the quartermaster in his camp. The governor now formed an alliance with the Pehuenches, but Curignancu suddenly fell upon them, routed them in a battle and took prisoner their leader, Coliguna, whom he put to death.

Failing to accomplish his undertaking, Gonzaga died, and the government fell a short time to Juan de Balmaseda; he was succeeded by Don Francisco Xavier de Morales. The war with the Araucanians was continued. Curignancu and his vice-toqui, Leviantu, constantly ravaged the country and defeated the Spaniards on more than one occasion.

In 1773, after the war had cost the Spaniards more than a million and a half of dollars, a treaty was again entered into; by this the treaties of Quillin and Negrete were reaffirmed, and a further request by Curignancu was granted, which stipulation was, that henceforth the Araucanians should be permitted to keep a minister in Santiago, like other independent nations.

Don Agustin de Jáuregui succeeded Morales for a time, (1773 to 1780), then accepted the more important office of viceroy of Peru and was followed by Ambrosio de Benavides, a cavalier of the Royal Order of Charles III. Tomás Alvarez de Acevedo governed a short time.

During the governorship of Jáuregui, 1776, Charles III. promulgated a decree creating the viceroyalty of La Plata at Buenos Ayres. With this he incorporated the territory of Cujo, which had been for two centuries a part of the territory of Chile.

Two years after this, in 1778, the same king threw open the ports of Spain to the colonies, permitted freedom of commerce with the French, which had been prohibited, and suppressed the odious privileges of the

Cadiz commercial monopoly, which had long enjoyed almost exclusive trade with South America.

In 1780 occurred a conspiracy. An increase in the amount of contributions levied and certain reforms of the religious orders, caused much discontent and public excitement. There were in the capital two Frenchmen, who attempted to take advantage of the popular agitation to stir up a revolution, hoping to establish in Chile an independent republic. Their names were Antony Gramuset and Antony Berney. But Chile was not yet prepared for a revolution, or for republican principles, and the Frenchmen were apprehended and sent to Peru, where they languished in prison for a time before being sent to Spain. Berney perished in a shipwreck, Gramuset died in a Cadiz prison. The ideas they advanced found sympathizers and they had some adherents of note. Don José Antonio de Rojas was one of these. He was a wealthy and well educated Chilean of good family. He had introduced revolutionary books and revolutionary ideas into the country furtively, and was for that reason held by many to be a wizard.

Governor Benavides suffered so much from constant bad health during his term in office, that it was thought almost miraculous that he could accomplish the amount of work he did before his death, which occurred on the 28th of April, 1787. During his administration, from 1781 to 1787, Chile was well governed.

Following the death of Benavides, occurred a provisional government, or *superintendencia* by Don Tomás Alvarez de Acevedo, who received his papers from the viceroy of Peru and continued his administration one year from the 30th day of April, 1787. On the 26th of May, 1788, he delivered his office to Ambrosio

O'Higgins, who had been appointed captain-general by the court of Spain.

The Spaniards sought to firmly establish themselves in that part of Chile north of the Biobio. This territory had been divided into thirteen provinces, and was governed by an appointee, usually a lieutenant-general, combining as we have seen, after the second establishment of the Royal Audience, the titles of president, governor and captain-general. The captain-general resided at Santiago and was directly responsible to the court of Spain, save in the event of war, when, in certain matters he was subject to the viceroy of Peru. During Jáuregui's administration the province of Maule was subdivided, the river serving as the boundary between the two new states. The southern part was named Cauquenes and its capital was the city of that name. Afterward the province was still further divided, and the new province Curico formed in the north of it.

Besides the provinces above mentioned, the Spaniards held of Valdivia's early conquest, the fortress of Valdivia, the Archipelago of Chiloé and the island of Juan Fernandez. There were four subordinate governors of Chiloé, Valdivia, Valparaiso and Juan Fernandez, under the captain-general. The latter, beside his general office, commanded the army, and had the supreme administration of justice, presiding over the highest tribunals at the capital, whose jurisdiction extended to all the provinces. They were the Tribunal of Audience, or royal senate, that of finance and that of commerce, all presided over by judges receiving large salaries. The captain-general also had under him the three principal officers of Chile, the quartermaster, the sergeant-major and the commissary. The provinces were governed by prefects, or corregidors, called also subdelegates, who were usually appointed

by the captain-general, owing to the great distance of the country from Spain. The subdelegates had jurisdiction over civil and military affairs and their pay depended upon fees; which fact led to many abuses in office. In Peru the hated office had been abolished in 1784, after the uprising headed by Tupac Amaru in 1781, which uprising was not fully suppressed until 1783. This office, together with the old Spanish *repartimientos* and forced labor, were the main causes of that rebellion. There were also in Chile municipal magistracies, called *cabildos*, composed of several regidores. These were appointed for life. A standard-bearer, a procurator, a judge, called the Provincial Alcalde, a high-sheriff (*Alguazil*), two consuls (*Alcaldes*) chosen annually from the *cabildos*, were also among the officers.

At this time the inhabitants were divided into regiments consisting of 15,856 militia troops in Santiago and Concepcion, 10,218 in the first, 5,688 in the second place. These corps were established by Jáuregui. Besides this militia there was a force of regular troops, numbering 1,976 men.

In this brief review of Chile as it appeared at the close of the eighteenth century, we may mention slavery. Negroes had been introduced by contraband means and were subjected to a mild form of servitude. They were employed chiefly as domestics, and could ransom themselves by paying their very humane masters. Those who were ill-treated could demand letters of sale and seek a purchaser. Slavery did not thrive in Chile, and almost the first act of the patriots when forming a government for themselves was to liberate the slaves. The peasantry, a healthy, robust race, gay and fond of games, enjoyed considerable liberty, and this class was not subjected to the same harsh indignities as the Indians and peons of Peru. They dressed

in the Araucanian style, and on the frontiers, spoke both the Indian and the Spanish languages. In the Chilean cities, Lima prescribed the fashions for the women and France for the men; but the country people adhered to primitive customs and manner of dress.

At the close of the last century, the Chilean people of wealth were fond of display. San Martin, when he had styled himself the Protector of Peru, imitated all the ways of the European courts, though professing to found a republic; so also the wealthy families of Chile made a splendid display in dress, servants, coaches and titles. A few of the leading citizens obtained high titles in Spain—Don Fernando Irrazabal was made Marquis of Valparaiso, Don Fermin Caravajal, became Duke of San Carlos, Don Juan Covarrubias was given the title of Marquis of Covarrubias, Don Ambrosio O' Higgins, formerly of Ireland, became Marquis of Osorno and Baron of Ballenar. The South American republics had their Virginia blue-bloods and imitated Spain as the United States imitated England in the pre-revolutionary days.

In 1766 smallpox had been introduced into the province of Maule, and cow's milk was resorted to as a remedy. This disease, as we have seen, had once nearly depopulated the Araucanian territories. If we may credit legendary accounts the plague had several times, in preceding centuries, spread its terrible ravages among the Inca nations at Cuzco, so that it may have been known on the Pacific coast before the advent of the Spaniards. It was not until the time of Governor Guzman, in the first part of the nineteenth century, that vaccination was introduced into Chile by Doctor Grasales.

At this time Chile was divided into two dioceses, Santiago and Concepcion. Valdivia had first intro-

duced monks of the Order of Mercy when he arrived and began his settlements. The Dominicans and Franciscans came in 1553, the Augustins in 1595, the Hospitallers of St. John of God in 1615, the Jesuits with Loyola in 1593, Loyola being himself a nephew of the founder of the order. All of these orders flourished at the beginning of the present century, but resistance was made by the Chileans to the introduction of new orders, as the church tithes were oppressive in the extreme.

In 1767 there had even occurred an order expelling the Jesuits. This order, the Company of Jesus, had acquired great riches in Chile by donations from the devout colonists. They had innumerable houses, haciendas, mills, vineyards, herds and slaves, and exercised great power and influence. In consequence of their secret interference in politics, they had been about that time expelled from Spain, Portugal, France and other European countries. In one night their houses in Chile were occupied and about four hundred of them expelled from the country and sent to Italy. The company had produced several eminent names in Chile, Olivares, Lacunza and Juan Ignacio Molina, the celebrated historian who wrote the "Historia Civil y Natural de Chile", also the historians Ovalle and Rosales. At the time of their expulsion, the property of the Jesuits was confiscated for the use of the state.

The population of Chile at this time in the Spanish provinces was probably not far from five hundred thousand souls. There were a few French, English, and Italian settlers, but for the most part, the population consisted of Spaniards and Spanish-Indian descendants. The internal commerce was of little importance, but began to increase about this time by the employment of coast vessels in the transportation of

merchandise, where before there had been only the overland traffic upon mules. Ships were built for external commerce, the principal part of which was controlled by the monopolies of Spain and Peru; about twelve or thirteen thousand tons capacity in shipping was now employed in the trade.

Don Ambrosio Higgins (or O' Higgins, as he afterward styled himself) was appointed captain-general of Chile on November 21st, 1787, and proved himself to be one of the best of the long line of Spanish governors. O' Higgins's career had been romantic enough. He was born near the castle of Dangan, Ireland, and for a time acted as errand boy for Lady Bective. He was sent to Cadiz to be educated by a priest, his uncle, and in time wandered away to South America, not being greatly pleased with scholastic study and the prospect of taking orders. For a time he lived in Peru, then went to Chile where he obtained engineering work in the army. He lived several years in Santiago and amassed a fortune. He was sent on an expedition against the Araucanians, and, having distinguished himself, was given the command of the cavalry and made a brigadier general. He soon gained the love and esteem of the Chileans, for he was brave, intelligent and good-natured. He was made quartermaster and given the intendencia of Concepcion. There O'Higgins entertained the celebrated La Perouse in such a highly gratifying manner that the latter warmly commended him to his sovereign, the king of France. The French court, impressed with young O'Higgins's abilities, asked the Spanish court for his promotion. Thereupon he was made captain-general of Chile and on September the 19th, 1789, was further honored by appointment as field-marshal of the royal armies. He discharged the duties of his office with vigilance, dispensed

justice rationally, encouraged agriculture, built cities, opened mines, promoted commerce and the fisheries, ameliorated the condition of the laboring classes, suppressed the Spanish fiefs, or *encomiendas*, in 1791 projected the Tajamar, or dike, at Santiago, which protects the city from the inundations of the Mapocho, and made an excellent road from Valparaiso to Santiago, carrying it over the tops of the high mountains. He was made a baron, a marquis, and finally, in 1796, was appointed viceroy of Peru. His natural son, Bernardo, was a leading character in the Chilean revolution a few years subsequent to this time.

Following the O'Higgins administration, the *rejente* of the Royal Audience was acting governor of Chile for a period of four months. This person was Don José de Rezabal, and he employed the time during his short lease of power in the general improvement of the capital, and in constructing a beautiful boulevard, or *paseo*.

Rezabal was succeeded by General Gabriel de Aviles, who, as inspector-general of the troops of Peru passed to the office of captain-general of Chile, September 18th, 1796. During this year, 1796, news was received in Chile of the treaty of peace between Spain and France, which treaty gave rise to much dissatisfaction in the Spanish colonies. By the terms of the treaty Spain gave the most fertile portions of the island of Santo Domingo in exchange for certain plazas of the peninsula, San Sebastian in Guipuzcoa, and Figueras in Catalonia, which places had been occupied by the French troops in the war of the republic and were still held by them. This act on the part of the mother country opened the eyes of the colonies to the fact that her interest in them was of the most sordid and mercenary kind. The treaty led to a war with England, October 8th, 1796, and this war on the part of the mother

country being prolonged and sanguinary, caused much damage to Chilean commerce, as well as to that of the other Spanish-American provinces. Except for this war, Chile was at peace with all the world and under Aviles made progress, slowly but surely.

The captain-general labored assiduously for the advancement of the country. He was a very devout man and spent a considerable part of his time in his devotions, so that it was said of him that he received inspiration from above.* He, however, found his post a most difficult one to fill; there were unceasing bickerings and complainings, and these at length caused him to turn over his office to Pino, March 15th, 1799, and to accept without regrets, the more important office of the vice-royalty of Buenos Ayres, where he remained until June 1801, when he passed to the vice-royalty of Peru.

The Marquis of Aviles' successor in office, the mariscal de campo, Don Joaquin del Pino, came to Chile by way of Mendoza and repaired immediately to the always ready country house of the governors (*á la siempre preparada casa de campo*), from whence, on the 31st of January 1800, he was conducted by a deputation of the magistrates (*Ayuntamiento*) to the capital and there received, in the imaginary gate of the city, as governor, and in the Royal Audience chamber as president.†

Pino found the most pressing matter demanding his executive attention to be the troublesome Maypo and Mapocho rivers, which now as of old continued to rise above their banks and to flood the city and country. His administration was taken up in discussing ways and means of constructing a canal to divert the

* "Parecia recibir inspiraciones de arriba en sus meditaciones, y sus obras correspondian á sus hábitos cristianos,"—CLAUDIO GAY.

† Claudio Gay.

waters from the city. A plan was formulated to turn the waters in this manner. Pino's successor in office, however, disregarded his plans and appointed a commission to make a new survey for a route higher up than those plans called for. The commission appointed to this work continued to act for the space of five years, accomplishing in that time very little, but bringing Guzman's administration into rather bad odor on that particular account.

Beside canvassing the canal project, Pino's administration did little else than discuss the ways and means and propriety of making Spain a present, a present which the king had solicited by way of pecuniary assistance. The royal exchequer being depleted, it had been suggested to the colonies that financial aid would be acceptable, nay, necessary.

On the 18th of March, 1801, Pino received the appointment as viceroy of Buenos Ayres, and on the 30th set out for that city. Just at that moment the Royal Audience happened to be without a head to assume the governorship provisionally, as was customary, the chief (*decano*) being in La Paz. The office was, therefore, somewhat irregularly given to the *subdecano* of the Tribunal, Don José de Santiago Concha, who was recognized as captain-general and president of the Royal Audience provisionally. On the 31st of December the *decano* himself arrived, Don Francisco Todeo Diaz de Medina y Collado, and on the same day assumed command of the government and the presidency of the Royal Audience. But he only exercised the duties of his office for a period of one month, at the end of which time the new captain-general, Don Luis Muñoz de Guzman, arrived from Peru and made his entrance into the capital (January 30th, 1802). Guzman had been president of Quito and from that position was now advanced to

the more important post of captain-general of Chile and president of the Royal Audience, into which offices he was inducted with the usual ceremonies. He made a fairly good governor, and, as we have noted above, gave a new impulse to the construction of the ancient Mapocho canal, although there were some scandals connected with it, and erected many public buildings in Santiago under the direction of the celebated Roman architect, Joaquin Toesca.

We may refer here to the fact that the residents of the cities had for some time been constructing two-story houses, perceiving that they withstood earthquake shocks as well as the old single-storied buildings. They also used brick and stone instead of sun-dried clay, and thus the Chilean cities began to have a much improved appearance. Guzman restored the ancient palace in the plaza, built a new custom-house and finished the work upon the Moneda, or government building. Barracks also were constructed for dragoons and a hospital for orphans, the latter having been first founded by Don Juan Nic-Aguirre, and endowed by the king. A cathedral also had been built at the royal expense. Concerning this building the story is told that two English architects had been engaged upon the work. Their wages being too small to satisfy them, they quit. Two Indian employees took their places and superintended the successful completion of the work.

As to the canal, which occupied so much of Guzman's attention, there was need of something of the kind, for Santiago had long been subjected to inundations from the river, and these sometimes caused immense damage. Dikes had been at different times constructed, O'Higgins having done much in this way to protect the city. But these were not always sufficient to turn the floods. During the colonial period the absence of

rains often produced great distress and caused the ruinous destruction of crops and stock. Against these droughts the people employed no other means to protect themselves than public supplications to the saints to send rain.* But on other occasions the skies opened their floodgates and prolonged and heavy rainfalls caused terrible inundations. In 1783 occurred a great flood, called "*avenida grande*," which swept away the dikes, or *tajamares*, along the Mapocho for several squares and caused immense damage in the capital.

Guzman died, February 11th, 1808. In the autumn following, his office was conferred upon Francisco Antonio Carrasco. But this brings us to the period of the revolution.

Recapitulating, a list is herewith added of the captains-general and provisional governors of Chile during the colonial period.

Pedro de Valdivia,
Francisco de Villagran,
Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza,
Roderigo de Quiroga,
Villagran, a second time,
Pedro de Villagran,
Quiroga, second time,
Martin Ruiz de Gamboa,
Melchor Bravo de Saravia,
Quiroga, third time,
Gamboa, second time,
Alonzo de Sotomayor,
Martin Oñez de Loyola,
Pedro de Viscarra,
Francisco de Quiñones,
Alonzo García Ramon,
Alonzo de Rivera,
Ramon, a second time,
Luis Merlo de la Fuente,
Juan de Xara Quemada,
Rivera, a second time,
Fernando Talaveranno,
Lopez Ulloa y Lemus,
Cristoval de la Cerda.
Pedro Sorez de Ulloa,
Francisco de Alva y Noruena,
Luis Fernandez de Cordova y Arce,
Francisco Laso de la Vega,
Francisco de Zuñiga, (Marquis de Baides),
Martin de Múxica,
Alonzo de Cordova y Figueroa,
Antonio de Acuña y Cabrera,
Pedro Portale Casanate,
Diego Gonzales Montero,
Angel de Pereda,
Francisco de Menesés,

*Gaspar Toro.

Marquis de Navamorquende,
Montero, second time,
Juan de Henriquez,
José de Garro,
Tomás Martin de Póveda,
Francisco Ibanez de Peralta,
Juan Andres de Ustariz,
Don José de Santiago Concha,
Gabriel Cano de Aponte,
Francisco Sanchez de la Barreda,
Manuel de Salamanca,
José de Manso,
Francisco de Obando,
Domingo Ortiz de Rosas,
Manuel Amat y Junient,
Felix de Berroeta,
Antonio Guill y Gonzaga,
Juan de Balmaseda,
Javiér de Morales,
Agustin de Jáuregui,
Tomás Alvarez de Acevedo,
Ambrosio de Benavides,
Acevedo, second time,
Ambrosio O'Higgins,
José de Rezabal,
Gabriel de Aviles,
Joaquin del Pino,
José de Santiago Concha,
Francisco Diez de Medina y Collado,
Luis Muñoz de Guzman,
Francisco Antonio Carrasco.

PART II—THE REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

CHAPTER I

THE REVOLT OF SPAIN'S COLONIES

The French revolution of 1789 and the success of republicanism in North America were precursors of the revolt of Spain's colonies. The writings of Montesquieu, Voltaire, Rousseau, and others of that school had taken effect; France and the two Americas became republican. France, having applied the torch, for a time recoiled from the terrible effects of her fierce revolution and Bonaparte became emperor. In triumph he entered the capitals of the old world with his victorious armies, but England with her fleets he found invincible to his conquering arms.

Portugal was in the alliance with England, so against Portugal Napoleon desired to dispatch an army. His troops he wished to send through Spain, and permission was, therefore, obtained of Manuel Godoi, who stood high in the favor of the queen, Maria Louisa, and in reality governed Spain, rather than the king, Charles IV. At that time Prince Ferdinand, heir to the crown, was conspiring against Godoi, the queen's favorite who had been raised by her from an officer of the guards to the position of prime minister, and was in constant quarrels with his royal parents. It was at this time

that Napoleon concerted with Godoi and gained permission to enter Spain with his armies. It was a stratagem; instead of marching to Portugal, Napoleon advanced to Madrid.

It was now that Charles IV. abdicated in favor of his son, Ferdinand, the people having pronounced against Godoi and the court. But he was a fickle monarch and soon desired to resume his crown; that, Ferdinand would not permit him to do.

Napoleon professed a willingness to assist the royal household of Spain to an amicable settlement of their difficulties and for that purpose arranged a meeting in Bayonne. There Charles IV., Maria Louisa and Godoi appeared against Ferdinand VII. and recriminations followed. Napoleon had father and son renounce their rights and conferred the crown of Spain upon his brother, Joseph Bonaparte. Charles and Ferdinand were retained in France.

Indignant at this perfidy, and loyal to Ferdinand, the Spaniards organized *juntas de gobierno* in the provinces and a central junta in Seville to carry on the government provisionally. These the French dispersed, whereupon a "council of the regency" was formed in Cadiz with which was united the cortez and house of representatives. This regency organized an active resistance to the French and a war followed. The Spaniards won a victory at Bailen, but the French, notwithstanding that, continued to occupy the peninsula until the downfall of Napoleon, when Ferdinand recovered his crown.

This outline of the history of Spain at the time throws light upon the revolt of her American colonies. The junta of Seville and the regency of Cadiz sought to exercise authority over them. This was resented. The colonies would neither recognize Joseph Bona-

parte nor the Spanish juntas as having authority over them, but wished to govern themselves through the medium of juntas of their own creating, during the captivity of the king. This was obnoxious to the Spanish officials in the new world and was looked upon as treasonable by the junta of Seville and the Cadiz regency. The Creoles, or American born subjects of Spanish descent, established juntas, or governing boards composed of three or more leading citizens, and began the reform of institutions and abuses. The Spanish party resisted and war followed. By the time Ferdinand VII. regained his crown the revolution had taken from him his American colonies. Perhaps the Holy Alliance, which the monarchs of the old world formed upon the fall of Napoleon, to crush out republicanism and restore absolutism, would have aided Spain in her contest with her provinces had not the United States announced its famous Monroe doctrine about that time, declaring that "America was for Americans." It was a significant warning, sufficiently emphasized by Yorktown in North America and Ayacucho in South America, to be respectfully heeded.

The abuses which led to the revolt of Spain's South American colonies, and, in the end, to their declaration of independence, were long endured. These abuses can be summed up in the words, oppression, extortion and corruption. Such men as Morillo, Morales, Tristan, Marco and Osorio brought on the final crisis. Their names are written in blood and their memories held in execration. But these men are only exaggerated examples of the Spanish viceroys and governors from Pizarro to Lascerna. The greed and corruption of the civil and military men sent out by Spain to govern the natives, with few exceptions, from the time of the conquest to the revolution, tended to alienate

the natives and American born Spanish people from the mother country. They practiced horrible cruelties upon the Indians, enslaving them upon their fiefs, and compelling them to work and perish in the mines. The Spanish system of governing was tyrannical in the extreme, and gave the people few of the benefits of government, of their labor and of the natural productions of the countries; the right of cultivation of grapes, olives and tobacco was denied them; they were compelled to buy their wines, oils and tobacco from monopolies promoted by the mother country; enormous duties were levied upon all imported manufactured goods, and these importations were confined to a monopoly of Cadiz merchants who sent out only a few vessels each year. These goods the natives were compelled to purchase at extortionate prices by the Spanish governors, who often shared in the profits. The financial system of the colonies was based upon a perfect monopoly and exclusion in favor of Spain, and the revenues were raised in a corrupt and tyrannical manner. The *estanco* was a monopoly which the government claimed for itself exclusively; it was a monopoly of the growth and sale of tobacco, and sale of foreign wines and spirits. Of these, tobacco yielded an immense profit. Guayaquil was the principal place for the cultivation of the plant; at Lima, the king had extensive central warehouses. No tobacco was suffered to grow in Chile; every person retailing the article must pay a license and even then could only purchase from the government depots, which were established in the different towns. In the year 1808, the royal revenues from tobacco amounted to $183,278, and it is probable that the amount would have reached $300,000, had it not been for official peculations and depreciations in value.

Another burden the colonies endured under Spanish

rule was the system of tithes. By a special act of the papal authorities the king of Spain was given the church under his special care, and by him the tithes were claimed and collected. Nominally these were distributed in the following manner: one-fourth to archbishops and bishops, one-fourth to deacons and canons, one-fourth to curates, the remainder to the building of churches. In time corruption crept in; the king appropriated large sums to other purposes and cut down ecclesiastical salaries; the tithes were farmed out to individuals in large lots, and these again to smaller bidders, all seeking to make large profits from the purchases. This came at length to be a severe burden and imposition upon the peasantry, who had the tithes to pay.

Again, Spain had given the territories belonging to the natives to military favorites in immense grants. Between two hundred and three hundred held the lands of Chile in this manner, half the number probably, holding all the best estates. Pizarro and Valdivia had assigned estates to their followers, with the Indians upon them. The rich ruled the countries, and, forming a combination, regulated markets; in Peru, there was a system of enforced labor; everywhere military exactions were cruel and intolerable.

A system of checking, one official by another, was thought by the Spanish court to be sufficient to prevent frauds and peculations, but it was as bad as no regulation; officials winked at each other's robberies and connived at frauds to make themselves rich. Getting an appointment meant getting rich.

All these frauds and extortions going on year after year, from one administration to another, with no prospect of amelioration, at length aroused the passive natives to a sense of their wrongs. If the wealthy Span-

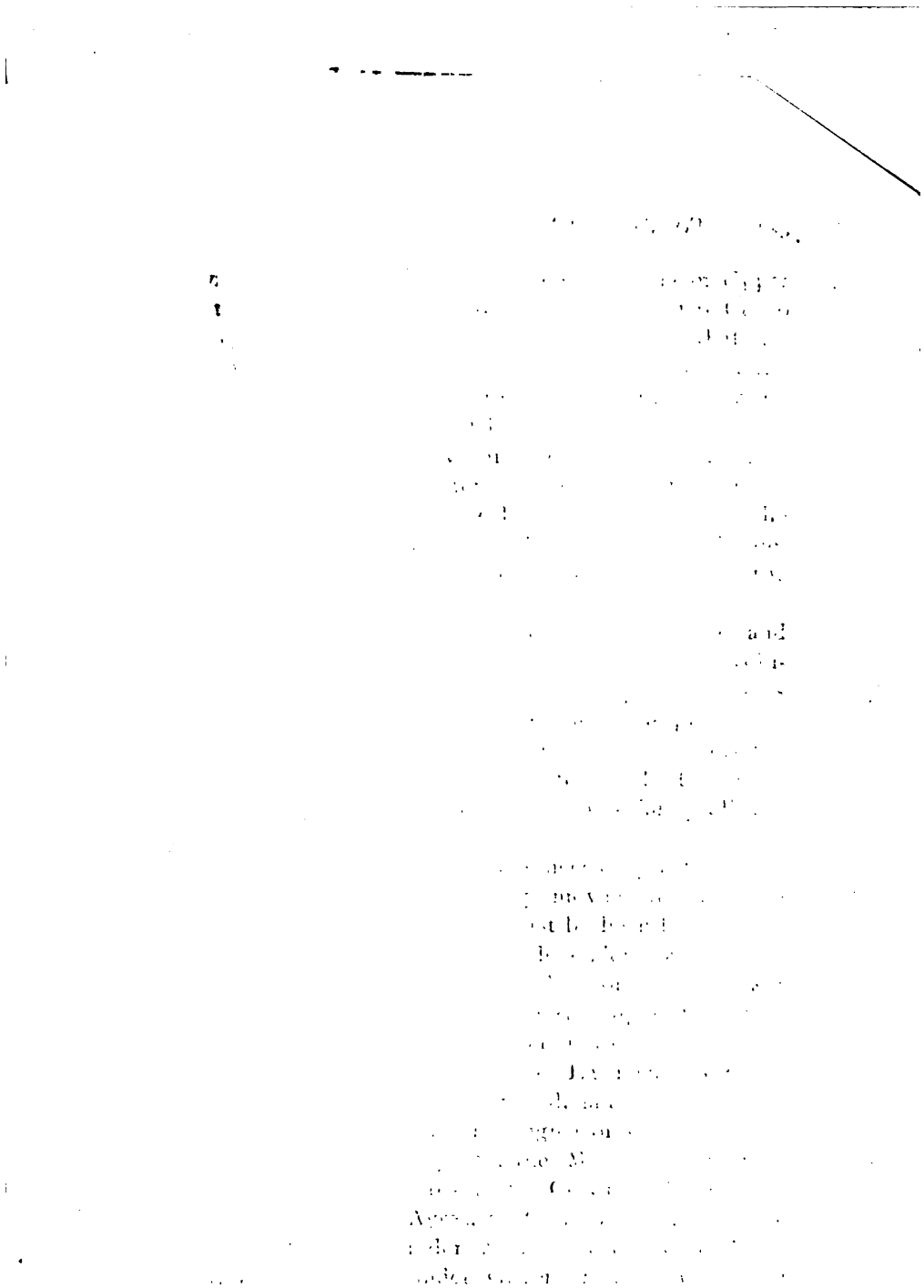
ish-Americans objected to the monopolies and the official arrogance of the mother country, the peasantry had far more to complain of in the burdens which fell most heavily upon them. A rebellion broke out in Peru, where the native classes were more oppressed than in Chile. An Inca descendent, José Gabriel Condorcanqui, called Tupac Amaru after his ancient progenitor, aroused the long suffering people to such zeal that they took up arms. He defeated the Spaniards at Sangarara, November 13th, 1780, and a few days afterward published the causes which had led to the revolt. He addressed letters to the bishops and other officers, proposing changes of the existing oppressive measures; his proposals were rejected with disdain.

In 1781, Condorcanqui was defeated at Checacupe, where with his family he was taken prisoner. Hideous cruelties were perpetrated upon the captives by the Spanish courts, and terrible was the vengeance wreaked upon the patriots; but their deaths did not end the revolt. It was not until the year 1783, that the rebellion was finally put down; but the death of Tupac Amaru was as a bugle blast resounding through Spanish-America. He had not died in vain, for an attempt was soon made to ward off the storm in Peru by a few measures of reform; such as abolishing the *repartimientos*, which held the natives to a species of serfdom, modifying the rules respecting forced labor, and doing away with the obnoxious office of corregidor. Tupac Amaru had accomplished more than had Don José Antequera fifty years before, in his attempts to reform abuses and establish a representative government in Paraguay.

Ubalde succeeded no better in Peru in 1805; he rekindled the fires of patriotism, but paid the penalty in death. In 1809, patriot forces were defeated at Huaqui; General Belgrano led a patriot army from Buenos

JOSE DE SAN MARTIN.

JOSE DE SAN MARTIN.



New Granada sought to destroy the junta at Quito, assisted by the viceroy of Peru. The patriots of La Paz were defeated, and the most terrible cruelties perpetrated upon them by the inhuman Goyeneche. The leaders of this early revolution, the Lauzas and Rodriquez, fell among the victims. The junta of Quito was also compelled to yield to the superior forces brought against it.

The revolution next broke out in Buenos Ayres and Caracas; in the former place the viceroy, Cisneros, was deposed and a junta formed, May 22d, 1810. Castelli's eloquence in the congress, which was assembled, confounded the royalists and paved the way for a revolution. Spain could do little to assist the royalists in the southern provinces, having as much as she could do in the north. Napoleon had at this time nearly completed her degradation; Ferdinand VII. and the royal family were under surveillance at Bayonne; the crown of Spain had been renounced by Ferdinand in favor of Joseph Bonaparte; the Council of the Indies had transferred the Spanish provinces to Bonaparte; Napoleon had, as we have seen, dispersed the central junta in Spain, May 1810, and had (1808) sent envoys to the provinces to notify them of the cessions of Bayonne; all this had brought confusion into the whole Spanish world. The patriots of Spanish-America deemed this a fitting time to throw off the intolerable yoke of the mother country. The royalists, looking to the loaves and fishes they had so long enjoyed, would have submitted to Bonaparte rather than have had no king.

After some successes, followed by reverses in Montevidio and the province of Salta, the patriots of Buenos Ayres finally made a treaty with the Brazilian Portuguese sent against them to Montevideo, the Spanish

colonies of La Plata being then at war with Brazil over boundaries. General Belgrano, after being driven from Salta, obtained a signal victory over Tristan, the royalist general of Peru in Tucuman, September 24th, 1812. Discussions in forming a congress followed, which retarded the independent movement; but a general meeting of the inhabitants of Buenos Ayres confided the government to a junta composed of three leading citizens, Pena, Passo and Jonte.

San Martin, in February, 1813, defeated the royalists at San Lorenzo, and on the 20th, Belgrano defeated the Peruvian forces assembled at Salta after a four hours battle, taking Tristan prisoner with all his army.

On the 31st of the following January, a congress (*constituyente*) assembled in Buenos Ayres, which declared the independence of the provinces of La Plata. The junta was changed to a supreme executive board, consisting of Pena, Perez and Jonte. Several liberal measures were adopted, including the emancipation of slaves.

But the independence of the La Plata provinces had not yet been satisfactorily achieved, owing principally to internal dissensions. A conspiracy was formed at Montevideo, instigated by royalist Spaniards of Buenos Ayres. A battle was fought at Vilcapugio, in which Belgrano was defeated by the royalist forces of Peru under Pezuela, and a little later the patriots were completely routed, so that the royalists of Peru were now masters of Upper Peru, Jujuy and Salta.

The situation of Buenos Ayres was now critical, threatened as it was on the side of Peru by a victorious royalist army and on the side of Montevideo by an opposing Portuguese-Brazilian army. The congress in December, therefore, decided to do away with the triangular junta and to vest the executive power in a

single individual, to be called the supreme-director, thinking that this might strengthen the central government. This office was conferred upon Posadas. Dissensions followed, and San Martin alone, by adopting a guerrilla mode of warfare in Upper Peru, prevented the armies of the viceroy of Peru from following up their victories. Trouble occurred between the supreme-director of Buenos Ayres and Artigas, a general of Montevideo. Montevideo was a province attached originally to the viceroyalty of Buenos Ayres. Brazil had tried to overrun and take it, but was driven out by Buenos Ayres and Montevideo acting together. Having won Montevideo for the patriot cause, General Artigas now claimed it as his own especial property, independent of Buenos Ayres, which disputed his dictatorial claims. This caused dissensions. Posadas resigned. Alvear, his successor, was compelled to resign. The municipality of Buenos Ayres established a new *junta de observacion*, whose chief duty was to watch the supreme director. Rondeau and Alvarez were subsequently elected directors but were soon removed. Balcarce succeeded, but remained not long in office and the government was placed finally in the hands of a committee. Then a new congress assembled in Tucuman and appointed Pueyredon supreme-director. This selection was more fortunate, and the friends of liberty thenceforth became more hopeful. On the 9th of July, 1816, congress met, announced the independence of the United Provinces of Buenos Ayres and published a manifesto. But dissension did not cease with this, and it became apparent that Buenos Ayres could not single-handed maintain her independence against intriguers, royalists, and continued attacks from the Portuguese province of Brazil, which was determined to extend the limits of Brazil to the river La Plata. They

must assist the patriots of the neighboring provinces of Chile and Peru to obtain their independence; and for this undertaking, San Martin was the leader most naturally selected.

While the struggle was going on in Buenos Ayres and in Chile and Peru, the northern provinces were in like manner fighting for their independence. Here the war was waged by the royalists with even greater persistence and ferocity than in the south. Venezuela was the first to form an independent junta and throw off the Spanish yoke; but there the royalists were, after a time, victorious, and terrible was their revenge. The people of Venezuela were proscribed, Caracas was turned into a vast prison. These brutal measures raised up young Marino with an army; cruelty and extortion had, indeed, previously raised up a patriot army in Venezuela for General Miranda. The liberation of Venezuela and Colombia was finally achieved by Marino and Bolivar. The battles of Pantano de Bargas and Boyaca, in July and August, 1819, and of Carabobo on June 24th, 1821, decided the fate of Spain in Colombia, after twelve years of savage warfare, hardly equalled in history for atrocious barbarity and cruelty.

The fate of Quito was decided favorably by Bolivar and Sucre in the battle of Pinchincha, June 22d, 1822. The battle of Ayacucho, December 9th, 1824, struck the fatal blow to the royalist power in Peru. Olaneta was defeated by General Sucre at Potosi in April, 1825, and the territories of Upper Peru, the theatre of the first and last acts in the bloody drama, were made free, and declared themselves the Republic of Bolivar. The battle of the Maypo, April 5th, 1818, decided the issue in Chile in favor of the patriots.

This rapid glance at the rise and progress of the

revolution in the neighboring colonies, is necessary to a better understanding of the same struggle in Chile, for the war had its origin in almost identical causes from Mexico to Buenos Ayres. And the causes were not different, though perhaps more aggravated, than the Stamp Act and the episodes which preceded the North American revolution. Only the Spanish colonies endured more, clung more steadfastly to the mother country, and longer sought redresses of their grievances, before resorting to arms. Their first efforts were not to obtain independence, but a redress of grievances; to establish juntas which should still acknowledge Ferdinand VII. as king; for they opposed the claims of the central junta of Spain but not of the king in exile. They first asked to be permitted to plant and cultivate whatever their soil and climate would produce; to open their ports to all nations; to have free trade among themselves and between the colonies and the mother country; to have all monopolies in favor of the king and the public treasuries suppressed; to have free working of quicksilver mines; to make Spanish Americans eligible equally with Spaniards to all appointments of rank and employment; to have consulting juntas formed in each capital to the intent that they might propose persons to fill vacancies. In Caracas, Buenos Ayres, Santiago, La Paz, and Quito, the first juntas made no declarations of independence; they sought only redress of wrongs.

The mere statement of the concessions asked is sufficient to show the intolerable burdens by which the colonies were oppressed. That the condition of affairs was not much improved after the revolution, is not to be wondered at. The colonies had been educated in a corrupt school; they were not prepared for republican institutions; they were rent by factional strifes;

they had no well organized political institutions. More than all, the young republics had large populations of half-civilized natives, of ignorant classes unfitted for exercising the privileges and responsibilities of the elective franchise.

They might not so soon have been led into a war for independence, if the subjugation of Spain by Bonaparte, and the unsettled condition of the government at home which followed, had not forced them to take steps for their own preservation and security. Their sympathies were with Spain and bitterly against France; they were still loyal to Ferdinand; they formed juntas in the name of Ferdinand, but they denied the authority of the regency of Cadiz and of the juntas of Spain; they offered assistance, and did afford aid in the war against France. Almost without complaint, they permitted Spain to impoverish the colonies to carry on her wars.

But these measures undertaken primarily for relief excited the bitterest antagonism of the governing body of Spain, of Spanish rulers, of the Cadiz monopolists, of Spaniards in America, and greatly increased also the jealousy and unfriendly feelings which had long existed between the native Spanish-Americans, or Creoles, and the European Spaniards in America. War was at first rather with the arrogant and corrupt viceroys and their Spanish sympathizers, than with Spain herself; the opposition was rather to the oppressive burdens and obnoxious officials than to the principle of dependence. But the measures immediately adopted in Spain to crush all efforts at amelioration, to put down what was called a rebellion, to throttle the first efforts to obtain "home rule" or a fair share in the government and offices, and these too by the most cruel and barbarous measures known in history, soon alienated the colonies from the mother country and filled

the Creole citizens with most intense feelings of hatred of their oppressors. Henceforth, it was war to the knife; no concessions from Spain would avail anything after the massacres and imprisonments in Caracas, in Quito and on the plateaux of Bolivia. England might mediate in vain, as she once essayed to do, to save Spain her colonies; the bridge had been crossed, blood must be avenged, independence achieved.

CHAPTER II

JUNTAS, DICTATORS AND DISSENSIONS—FIRST STAGES OF THE REVOLUTION

It was the leading citizens of Chile, rather than the native population, who were inspired by the news from Caracas, LaPaz, Quito and Buenos Ayres, the rumbling preceding the storm, to do something toward alleviating their own galling burdens. Their desire was not at first to separate themselves from Spain but rather to modify the laws sufficiently to emancipate themselves somewhat, to better the condition of the native inhabitants, and to form a junta, or governing board of leading citizens, which was to govern in trust for the unfortunate Ferdinand VII.

It was in August and September of 1809, that the news reached Chile by way of Buenos Ayres of the invasion of Spain by Bonaparte. Sentiment was generally in favor of the captive king and plans were discussed how best to carry on the government during his captivity. The *cabildo* of Santiago took upon itself the authority to call a national assembly, decreed imposts and undertook warlike preparations. Two political parties soon appeared; the Spanish party, the members being nicknamed *godos* or *sarracenos*, headed by the president and supported by the Royal Audience, the

clergy and government officers, who desired that the juntas of Spain should be recognized as authority; the patriots formed the other party and advocated the formation of a *junta nacional de gobierno*, or national governing body, to take charge of the government during the captivity of the king. This latter party was supported by the *cabildo* of Santiago and the leading Chilean families. These were called rebels by the royalist party, and feeling became intense.

In the month of May, in the year 1810, party feeling ran so high that the captain-general, Carrasco, arrested several leading patriots. There were frequent gatherings of the principal Chileans of revolutionary sentiments at the house of Don José Antonio de Rojas, the old revolutionist. One night Carrasco sent an armed body of troops to the house and arrested Rojas, also Don Juan Antonio Ovalle, proctor of the *cabildo*, and Don Bernardo Vera Pintado, an eminent lawyer. (Vera became afterward "the poet of the revolution.") This violence precipitated the revolution. The people of Santiago requested the release of the patriots, but they had been sent to Valparaiso to be taken thence to Peru. The clamor was so great that Carrasco at last yielded and dispatched an order for the patriots to return to the capital. But two of them had already embarked. Vera had remained in Valparaiso on account of sickness.

The agitation increased; news came that the patriots of Buenos Ayres had formed a *junta de gobierno* and this made the patriots of Chile bolder and more persistent in their demands. On the 22nd of June, the captain-general convened the inhabitants of the capital in the palace square to announce to them the orders of Ferdinand and enjoin obedience to the French regency, when a tumult arose and public indignation was

loudly expressed. Some of the members of the Audience advised Carrasco to resign, and this he, in effect, did on the 16th of July, 1810, in a *cabildo abierto*, or gathering of leading citizens. The junta filled his place by proclaiming as president, Mateo de Toro Zambrano, Conde de la Conquista (Count of the Conquest), an old military officer eighty years of age, who had acquired a large fortune in commercial pursuits, together with his title.

The Conde de la Conquista favored, to a certain extent, revolutionary measures and was elected to the presidency upon the condition that he would refuse to acknowledge the French regency and reserve Chile for Ferdinand VII. This was the more conservative view of the situation at the time, as there were even at this early day many who favored complete independence; such, for instance, as Rojas, Vera and Ovalle. Toro found himself in a trying position, as he was besieged both by patriots and *godos*. But eventually he leaned to the side of the patriots and joined with the other members associated with him in the junta in calling a congress, or another *cabildo abierto* similar to that which had deposed, or received the resignation of, Carrasco. It was a notable gathering composed of the *cabildo* of Santiago, civil and military officers, church dignitaries and four hundred leading citizens, the majority of whom belonged to the party of the patriots.

This assemblage received the resignation of Toro and created a national *junta de gobierno* to govern the country during the captivity of the king. The junta was to be composed of seven members and two secretaries. A congress composed of members from the different cities was to be convened. This day, the 18th of September, 1810, is regarded as the date of Chilean independence.

At the head of the junta was Doctor Juan Martinez de Rozas, a lawyer from Concepcion, and he was seconded in all his efforts by the two secretaries, both of them lawyers, whose names were Gasper Martin and José Gregorio Argomedo. Rozas had been assessor of the intendencia of Concepcion and afterward Carrasco's secretary. He had great influence in Concepcion, where he had started the revolution and opposed the bishop, Villodres, who was of the Spanish party. His arrival in Santiago was a gain for the patriots, and being sagacious and energetic, he was soon the acknowledged leader.

Under the leadership of Rozas the junta organized military bodies and opened the Chilean ports to free commerce with all nations. This quadrupled the customs receipts in a single year.

This junta, which was formed on September 18th, was composed of influential members, of whom Toro was placed at the head. The other members were Rayna, Rosales, Rozas and Carrera. This was established in the name of the king, in manner similar to the juntas which had been formed in the Argentine Republic and Venezuela, and even in Spain herself. The office of captain-general was abolished. It seems that even before this time four of the members associated with Carrasco in the Royal Audience were in favor of coöperating with the junta which had been formed at Buenos Ayres. Don Antonio Jonte, one of the most influential citizens of Buenos Ayres, had been dispatched to Chile by the junta of that province immediately upon its formation, to urge the taking of a similar radical step in the sister province. His mission, perhaps, hastened the crisis; when the junta was established, Jonte was continued there in the capacity of *charge d' affaires* from the new government of Buenos

Ayres, and in this capacity obtained three hundred Chilean troops for the assistance of La Plata.

The junta had called an assembly, or congress, fixing the elections for April, 1811, and prescribing the manner of representation. The regulations for the election of deputies prescribed a certain number of members for each municipality, which, not being according to population, gave rise afterward to much dissatisfaction. During the time of the elections, a body of troops was stationed in the square of Santiago to preserve order. This detachment was commanded by Don Tomas de Figueroa, a European Spaniard who had at first declared in favor of the revolution, yet had been intriguing against the junta; he now sought to use his situation to crush the revolution in its incipiency. A skirmish took place between the squad commanded by Figueroa and a party of patriots led by José Miguel Carrera, who was afterward head of the army and government. Fifty or sixty men were killed, but the patriots were successful. The affair inspired the revolutionary leaders; Figueroa was executed and the leading conspirators banished.

The first congress assembled on July 4th, 1811. Many reformatory measures were passed, including the abolition of slavery. The Royal Audience had been dissolved, a *camera de apolaciones* appointed in its stead, and the executive power vested in the junta. Congress decreed that curates should be paid from the public treasury, not by tithes; that restriction should be removed from commerce; that the ancient law regulating the appointment of officers in the municipalities (the *cabildos*) should be annulled, and that henceforth such offices should be filled by annual elections. Certain offices were abolished and salaries reduced. The powers of

the junta were prescribed, military schools and manufactories of firearms were established.

Such declarations was little short of revolutionary measures, and Spain could not have been expected to accede to them, even though the congress proceeded thus far in the name of the king. A revolutionary newspaper, we may add, appeared about this time in Santiago, edited by a friar named Camilo Henriquez.

Like the congress of Buenos Ayres, dissensions were rife. As we have stated, the representation was unequal. Santiago had elected twelve deputies, almost as many as all other provinces combined. The southern provinces were the wealthiest, the most enterprising, and possessed the most talent; the landholders of the middle provinces about Santiago outnumbered those of the south. The fact of Santiago having so large a preponderance in representation caused complaints to be made by the southern cities, and their representatives withdrew. In the meantime, parties began to form. One faction of the patriots wished to conduct reforms on the basis of ancient institutions, in other words, were conservative. Another faction wished to move with greater dispatch; here was a radical party which recognized Rozas as its leader. The conservatives controlled the cabildo. Then it was, as ever since, radicalism found its home in the south. The first radical leaders were always from Concepcion. Santiago was conservative, the southern provinces radical. When, therefore, the quarrel arose over representatives, Rozas, the radical leader, withdrew to Concepcion, perhaps to stir up a rebellion. The conservatives, or Santiago faction, thereupon dictated a change of the government and named a new junta composed of three of their own favorites.

To reduce the power of Spain as much as possible

steps were taken to replace Spanish officers with patriots. The three Carrera brothers, José Miguel, Juan and Luis, had this in charge, and executed the manœuvre skillfully. The Spanish officers were seized in their barracks and the troops gained over. Congress passed a decree to the effect that all Spaniards* who were not satisfied with the new movement, should quit the country within six months with all their property and effects.

The Carreras now sought to effect a revolution, by which means they hoped to place themselves at the head of the government. The junta of leading citizens which had been formed, one of whom was José Miguel Carrera, the eldest brother, became impatient of the restraint and control of congress, and considered the advisability of usurping the whole governing power. Don José Miguel Carrera was most active and ambitious, and anticipated the other members. He compelled congress, at the head of his troops, (but without the shedding of a drop of blood) to select a new junta, composed of himself, Portales, and La Cerda; this having been done he expelled seven of the Santiago deputies from congress and replaced them with radicals, and came into supreme power, September 4th, 1811.

At the same time Rozas effected a revolution in Concepcion and established there a radical junta; Valdivia soon after followed the example. This gave the radicals control of congress and of the country. Carrera was popular with the army and had effected his revolutionary measures by being assured of its support; he maintained his usurped office, relying upon the same power.

*By the term Spaniard, one born in Spain, Royalist, is understood; Americans of Spanish descent were called natives, patriots, creoles.

But the radicals soon began to conspire against themselves as they had previously against the conservatives. Carrera met with opposition and now obtained temporary support from the *godos*, whom he deceived into believing that he wished to restore the colonial régime. A new military commotion in the capital placed him again in full control and he immediately formed a new junta composed of himself, Gasper Marin and Doctor Rozas, as representative persons from Santiago, Coquimbo and Concepcion.

Rozas declined the position which Carrera had forcibly obtained for him, and remained in Concepcion. His followers in congress assumed a hostile attitude and conspired against Carrera. This caused the latter to forcibly dissolve congress, December 2nd, 1811. Thereafter, Carrera ruled in Santiago and Rozas in Concepcion.

Their rivalries increased and soon threatened to terminate in a civil war. They advanced against each other with troops and encamped on opposite banks of the river Maule. The Spanish party, taking advantage of these discords, fostered reactionary sentiments against the patriot cause. In Valdivia, the *godos* overthrew the junta. In view of the danger of a royalist reaction, Don Bernardo O'Higgins acted as mediator between the hostile patriot chiefs and succeeded in warding off civil strife. The rivals celebrated peace on the banks of the river Maule and each went to his own capital.

But the country remained divided. Valdivia and Chiloé acknowledged the government of the viceroy of Peru; Santiago was governed by Carrera and Concepcion by Rozas, each at the head of a junta of patriots. In this situation Carrera soon schemed to overthrow his rival. When it came time to send pay to the

troops on the Araucanian frontier, he dispatched emissaries to Concepcion who stirred up a riot, subjected the city to the authority of the junta of Santiago and apprehended Rozas, who was banished to Mendoza, where he soon after died.

During the time that the Carreras were in power, there were constant dissensions and disaffections. Four conspiracies against them were suppressed; all kinds of shocking enormities were committed; many were the confiscations, great was the corruption. They quarreled among themselves and Carrera once withdrew from the government; but a reconciliation was effected and he resumed his office. The *Penquistos*, or Concepcion party, were greatly enraged at their loss of influence, and made unceasing complaints. To cover his own ambitious designs and stop the complaints, Carrera proclaimed a constitution (1812). This apparently placed the control of the junta in a senate, in a manner similar to the regulation prescribed in the constitution adopted at Buenos Ayres, and established a consulting council of seven members. Here was the first attempt in Chile to have the executive power controlled in all its executive functions by another body, a chimerical scheme which in subsequent years led to civil war. This constitution proclaimed civil equality, liberty of the press and other political and social reforms, and for a time allayed the jealousies and factional spirit of the leading families; then, too, they now had no time for quarreling among themselves as a new foe required their attention.

Hearing of Don José Miguel Carrera's usurpation of the government at Santiago, José Ferdinand de Abascal, viceroy of Lima, dispatched south a large force under General Antonio Pareja in the early part of the year 1813, which in March attacked and took posses-

sion of Talcahuano, meeting with little resistance. He then advanced to Concepcion, where the garrison joined his force, swelling his army, which originally consisted of 2,100 men obtained principally from Valdivia and Chiloé, to 4,000 men. With this augmented force he deemed himself strong enough to put down the rebellion and compel Chile to recognize the authority of Spain and the viceroy of Peru; he began his march toward the capital. At Talcahuano, and afterward at Chillan, the Peruvian general seems to have won over some Araucanian allies.

Extraordinary efforts were made in Santiago to raise and equip a force with which to oppose the Spaniards; donations were received, contributions levied, and arms procured. To oppose Pareja, José Miguel Carrera, leaving his brother, Juan Carrera, in his place at the head of the government, marched south with the Chilean army, consisting of 12,000 badly drilled and poorly equipped men, and advanced to meet the enemy at Talca. There were engagements by the advanced forces at a place called Yerbas Buenas and before San Carlos, April 27th and May 15th. The attacks met with success and Pareja was compelled to fly with his troops in great confusion. After the rout succeeding the first attack, however, the royalists had rallied, and the next morning a severe action ensued in which the patriot losses were heavy, but the enemy was driven back and compelled to take refuge in Chillan, where Pareja was obliged to shut himself up and erect fortifications for his defense in the siege which was begun against him. Here he afterward died, and was succeeded by Colonel Juan Francisco Sanchez in command, who long maintained the siege, until bad weather setting in, the patriots retired. The garrisons he had left for the defense of Concepcion and Talcahuano were

obliged to surrender to the patriots, as well as Los Angeles and other royalist towns in the south. Their commanders escaped to Peru. In several skirmishes which followed the first successes, O'Higgins and Mackenna were usually successful.

The royalist troops remained in Chillan, completely isolated, within the fortifications they had constructed. With provisions stored for three months they awaited reinforcements from Peru; hoping, too, in the meantime, that they would be reinforced from the south, as the Franciscans were friendly to their cause and those zealous churchmen were good recruiting officers among the Araucanians. Carrera returned with his army to the attack and for three days besieged the city, but he was in want of provisions and ammunition, and of means for protecting his troops from the rain and the excessive heat. The men died from exposure and deserted, and Carrera was compelled to raise the siege and retire toward Concepcion, August 10th.

At a place called Roble, on the banks of the Itata river, Juan Francisco Sanchez surprised Carrera, whose army at this time was greatly diminished. O'Higgins, however, succeeded in rallying the troops and in turning what was nearly a rout into a victory, October 17th.

The junta had long been seeking an opportunity to free the capital of the influence and tyranny of Don José Miguel Carrera; for it was not forgotten that he was an usurper, though he had promoted reforms, opened schools in all the convents, recruited and disciplined troops and done much good service for the patriot cause. Advantage was now taken of his absence to make the desired changes. Juan Carrera, who was in charge, was sent to the army; the junta was reorganized and Carrera's place filled, the members being now

José Ignacio Cienfuegos, Augustin Eyzaguirre and José Miguel Infante. Having carried out the scheme thus far, they now removed to Talca to be near the army. José Miguel Carrera continued to command the army and refused to submit to the junta; in the districts commanded by his troops, he governed without restraint. But his oppressive measures and the devastations of his army so enraged the people of the southern provinces that Concepcion sided with the royalists. The junta, seeing the necessity of ridding the army of a leader who exasperated the people, removed Carrera and gave the chief command to Bernardo O'Higgins, naming as second in command Colonel Mackenna, a brave and competent young Irishman.

Don Bernardo O'Higgins was a natural son of the illustrious Ambrosio O'Higgins, Marquis of Orsorno, and was at this time about thirty-eight years of age. He was educated in England, then went to Spain and subsequently to Chile, where he passed his time looking after the estate left him by his father. When the revolution came and war seemed imminent, he became a stanch supporter of Doctor Rozas and embraced ardently the cause of the patriots. He was a deputy in the first congress, and a member of one of the early juntas. Upon the fall of Doctor Rozas, Don Bernardo retired to his estate, where he remained until the invasion of Pareja, when he took up his sword in defense of the patriot cause. It was after the battle of Roble, that Carrera expressed admiration for his talents as a soldier by calling him "*el primer Soldado de Chile,*" (the first soldier of Chile).

Carrera at first refused to yield up the command, but was finally abandoned by the army and found himself obliged to submit. With his brother he quitted the army and they set forth together on their journey

to Santiago, where they expected to regain by family influence and their usual intrigues the power and positions they had lost by their arbitrary and exasperating measures. On the way they were captured by a party of royalists and taken to Chillan as prisoners.

The Spanish forces under Pareja remained for some time at Chillan within their fortifications, both parties making active preparations during the time, for a renewal of the contest. Soon after the time of General Pareja's death, General Gavina Gainza arrived from Peru with a large number of reinforcements, which now gave the royalist army a decided advantage, as it was superior to the Chilean army both in cavalry and artillery, and had been recruited by the indefatigable Sanchez with Araucanian Indians and peons from the southern provinces. General Gainza assumed command and opened the campaign with vigor. The guerrilla commander, Elorreaga, took Talca for the royalists, the junta having previously retired to Santiago with a part of the patriot troops.

The first movement was made by General Gainza, who attempted to prevent a union of the patriot army. On the 19th of March, 1814, he was repulsed by O'Higgins on the heights of the Quilo, and the day following he attacked Colonel Mackenna with a division of the Chilean army encamped at Membrillar, twelve miles from Chillan, but the attack was gallantly repulsed. O'Higgins came to Mackenna's assistance with his division, and the royal army was roughly handled.

A few days after the affair at Membrillar (March 29th) a force of one thousand men was dispatched from Santiago under the Argentine officer, Manuel Blanco Encalada, to take Talca. This force was defeated at Cancha-Rayada by Elorreaga, and the capital was thus left almost wholly unprotected.

Despite his reverses, General Gainza attempted to carry out his plan of marching directly upon Santiago, which had at this time neither army nor defences. Advancing by rapid marching, he crossed the river Maule on balsas, protected by the royalists from Talca. O'Higgins followed and encamped for the night on the opposite side of the river within sight of the royalist army. Leaving a considerable force at the encampment to deceive the royalists, he crossed the river by a ford, and, securing an advantageous position in Quechereguas, prepared to attack the enemy early in the morning. Surprised at this manœuvre, and twice repulsed, Gainza retired to Talca which was still held by Elorreaga, and gave up his plan of marching to the capital (April 7th and 8th). This left O'Higgins free to open communications with Santiago and to cut off Gainza's line with Chillan.

Carrera had been both liked and disliked. At times he had been patriotic and brave; he was courteous and commanded respect. But his temper was passionate and tyrannical, and his brothers, much given to excesses, exerted an influence over him not altogether of the best. For these reasons, he had fallen in the popular estimation, so that all eyes were now turned toward O'Higgins at this critical period, and well worthy of the trust imposed upon him, did he prove himself. But the fall of Talca, despite O'Higgins' partial successes, was sufficient to bring about new political changes; the Carrera party still had influence in Santiago.

The loss of Talca was attributed to the lack of courage in the members of the junta, who had taken away a large part of the garrison and retired to the capital upon the approach of the enemy from the south. This, it was alleged, had been done for their own personal

security; it was sufficient to cause a revolution in Santiago and their deposition. In the critical condition of affairs, however, it was agreed by both parties that the junta was too large a governing body, and upon its deposition, Colonel Francisco de Lastra, governor of Valparaiso, was invested with the executive authority and given the title of supreme-director, in imitation of the same office which had been created in Buenos Ayres, March 7th.

Colonel Lastra, having the respect of all parties and conscious of the danger which menaced the independent cause, was disposed to consider favorably propositions for a compromise which were brought from the viceroy of Lima by Captain Hilliar of the British frigate "Phoebe," the latter offering to act as mediator. We may state here that England at this stage of the revolution in South America, was disposed to mediate between Spain and her colonies, because of the attitude of France toward the former. At first it had been to English interests to have the ports of South America opened to her commerce, and, under Spanish rule the ports were nearly closed; but it was now of greater importance that Spain should not be completely crushed. Lastra called a meeting of the principal citizens of the capital, and submitted Captain Hilliar's propositions; the decision arrived at was that the director should propose terms to Gainza.

This he did, appointing commissioners to proceed to Talca with Captain Hilliar, and the result was a capitulation, and an agreement entered into at Lircay on the 3rd of May, 1814. General Gainza was to embark with his troops for Peru within two months and leave all fortified places as they were; the government of Chile agreed to exercise its authority in allegiance to Spain; the viceroy of Peru should acknowledge the

government of Chile and all changes which had been made; Chile should obey the constitution and laws promulgated by the cortes of Spain, and send members to the cortes—for Chile, be it remembered, had not yet declared herself independent and her junta and supreme-director had exercised authority only in the name of Ferdinand VII. Hostages were exchanged by O'Higgins and Gainza, and the treaty concluded. But it seemed to have been only a subterfuge on the part of the royalists to gain time and save Gainza.

During this period, the public library at Santiago was founded, schools were opened in the different towns and the national institute, or university, was established. This last was formed by a union of the old college of San Felipe, the college of San Carlos, the Episcopal seminary and academy of San Luis. The institute was opened with enthusiastic and impressive ceremonies.

Carrera had induced printers to come to the country from the United States and had procured a press and printing materials. A paper was started, called "*La Aurora*," which advocated the revolutionary cause. This was conducted by Father Camilo Henriquez. Other writers also contributed to the revolutionary cause; such as Antonio José de Irizarri, a Guatemalian, Doctor Bernardo Vera, an Argentine and the poet of the revolution, Manuel Salas, and Juan Egaña, who drew up the first draft of a constitution.

CHAPTER III

1814 TO 1817—THE STRUGGLE FOR FREEDOM—SAN MARTIN'S EXPEDITION

Meanwhile the two Carreras, set at liberty by the treaty, quitted Chillan, August 23rd, 1814, and proceeded to the capital. Their first efforts were directed toward gaining over the troops, for they were still popular with the army at Santiago. This done, they arbitrarily restored the old junta, of which José Miguel Carrera himself had been the chief, and abolished the office of supreme-director still filled by Don Francisco de Lastra. This revolution, effected by family influence, force and corrupt measures, aroused the indignation of the citizens of the capital. O'Higgins, still at Talca, was invited to come to Santiago with his troops, to restore order and the legal junta and enforce the fulfilment of the recent terms agreed upon with the viceroy, Abascal, which Carrera and his followers ridiculed. He set out upon his mission, and met Carrera upon the plains of Maypo. Two armies in Chile enlisted in the same cause of achieving national independence, faced each other ready to shed patriotic blood, on the banks of the Maypo. There was an indecisive combat, and then both sides paused before beginning a battle. It can not be said to what extremes

the civil war might have been carried, as both parties were in battle array, had not the intelligence arrived —a messenger with an official letter—that the viceroy of Peru had refused to ratify the recent compromise, and that an army of five hundred men under Colonel Mariano, the most able officer of Peru, was on the way to reinforce Gainza.

The imminent danger reunited the patriots, now in arms against each other, O'Higgins waving his command and serving under his rival; Carrera used every effort to recruit his army, and soon yielding to the solicitations of the anxious citizens, gave over the command of a portion of the patriot troops in the field to O'Higgins, who forthwith marched toward the south to meet the Spaniards advancing from Talca. He first encountered the enemy at the river Cachapoal, but was driven back by superior numbers. He then made a stand at Rancagua, where he was besieged for two days, Carrera being outside the town with the main army. On October 1st and 2nd, 1814, the place was assailed, a desperate battle fought, and O'Higgins defeated, as Carrera afforded his rival no assistance. The enemy cut the aqueducts, which flooded the streets in which the patriots had barricaded themselves, and then set fire to the houses. The patriot army, in this division, numbered two thousand men and all perished but three hundred and nine. A part of the army formed itself into a phalanx and cut its way through the enemy's lines, then retreated in mad haste over the Andes toward Mendoza. Carrera was compelled to fall back to Santiago with 1,500 of his men, and was loudly denounced for the defeat.

Great was the consternation throughout Chile; Carrera with six hundred of his troops fled across the mountains to Mendoza, followed by more than two

thousand of the leading patriots. Thence he repaired with his brothers to Buenos Ayres and later, took passage for the United States, where he hoped to obtain assistance for the waning patriot cause; the refugee revolutionists at Mendoza applied to the government of Buenos Ayres for succor. O'Higgins and Mackenna also fled to Mendoza; there San Martin gathered together the refugee patriots and espoused the cause of O'Higgins. This, perhaps, caused the Carreras to push on to Buenos Ayres.

Osorio marched his victorious royalist army to Santiago and there restored the authority of Spain and the viceroy. In fact, the inhabitants of the capital, tired of the misrule of the Carreras, sent a deputation inviting him to come and restore order.

At the end of October, Valparaiso and all the principal towns were occupied. Then Osorio soon threw off the mask. The leading citizens became the victims of his vengeance; arrests, imprisonments and banishments followed. More than one hundred of the principal patriots were banished to the desolate island of Juan Fernandez, of Robinson Crusoe fame, lying three hundred and eighty miles from the Chilean coast. Among these were Doña Rosario de Rosalis, who solicited and obtained permission to accompany her aged father to the island. For two years and a half, 1814 to 1817, the viceroy maintained the Spanish authority in Chile, which he governed with the greatest rigor. Don Fernando de Abascal, the Peruvian viceroy, was the ablest, the most resolute, of the Spanish leaders; he crushed the uprising of Pumacagua, the revolution in Upper Peru and the revolution in Chile.

At first there was a large body of Chileans to hail this return to the royal power and authority of the viceroy with satisfaction, for the country had grown

tired of the factional disputes and the arbitrary rule of the Carreras. But such men as Osorio's infamous lieutenant, San Bruno, Sergeant Villalobos and subsequently, Marco del Ponte, who was sent out by Ferdinand VII. to succeed Osorio as captain-general, soon prepared the Chileans for renewed efforts to accomplish their independence. Don Marco del Ponte was the last of the Chilean viceroys, and his deceit, rapacity and cruelty knew no bounds. Osorio reëstablished the Royal Audience, renewed the cabildo and suppressed the public library and the National Institution, or university. Marco del Ponte established a tribunal which he called the Tribunal of Vigilance and Public Security, and placed over it the ferocious San Bruno. He also suspended the execution of the pardon the king had sent in favor of the exiles in Mendoza. Like Israel's children in bondage, the patriots of Chile looked for a deliverer, and he came from across the mountains. Buenos Ayres saw that to maintain her own independence in security, Chile and Peru must be free. She had enabled the provinces of Cujo, Cordovo, Santa Fé, the Banda Oriental (Uruguay), Entre Rios (Paraguay), Tucuman and Rioja to free themselves from Spanish domination; Chile had assisted her when Jonte had solicited aid, she would now listen to the supplications of the exiled patriots at Mendoza. She was waging a war against the royalists in Salta, Jujay, Potosi and Upper Peru; she would now create a diversion in Chile and by so doing diminish the Spanish strength in Upper Peru. The hero of San Lorenzo was given the matter in hand.

Don José de San Martin was at this time governor of the province of Cujo and at Mendoza. He had obtained his military education in the war with France, having fought in the battle of Bailen. This "Hanni-

bal of the Andes" was tall and well-formed; his whole appearance was soldierly; he had an olive complexion, black hair, wore large side-whiskers without moustache; his eyes were large and black and full of fire; his countenance was expressive, his deportment gentlemanly and insinuating. He was a cautious, brave general, with a Napoleonic talent for organization.

He was in command at Mendoza in 1814, when the Chilean fugitives fled there after the battle of Rancagua. In the dispute which had before sprung up between Carrera and O'Higgins or, primarily, between the Carreras and other factions, San Martin, as we have seen, had espoused the cause of the latter, perhaps because the Carreras had attempted to seize the government of Mendoza, and were unwilling to be second in command. He now collected the wreck of the Chilean army, and incorporated the patriot soldiers with the troops of his own command, part of whom were drawn from the forces of General Belgrano in the upper provinces, and part raised in Mendoza. He succeeded in the latter part of 1816, in getting together a formidable army of five thousand men, to which the title, "Liberating Army of the Andes," was given.

General San Martin displayed his great ability as an organizer by his successful efforts in getting together his army and giving it a thorough course of discipline. His principal force was the cavalry, a branch of the service for which his *gauchos*, or Pampas men, were peculiarly well-fitted. He was a reticent man and rarely divulged his plans to his associates; when he was ready to act he usually proceeded without seeking counsel, relying upon his own judgment. That he had ulterior designs in this expedition, we may suppose; we discover his secret plans afterward when he declares

himself Protector of Peru. He was not without secret personal ambition, but still he was a patriot and an able general.

Before beginning his march, San Martin resorted to a ruse for diverting Marco del Ponte's attention, as the Spanish captain-general was watching him on the other side of the mountains. He went first to San Carlos and held a conference with the Pehuenche Indians, asking of them permission to pass through their territory by way of Planchon. His intention, however, was to cross the Andes by way of the Uspallata pass—the passes of Putaendo and Cuevas—deemed almost impassable, emerging at Aconcagua, north of Santiago. This ruse caused Marco to concentrate a large body of his troops in Talca, opposite Planchon, and in Rancagua. To assure the success of his strategy, he sent Colonel Rodriguez with a force of cavalry, consisting principally of the Chileans, to the neigborhood of San Fernando. This band had for some time kept the Spaniards engaged in this vicinity, while San Martin was getting ready his expedition. They had several times captured towns, which they declared independent, led off royalists' horses, and defied the whole Spanish force. Rodriguez was a brave young soldier, allied to leading families of Santiago, and a favorite with the Carrera party. As the operations of the patriot forces were all in this quarter, the Spanish general was doubtless the more easily deceived as to San Martin's real objective point, so that only corps of defense were posted in the valley of Aconcagua above Santiago. Then, too, General Freire commandant of Concepcion, and the guerrilla chief Neirie, kept the captain-general busy in the south.

General San Martin led forward his cavalry by way of Putaendo, January 17th, 1817, taking command of the force himself. The infantry and artillery advanced

by the usual route, passing Cuevas. It was such a march as Almagro undertook two hundred and eighty years before; it was a Hannibal or a Bonaparte crossing the Alps. Each cavalryman had a sword, a horse, a saddle, a poncho; each infantry soldier carried a musket, cartridge-pouch and poncho, besides provisions for the journey. The latter consisted of dried meat and parched corn. Thus the army was not incumbered with baggage, tents, stores or provisions. There were depots of provender established every twelve leagues. There were 7,359 mules for the workmen and cavalry, and 1,922 beef cattle. Fieldpieces were carried, slung between mules, or dragged on sledges made of hides. Derricks were used to hoist or lower them over precipitous places.

The *gauchos* were soon short of provisions and this fact caused them to push forward with incredible exertion so that the rapidity with which they traversed the passes, here more than 13,000 feet above sea-level and covered with perpetual snow, is almost beyond belief. Three hundred miles over the giddy verges of yawning *quebradas*, they passed in thirteen days.

The army, consisting of three thousand infantry, nine hundred and sixty cavalry, with staff and trains and workmen mounted on mules, reached the valley of Aconcagua on February 8th. The cavalry, which had come by one route, tarried at Putaendo to rest; the infantry, coming another way, remained at the entrance to the valley. A junction of all the forces was soon after effected at Villa Nueva.

On February 7th, a skimish took place at the foot of the *cuesta* of Chacabuco with the Spanish who were picketed there, and this advance force was compelled to fall back on the main body of the royalist army advancing from the south under General Maroto,

a distinguished Spanish officer who had been sent by the viceroy of Peru to replace Osorio. On the 8th, Colonel Nicochea routed a body of royalist hussars. Great was the enthusiasm in the patriot army. The workmen brought fresh horses for the officers and men, and united themselves into a militia company. Women and children cheered the troops as they passed along, and thrust provisions into their hands. Aconcagua and Santa Rosa were occupied. A force of cavalry was dispatched under Colonel Nicochea by the pass of Tavon to join the main body of troops when it should arrive on the other side of the *cuesta*. At night the army encamped upon the summit and on the following morning descended the mountain toward the enemy which had taken up a well chosen position, with hills on each of the flanks, commanded by artillery. Marco had arrived with about one thousand reinforcements during the night, so that the royalist forces now numbered two thousand men at this point, with about the same number stationed in other parts of Chile.

The Spaniards had carelessly permitted the patriot army to come through the passes without taking the trouble to ascertain its strength. They took it for granted that only cavalry could traverse the mountains within the time spent by the army in crossing. Deceived by this, they formed for battle, drawn up in a square. As the morning was foggy, it was some time before it was discovered that San Martin was upon them with his whole army.

O'Higgins ordered a charge. The Spanish officers, discovering their mistake, sought to deploy their men into lines, but the enthusiastic patriot cavalry led on by Colonel Solar, dashed into their ranks and threw them into confusion. Hardly firing a musket, the royalists followed their fleeing commander in a total rout.

It had been necessary to begin the action at once, for Maroto was advancing with reinforcements of 1,200 troops. The victory was important; the cavalry detachment under Colonel Nicochea descended into the plain from the pass of Tavon and falling pellmell upon the royalists cut them down in their flight, which so demoralized the whole Spanish army that it refused to act when Marco del Ponte and Maroto had called a council of war outside the city of Rancagua. The officers fled to Valparaiso. There many of them, including Marco del Ponte, were captured by the patriots; Maroto effected his escape. Marco del Ponte was sent to San Luis in the Pampas, where he remained many years.

It is no wonder that San Martin and O'Higgins were surprised at their easy victory, and were led to believe that they should be met by the enemy in another more sanguinary field before arriving at the capital. That night they moved forward cautiously to Colina. There they remained three days preparing for the anticipated struggle. But there was no enemy before them; the royalists had fled toward the Maypo, and Santiago had been abandoned. In time the remaining royalist troops were driven into Talcahuano, where they shut themselves up to await reinforcements from Peru, which did not arrive until the following year.

On the 15th of February, 1817, San Martin, with two doubloons in his pocket, no military chest, no stores, no medicine or surgeons for his wounded soldiers, entered the capital with his wild *gauchos* and refugees at his back. Some there are who say that the general was hailed as the Savior of the country; others affirm that he was greeted by few voices, that he was received in sullen silence by the natives, and looked upon as another invader by a people who had grown tired of patriot machinations. Perhaps both accounts

are near the truth: the natives of Chile are wont either to shout *vivas* to the last conqueror, or to look with suspicion upon outside patriots; more than all else, the common people, though desperate fighters, prefer not to be disturbed. To them one government seems as good as another.

The Spaniards had been defeated because of their overweening confidence and imprudence, for Marco and Maroto commanded a far superior army to San Martin's, in point of veteran troops, officers, equipment and discipline.

A junta was again formed by the leading citizens of Santiago. The office of supreme-director was offered to San Martin, but he refused it, having his eyes on Peru, where the viceroy, Abascal, still maintained his authority. The office was then conferred upon General Bernardo O'Higgins, the government taking about the form it had under Lastra, save that the revolution this time meant complete independence from Spain. The independence was declared and a provisional constitution announced. Chile, with the exception of Concepcion, Talcahuano and Valdivia, fell during the year completely under the authority of the patriots.

One of the first acts of the new government was to dispatch a vessel to the island of Juan Fernandez to bring away the patriots banished there by Osorio. Then reprisals began upon the royalists. The infamous San Bruno and Villalobos were conducted to the middle of the plaza and shot; the royalist bishop, José Santiago Rodriguez, was banished to Mendoza. The property of royalist fugitives was confiscated, and those who remained in Chile were compelled to contribute a fund of $400,000 for the patriot cause.

O'Higgins began actively to organize an army to prosecute the war and dislodge the royalists from the

southern provinces, who had maintained a stubborn resistance under the leadership of Colonel José Ordoñez. A division was dispatched against them, under the intrepid Colonel Juan Gregorio de Las Heras, who defeated Ordoñez in Curapalihue and compelled him to shut himself up in Talcahuano. Receiving reinforcements, the royalist leader again attacked Las Heras on the small hill of Gavilan near Concepcion, but was again defeated, May 5th, 1817. O'Higgins soon after arrived and Ordoñez was besieged on the small peninsula of Talcahuano, where he fortified his position, and, the royalist fleet commanding the sea, he was able to hold out against the superior force which O'Higgins brought against him for a period of six months, when assistance arrived from Peru.

CHAPTER IV

THE BATTLE OF MAYPO

The energetic Abascal was not long in dispatching reinforcements to Chile upon learning the disastrous rout at Chacabuco; this he was now the better enabled to do for the reason that he had recently received 3,500 veterans from Spain. This was in the latter part of November, 1817.

Marco del Ponte and Maroto had proven themselves inferior generals, therefore, General Osorio was a second time appointed to the command of the royalist army intended for operations in Chile, an army which, with the garrison at Talcahuano, would number about six thousand men.

Osorio landed in Talcahuano in January, 1818. Previous to his landing, O'Higgins, following the plan of a French officer named Brayer, had made an ineffectual attempt to reduce the fortress, now, with the exception of Valdivia, the last stronghold of the royalists in Chile, December 6th, 1817. This attempt was frustrated by Abascal, who sent to the assistance of the garrison 1,500 reinforcements; these succeeded in reaching the fortifications by sea, and the place being one of great natural strength, was thus enabled to withstand the siege. O'Higgins, after sustaining a heavy

loss, including five or six officers in an assault, led by the gallant Las Heras, had withdrawn his troops before the arrival of Osorio.

San Martin had been making active preparations and getting together an army for the purpose of invading Peru, when Osorio landed at Talcahuano with his army of 3,400 veterans. This was an unexpected move on the part of the viceroy, who doubtless intended by it, not only the stamping out of the revolution in Chile, but the protection of Peru from invasion by thus striking a decisive blow at San Martin before he could get together an army and supplies.

Osorio, confident of victory and holding his opponents in some contempt, set out for the capital, marching rapidly through the province of Concepcion and advancing toward Talca. The two divisions of the patriot army then effected a junction in the latter end of February, San Martin being at Las Tablas, four leagues from Santiago, with four thousand troops, when Osorio landed. When the patriot forces had been united the army numbered between seven and ten thousand men. For two or three weeks nothing of importance occurred, save constant, harassing guerrilla warfare.

On the 12th of February, 1818, the first anniversary of the battle of Chacabuco, O'Higgins formally declared the absolute independence of Chile, which had not hitherto been clearly manifest. This he did upon his retirement from the unsuccessful campaign in the south, and it was in the nature of a bold defiance of Osorio. In every city, two blank books were opened during a period of fifteen days. In one of these all the citizens signed who favored absolute independence; in the other those signed who were of the contrary opinion. The first books were filled with names; the sec-

ond, nobody signed. Having consulted public opinion in this novel manner, O'Higgins solemnly affirmed the act as declaratory of the complete independence of Chile.

The royalist army advanced slowly toward the capital, crossing the Maule in the direction of Talca. San Martin moved forward from San Fernando on the 13th of March with his whole army, which was superior to that of the Spaniards in point of numbers and in cavalry, but inferior in discipline. Near the city of Talca, Osorio's van was furiously attacked and driven back, the action being confined principally to the cavalry. This was on the 18th; on the 19th there was a sharp skirmish at Cancha Rayada. Seeing the strength of the enemy, Osorio drew up his forces before the city and determined to attack San Martin in camp that night. About nine o'clock in the evening, while changes of position were being made in the patriot encampment at Cancha Rayada, the Spaniards, sallying forth from Talca under the intrepid Ordoñez, made a sudden onslaught, which was so furious and the discharges of cannon and muskets so lively and unexpected, that San Martin's army became panic-stricken, fired at each other as well as the enemy, and before fifteen minutes had elapsed was in total rout. O'Higgins bravely sought to rally the troops, though himself suffering with a wounded arm, but was unable to stop the flight of the demoralized army, and was, therefore, obliged to follow the fugitives toward the capital.

Monteagudo, San Martin's advocate general of the army, was the first to reach the capital, on his way to Mendoza, and tell of the defeat. Great was the consternation. Patriots at once began to get together their effects for flight to Mendoza. The contents of the public treasury was packed ready to load upon mules; the

streets of the capital were thronged with the equipages of those preparing to depart the country; groups of women were everywhere wringing their hands in grief and terror. The greatest anxiety prevailed, as it was several days before intelligence came of the whereabouts of San Martin. He was at San Fernando and the right wing of the army, consisting of about three thousand men, was with him. Manuel Rodriguez, the dashing and enterprising young cavalry officer, then took it upon himself to check the flight of the patriots, called *Hijos del Pais* (Sons of the Land), assumed the direction of affairs for the time being and organized a better state of things. In an incredibly short time he had organized a regiment, called the *Husares de la Muerte* (Hussars of Death.)

Six days after the rout, O'Higgins entered the city badly wounded, and was entrusted again with the dictatorship. On the following day, San Martin arrived, accompanied by some of his officers. Fatigued and covered with dust his cry of "*La Patria triunfa*" revived the spirits of the patriots.

The wreck of the army which came pouring into the capital for several days was collected by the officers and sent to an encampment outside the city at Molina. Ten days after the battle the brave Colonel Las Heras, who had led off the right wing from the rout and conducted it to San Fernando, arrived with three thousand of the troops. He had been enabled to save this division because of the fact that two divisions of Osorio's army approaching from different directions had mistaken each other for the enemy and commenced firing. This created so much confusion that General Osorio was prevented from following up his advantage. Indeed some of his army even retreated across the Maule.

The patriots of Santiago seeing the necessity of extraordinary efforts subscribed money, plate and jewels for the cause; 4,800 infantry and eight hundred cavalry, newly clothed and recovered from the recent disaster, were gathered together in a few days outside the capital. The artillery had been lost at Cancha Rayada, but a few fieldpieces were secured, in the main, two big guns and a park of artillery. The army was ably officered; besides San Martin himself and O'Higgins, there were Balcarce, Alverado, Quintana, Las Heras, Borgoño, Martinez, the intrepid Nichochea, Blanco Encalada and others. There were four French officers, and O'Brien, Miller, Lowe and Lebas, Britons. The gallant Mackenna was no longer of the number, and General Brayer, the distinguished French officer who had commanded the cavalry, now resigned because of some dispute between him and San Martin.

The patriot army moved about a league farther away from Santiago to the farm of Espejo, which was about three leagues from the capital, and there awaited the enemy, who was cautiously advancing. On the afternoon of the 3rd of April, 1818, Osorio crossed the Maypo and came to the plains, the flanks and rear of his army constantly harassed by parties of patriot cavalry. Skirmishing was kept up during the afternoon of the 3rd and all day the 4th. On the 5th the royalist army took up a position on the brow of a hill; the famous Spanish Burgos regiment occupied the right wing, the Infantos of Don Carlos the left, the Peruvian and Concepcion troops the centre. Four squadrons of dragoons flanked the right, a body of lancers the left, with a battery placed on a hill still farther to the left. The royalist lines were about a mile in length, and confronted by the patriot ranks. The left of the patriot columns was commanded by General Alverado, the cen-

ter by Balcarce, the right by Las Heras, the reserves by Quintana. Each army numbered not far from five thousand troops; each was led by generals of consummate ability; but the royalists had the advantage in this, that they had just won an important victory, which had reduced the fine patriot army to about one-half its original strength. This filled one army with enthusiasm, the other with doubt and sombre forebodings.

The battle began about eleven o'clock by a lively cannonading from the patriot artillery on the right. In an hour the action became general. Colonel Blanco Encalada commanded the artillery, and with this met the enemy's left as it moved down the hill. A charge was made upon the four fieldpieces at the left of the royalist lines; these were captured and turned against the foe.

The battle raged most fiercely about a farmhouse of the Espejo, which place was captured and retaken many times during the day. Until near the close of the day the advantage seemed to be with Osorio, the center and one wing of his army held the field and the defeat of the patriots seemed certain.

On San Martin's left wing the patriots had been able to withstand the Burgos regiment for some time, but the regiment of negroes stationed there at last became confused; four hundred of them were lying dead upon the field. The Burgos regiment now attempted to form itself into a square for a decisive charge; this broke the Spanish lines and threw them into momentary disorder. Colonel O'Brien, a gallant Irishman, commanded here a troop of patriot horse-grenadiers. With them he reinforced the reserves under General Quintana, which had been ordered to support this wing. Forming rapidly for a charge, O'Brien threw his men so furiously upon the forming regiment of the Burgos, that

he dispersed it. This regiment was the flower of Osorio's army, and its defeat caused such confusion in the ranks, that the patriots were able to press their foe at all points. The Burgos troops fled to the Espejo farmhouse; Las Heras soon overthrew the left, which also rushed to the Espejo. For a while the action was kept up in the center, but with both wings beaten back, this part of the royal army soon gave way and retreated with the rest.

The victory was decisive; half of Osorio's troops were killed and wounded and the rest taken prisoners; the patriots lost upward of one thousand men. A stand was made for a time by some of the troops in the farmhouse, rallied by the brave Ordoñez, but they were driven out and about five hundred of them killed in the court and adjoining vineyard. General Osorio effected his escape, and joined a party of officers and men who had fled to Concepcion, from which place they embarked for Peru. There were two hundred and eighty who escaped in this manner.

This battle gave San Martin lasting renown. It was a brilliant, decisive victory, and established the independence of Chile; not only that, it paved the way for the independence of Peru, for it broke the power Abascal had so long been able to maintain there.

Five days after Maypo had been won, San Martin set out for Buenos Ayres, for the purpose of concerting measures with that government for the invasion of Peru. Triumphal arches awaited him, and he was hailed with unfeigned appreciation.

In the beginning of 1819, San Martin had returned to Mendoza, where he employed himself some time in equipping troops and organizing a formidable force with the view to beginning the long contemplated invasion of Peru, which was sought as the surest means

of securing the emancipation of all Spanish-America. While thus engaged at Mendoza, he once set out to recross the plains to Buenos Ayres, but was obliged to return on account of a band of outlaws, headed by José Miguel Carrera, which at that time was scouring the Pampas. Carrera had raised a body of Montoneros and with them had carried on a guerrilla war for several years in revenge for the death of his brothers, who had been condemned to death at Mendoza by Monteagudo a day or two after the battle of Maypo (April 8th). Once this bold restless leader had even captured Buenos Ayres. He was in time defeated and taken to Mendoza, where he was executed, September 5th, 1821, upon the spot where his younger brothers had met their fate some time before. In 1827, the bodies were disinterred and buried in Santiago with military honors.

There were several political intrigues in both Chile and Buenos Ayres about this time, which caused San Martin to put aside his sword for a while and don citizen's clothes. But it was not his disposition to retire to private life while there were still worlds to conquer. It was not long after this that the energetic general received the command of the army in Chile and began the invasion of Peru.

The execution of the younger Carrera brothers at Mendoza created considerable excitement for a time, as their family was still strong in Chile. Monteagudo was blamed for his severity. But the sensation following this circumstance was hardly equal to that caused by the death of the brave Manuel Rodriguez, who had so greatly distinguished himself at San Fernando prior to San Martin's march over the mountains, and afterward in the capital after the rout of the patriot forces at Talca. A few days after the battle of Maypo he was placed under arrest, charged with enter-

taining designs against the government of O'Higgins. He was sentenced to banishment, and while on his way to Valparaiso under guard, was shot by a villain named Navarro, who commanded the escort. The authorities, whether conniving at this plot or not, were suspected, and did not escape censure.

The patriots, it would seem, were not slow in adopting Marco del Ponte's methods of raising revenues, both before and after the battle of Maypo. Many of the old Spanish families were robbed and their property delivered up to the public use. Just before the battle of Maypo, it is said that more than five millions of dollars worth of readily convertible property was seized by the patriot government to keep up the military organization, and that subsequent to the battle three millions of dollars worth was taken in the same way and for the same purpose. In these revolutionary times it is not to be wondered at that the chiefs resorted to this manner of supporting the army from the resources of their enemies at home.

After the defeat of the royalists at Maypo, Colonel Sanchez remained in the south with a force of 1,500 men; other forces which were stationed in Chillan and Concepcion made their way to Peru, embarking at Talcahuano. O'Higgins soon dispatched a division against Sanchez (1819) under command of Antonio Gonzalez Balcarce, the Argentine officer who had fought at Maypo. Colonel Ramon Freire occupied Concepcion with the vanguard while Balcarce compelled Sanchez to retreat to Los Angeles, where his force hotly pressed, was dispersed though the Araucanian country. Sanchez afterward embarked at Valdivia and made his way to Peru. Freire was made intendente of Concepcion and soon established the authority of the patriots in all the fron-

tier towns of the south, where he began a policy of conciliation and clemency.

General Freire went against Vicente Benavides and surprised him at a place called Curalé, near Santa Juana, May 1st, 1819. Benavides, however, made his escape into the Araucanian country with twenty of his followers.

The career of this inhuman pirate was as romantic as it was despicable. He was a sergeant of grenadiers in the royal army at the time of the first Chilean revolution, was taken prisoner at Membrillar but made his escape. Afterward he served the royalists until he was taken prisoner at the battle of Maypo. He was recognized, tried, and condemned to be shot. But he was only wounded, and, feigning death, made his escape.

When San Martin arrived in Santiago preparatory to entering upon his Peruvian campaign, Benavides presented himself and offered his services for dissuading the Indians and other designing persons south of the Biobio from joining the royalists. Receiving passports, he soon after joined the Indians, was appointed their chief, and began a series of skirmishes and raids along the Biobio. At first he pretended to act under the sanction of Spanish authority, but upon the fall of the viceroy at Lima, he threw off the mask and declared to General Prieto that he would continue the war against Chile to the last man, even though Spain herself acknowledged its independence.

He disregarded flags of truce, put his prisoners to death most barbarously, murdered unoffending settlers, burned and sacked cities, intrigued with the Carreras, captured British and American vessels, shot the captains and imprisoned the crews, equipped a pirate vessel and sent it along the coast with instructions to spare no flag and to put insurgent crews to death. He was

a high-handed freebooter, and, having gathered together three thousand men in the summer of 1821, even meditated the capture of Santiago and Valparaiso and the conquest of Chile. Colonel Joaquin Prieto was dispatched against him in the latter part of 1821, and completely defeated him on the plains of Saldias near Chillan, October 9th. He was then closely followed into Araucania by a force under Captain Manuel Bulnes. His capital, Arauco, was finally taken and burned, on the first of February, 1822; the bandit himself was taken at Topocalma where he had been obliged to put to shore in a boat for water, being at this time on his way to Peru with his wife and a few companions. Sentence was passed upon him February 21st; he was ordered dragged from the prison in a pannier tied to the tail of a mule, hanged and his head and hands cut off and placed upon high poles.

[illegible]

MANUEL BLANCO ENCALADA

CHAPTER V

of his crew. The Spaniards ran up the rigging, or hid themselves in the hold, abandoning the ship to the bold enemy. But the two vessels not being lashed together, became separated, and the crew of the "Venganza," seeing how few of O'Brien's men were aboard, commenced a rapid firing. The brave commander fell, shot through the heart. The "Lautaro" returned to the attack and rescued the patriots on board the "Venganza," but both the Spanish vessels, taking advantage of this incident, crowded sail and made their escape. It was not altogether a victory, but the effect was to rid the Chilean coast of the Spanish warships.

The Chilean deputies in London had purchased the "Cumberland," another East Indiaman, for the use of the government. This was mounted with sixty-four guns and named "San Martin," Captain Wilkinson being assigned as her commander. Mr. Higginson of North America, was first named as commodore of this little fleet, but being over sixty years of age he soon resigned and the government appointed General Blanco Encalada, who had been a Spanish midshipman, to the exalted office of admiral.

Hoisting his flag upon the "San Martin," Commodore Encalada set sail for Concepcion, followed by the "Chacabuco" and "Lautaro," Captains Wilkinson, Worster, Diaz and Morris all being on board. The Commodore's plan was to intercept the Spanish frigate "Maria Isabel," or take her in the harbor of Concepcion, where she had put in with a transport soon after the battle of Maypo. Previous to this, Ferdinand VII. being again on the throne and fearing that Peru might soon follow the other Spanish-American provinces in declaring and obtaining her independence, dispatched an army of two thousand men from Spain in transports, convoyed by a battleship and two frigates. The war-

ship, proving unseaworthy, had been compelled to put back to Spain. The other vessels were scattered by a gale off Cape Horn; two of the transports with mutinous crews, were taken to Buenos Ayres, one of the frigates, the "Maria Isabel," as we have seen, with one of the transports, put into the harbor of Concepcion. If the Chilean government could capture these vessels it would greatly augment their navy, as the frigate carried forty-four guns.

On the 28th of October, 1818, the "San Martin" ran alongside the "Maria Isabel" and gave her a broadside. The Spaniards aboard sought safety in flight and abandoned the ship to its fate. The frigate went aground, but was floated and taken out of the port by the captors. Four Spanish transports were in the bay and three others came in afterward; these were all captured. The "Maria Isabel" was taken to Valparaiso where she was mounted with forty-eight guns and christened "O'Higgins."

About this time the "Galvarino," mounting eighteen guns, was brought from England by Captain Guise and purchased; two North American vessels, the "Araucano" and "Intrepid" were also added to the navy, and later, an American built corvette mounting twenty-six guns, the "Independencia," was purchased, so that the Chilean navy had become quite formidable.

In November, 1818, Lord Thomas Cochrane, who had been invited by the government sometime before to take charge of the Chilean navy, arrived, and, his appointment being confirmed, he began to equip and man the fleet so actively that by the following January it was ready to sail for Peru. For it was to prepare the way for San Martin's contemplated expedition, that all these active naval preparations had been made.

On the 15th of January, 1819, Lord Cochrane directed

his squadron toward Peru. Arriving in Callao bay, it was the admiral's intention to attack the fort and carry the town by a sudden descent upon it. A fog arose and the vessels of the fleet became separated, so that only Lord Cochrane in the "O'Higgins" entered the bay as far as the anchorage. The Spanish vessels, "Esmeralda" and "Venganza," with two other warships, were at anchor under the guns of the forts. Cochrane opened fire upon them, but the surprise was not successful and three hundred and sixty guns on shore and one hundred in the ships opened a brisk cannonading in reply. Unable to retreat, because of the calm which prevailed in the bay, the "O'Higgins" sustained the fire unsupported for two hours, when a favorable wind enabled her to escape.

Believing, from this nearly successful attack, that Lord Cochrane would succeed in a second attempt to take the port, the viceroy ordered ships dismantled and a double boom to be formed from their materials barring the way to the anchorage. The admiral, however, contented himself for a while with blockading the harbors and compelling the Spanish authorities at different places along the coast to furnish his ships with provisions. He captured the towns of Payta, Supé and other places, with detached parties landed from his boats, and seized property of the royalists to furnish his vessels with supplies.

While conducting these operations along the coast, Commodore Blanco Encalada with the remainder of the fleet was left to maintain the blockade of Callao. Returning, Lord Cochrane found that the Chilean commander had raised the blockade and gone to Valparaiso. Encalada was arrested for this and a court-martial held, but he was honorably acquitted. Though invited by the Chilean government to command the

fleet, Cochrane found that the authorities were slow to furnish him with necessary men and supplies, and during his whole brilliant career on the Pacific coast, he seemed to encounter much opposition to his plans and to be the object of much jealousy on the part of some of the Chilean officers, and even of San Martin himself. As many foreign officers had served in the Chilean army, and foreigners had been repeatedly honored, both in civil and military positions, we may suppose that Lord Cochrane's ideas of the campaign and San Martin's plans were sometimes at variance. San Martin wished to educate the Peruvians to the patriot cause, to win his way by mild measures so far as possible; Lord Cochrane wished to subdue rather than convert the Peruvian royalists.

The year was occupied by the fleet in unimportant measures. Fireships were constructed and rockets prepared; the latter being soldered with bell metal, burst at the first trial and were found to be of no value whatever. An expedition against Callao, with fireships and bell metal rockets, failed wholly of any satisfactory results, October 5th, 1819. The Spanish frigate "Prueba" arriving on the coast, Cochrane went in search of her to Arica, and not finding her there, proceeded to Callao, having in the meantime dispatched two warships with a troop of soldiers under the command of Colonels Charles and Miller to Pisco, which place was taken. The action, however, cost the life of Colonel Charles. Miller too was seriously wounded.

Not finding the "Prueba" at Callao, Lord Cochrane went in search of her to Guayaquil. Proceeding up the Guayaquil river by night he captured two merchantmen, but the "Prueba" threw her guns and stores overboard and thus lightened, sailed up the river out of Cochrane's reach.

Leaving Guayaquil on the 21st of December, Cochrane sailed to Valdivia with the "O'Higgins" and reconnoitered the harbor and fortifications, with a view to making a subsequent attack upon the place, and, by capturing it, free Chile from the last stronghold of the royalists. Off the harbor he captured the Spanish brig, "Potrillo," and then sailed for Concepcion to solicit men and supplies of General Freire, the commander of the place. Receiving there a detachment of two hundred and fifty troops he returned in February to Valdivia, with a force all told of three hundred and eighteen men, the "O'Higgins," a brig, and a schooner as transport.

On the 2nd, 3rd and 4th of February, 1820, Lord Cochrane accomplished the brilliant exploit of taking the strongly fortified city of Valdivia, an achievement which has seldom been surpassed for gallantry and cool judgment. One after another he possessed himself of the enemy's batteries and then of the town itself.

Valdivia was situated upon a navigable river about fifteen miles from the sea. Nine forts defended the place, situated upon both sides of the river and extending from the city to the anchorage. They mounted one hundred and eighteen cannons and were garrisoned by over one thousand men.

The commander landed first at Aguada del Inglés, a strongly fortified point just outside the harbor, and at sunset disembarked his troops, the enemy in the meantime collecting a considerable force behind precipices which tower above the beach at this point. These were driven back before they had time to give the alarm; the Aguada del Inglés was taken and San Carlos, the next fort, stormed and captured, so rapidly that the garrisons were sent flying in a boat toward the next fort in the line toward the city, called Chorocomago. The other forts on that side were opened to receive the fugi-

tives, and in the confusion which ensued the victors entered pellmell close behind the royalists. Before midnight the strongholds of Aguada del Inglés, San Carlos, Amargos, Chorocomago, and, finally, the last resort of the fugitives on that side, Corral Castle, were taken one after another.

On the following morning Cochrane sailed into the bay under a heavy fire from the Spanish forts, on the side of the bay opposite those which had been captured during the night, and anchored before the fort of Niebla. Troops were dispatched at the same time from the opposite side in boats, the intention being to land them in two divisions, one to storm forts Niebla and Riojo, the other to advance against fort Manzanera. The garrisons in all these forts, seeing the boats setting out, the flags of the patriots flying on the fortresses opposite, and the "O'Higgins" prepared to open fire upon them, became panic-stricken and fled to the city.

Cochrane followed the fugitives into the city, and meeting no opposition, planted the patriot flag in the plaza. His loss had been seven killed and nineteen wounded. The royalists lost ten privates and three officers killed, twenty-one wounded, and eighty-two taken prisoners, besides their cannon, ammunitions and stores.

In this action, Majors Miller and Beauchef and Captain Erezcous especially distinguished themselves for gallantry. The victory was important, as Valdivia was a veritable Gibraltar in strength. Its forts mounted one hundred and twenty-eight guns and were garrisoned by over eight hundred men under the command of Colonel Hoyos. There were altogether fifteen forts, whose guns commanded the anchorage from all directions. That these forts could all be taken one after another by a few companies of men seems almost incredible.

CHAPTER VI

THE STRUGGLE IN PERU

It was fortunate for Chile in these turbulent times that a man like Don Bernardo O'Higgins was at the head of affairs, otherwise the state might have been torn asunder by party feuds. Though hampered often in his efforts by the men for whom San Martin had secured departmental places, yet O'Higgins labored to introduce essential improvements into the affairs of state, to overcome prejudices, to open up a foreign commerce, to mitigate so far as possible the most flagrant abuses. The disgraceful peculations carried on by some of San Martin's ministerial appointees, O'Higgins was obliged to overlook, for some of these ministers were quite as powerful and quite as secure in their positions, as was the director himself; notably, Rodriguez, an intriguing fellow, Don Ignacio Zentano, minister of war, a pliable tool, Don Anselmo Cruz, of the finance department, imbecile, but crafty, and Don Joaquim Echeverria, who was at the head of the affairs of state and justice, a man of subterfuge and deceit. With such a ministry, we wonder that O'Higgins was able to keep the peace so long as he did, and make Chile, during his administration, the most respected abroad of all the South American states.

Since the battle of Maypo, Chile had been making herculean efforts to aid San Martin in his long contemplated invasion of Peru. For two years little had been accomplished, save the brilliant exploits of Blanco Encalada and Lord Cochrane at sea. Spanish war vessels had been secured and put in readiness, Valdivia had been taken; these achievements cleared the way and enabled the exhausted republics of Chile and Buenos Ayres at last conjointly to prepare for the final denouement in the struggle for South American independence. The government of Chile now became active, and the resources of the country were industriously called forth; troops were collected and drilled; the executive department was removed to Valparaiso to be able the more effectively to coöperate with San Martin and Lord Cochrane, the former having repaired there with what troops and equipments he had been able to raise at Mendoza, the latter from Valdivia with the fleet.

The difficulty attending this enterprise was stupendous, owing to the poverty of the country. But the unremitting efforts of San Martin and Lord Cochrane went far to remove all obstacles. The expedition was in readiness by the 15th of August, 1820. The navy of Chile was put to active use and transports hired for the occasion. On the 18th, the army marched into Valparaiso, and, superintended by General Las Heras, embarked from the arsenal. There were 4,400 men and a corps of supernumerary officers intended for the work of recruiting in Peru. At Coquimbo five hundred more troops were taken aboard. Fifteen thousand stands of arms, with ammunition, clothing and stores, were shipped for the purpose of equipping the patriots of Peru, who, it was expected, would revolt and come to San Martin's standard. San Martin was named commander-in-chief of the troops, who were designated as the "United

liberating army of Peru." The fleet under Lord Cochrane intended for the transportation of this army consisted of the seven or eight warships of the navy and from fifteen to twenty transports.

On the 13th of August, the chiefs of the liberating army had issued a bulletin declaring the purposes of the expedition; that it was to redeem the land in which slavery had so long existed, and from whence the latest efforts to oppress the whole continent had been made; to decide whether or not the time had arrived when the influence of South America upon the rest of the world should be commensurate with its extent, its riches and its situation.

As this expedition was a joint effort on the part of Chile and Buenos Ayres to aid the patriots of the northern state to throw off the Spanish yoke, and as the subsequent progress of the war is rather a part of the history of Peru than of Chile, we will give here only a brief account of the brilliant achievements of the liberating army after it had landed in Peru's territories.

On the 20th of August, the fleet sailed from Valparaiso, arriving at its objective point, Pisco, on the 7th of September. Four days after, the army, or a large portion of it, was landed, the Spanish troops having previously fallen back upon Lima, where the viceroy intended to concentrate his forces. Colonel Arenales was well acquainted with the country and marched a strong detachment of one thousand men into the vicinity of Lima, taking up a position east of the city. He was some time on the way, crossing the Andes by a circuitous route, and traversing a country filled with royalists. He encountered on the way a strong division of 1,800 of the royalist troops under General O'Reilly, which he cut to pieces and made prisoners.

On the 20th, an armistice was agreed upon between

San Martin and the viceroy, while the liberating army was still in Pisco. Eight days were consumed in diplomatic efforts made by the viceroy, Pezuela, to compromise in favor of retaining some of Spain's authority; but to none of these propositions would San Martin agree, nor would he consent to anything short of the independence of Peru.

The army remained at Pisco until October 26th, 1820, when it was again embarked and arrived off Callao on the 29th. Not deeming it advisable to disembark at Callao, which was strongly garrisoned, San Martin proceeded to Ancon, a port a few miles north of Callao, where he remained a few days.

In the meantime Cochrane planned an attack upon the Spanish frigate "Esmeralda," lying in the harbor of Callao. The harbor was guarded by extensive batteries, and the anchorage by a boom made of spars chained together. The "Esmeralda" was moored under the guns of the batteries within the boom and surrounded by gunboats. With two hundred and forty volunteers from the different ships, commanded in divisions by Captains Guise and Crosbie, the attacking force proceeded toward the warship in fourteen boats.

At ten o'clock at night the expedition reached the line of gunboats. To the guard's challenge of "Who's there!" Cochrane presented a pistol and gave him the alternative of "silence or death." Pushing on, the frigate was reached and boarded on all sides by the men in the boats. The "Esmeralda's" crew sprang up and defended the vessel obstinately for several moments, but were finally driven into the forecastle, where, after a short, stubborn resistance, they yielded, but only to rally again upon the deck where a momentary stand was made. But finally the cables were cut, sailors mounted the rigging, and the ship was sailed out of

the bay under a heavy fire from the batteries. Of the "Esmeralda's" crew one hundred and twenty were killed and wounded; the boarding force lost eleven killed and thirty wounded. This action gave the patriot fleet the undisputed mastery of the coast. San Martin named the "Esmeralda" "Valdivia," in honor of Cochrane, and thenceforth she became a Chilean vessel.

Following this action, the troops at Ancon were again embarked and on the 10th of November, landed at Huacho. San Martin's headquarters were then established at Huara, a place a few miles distant from Huacho and seventy-five miles north of Lima. Lord Cochrane's brilliant achievements had given so much popularity to the patriot cause, that, shortly afterward, December 3rd, the Numancia regiment of eight hundred men deserted the viceroy and joined San Martin's army.

Guayaquil and Truxillo declared for the patriot cause, which practically gave independence to all lower Peru, save only the capital, and even in the latter the cause of the viceroy was daily losing ground.

With the exception of an advance made to within three leagues of the capital, San Martin preferred to maintain an inactive and conciliatory policy for the following six months, to the great disgust of Lord Cochrane and some others of the more spirited officers. The port of Callao was blockaded, by which means the patriots hoped to reduce the inhabitants of the capital to submission by keeping supplies cut off; in the end this plan had the desired result.

Satisfied that there would be no active military movements about the capital, Lord Cochrane toward the end of April, 1821, collected a small force and set sail in the "San Martin" for Arica. Here the authorities had time to remove the public treasures to Tacna, forty-five miles

distant, before Colonel Miller, who commanded, could land with his force. However the colonel followed, captured the town, and then went on to Moquegua, where he routed a body of Spanish troops at Mirabé. This course of operations was pursued by Lord Cochrane until news reached him of an armistice, which had been declared between San Martin and the viceroy, La Serna, on May 24th; he then sailed for Callao, leaving Colonel Miller in command of the places which had been captured.

The armistice, which continued two months, had been sought by the viceroy, and for the reason that the capital was reduced to extremities by a scarcity of provisions. No agreement was reached, as San Martin would consent to nothing short of complete independence, and it soon became apparent that the Spaniards were about to abandon the capital to the patriots and retire to the interior. On the 6th of July, 1821, the royalist authorities did quit the city and retired by way of Xauxa to Cuzco; on the 12th, San Martin entered, his troops having taken possession the night before.

On the 28th of July, 1821, the independence of Peru was proclaimed by San Martin, and "Viva La Patria!" "Viva La Libertad!" and "Viva San Martin!" were shouted by the people assembled in the great square to listen to San Martin, who spoke to them from an elevated stage. The same people were now shouting "Viva San Martin" who a day or two before had rushed out in a mad rout and fright, fearing that the general, if not "El Diablo," as they styled Lord Cochrane, was at least an invader who would sack the city.

On the 3rd of August, San Martin assumed the reins of government, gave himself the title of "Protector of Peru" and issued a proclamation, declaring the supreme political and military authority vested provisionally in himself, while a new government was formed with Juan

Garcia del Rio as secretary of state, Don Bernardo Monteagudo, minister of war, Don Hypolito Unanué, minister of finance.

Henceforth, San Martin held himself no longer an officer of Chile, ceased to transmit bulletins to Valparaiso, and conducted himself in all respects as though the recognized head of an independent state. From this time his operations in Peru can hardly be deemed a part of Chilean history.

On the 10th of September, the Spanish army under General Cantarac returned from the interior, and, marching past Lima, entered Callao. San Martin forebore to interfere with the royalist troops, believing that they would but hasten the fall of Callao by diminishing the provisions. This proved to be the outcome; after a short stay, Cantarac withdrew his troops, carrying off the treasure deposited in Callao castle and the stronghold was surrendered to the patriots.

The protector remained inactive at Lima until May of the following year, when he dispatched two expeditions against the royalists at different places and totally destroyed them.

Next he directed his attention to obtaining possession of Guayaquil, which, with its fine harbor, arsenal, dockyard and province, he desired to attach to Peru. General Bolivar, in Colombia, was also looking in that direction; he had successfully invaded Quito and was now marching toward Guayaquil with the intention of occupying it. San Martin was hindered by difficulties at home, and was anticipated by General Sucre, who, acting for Bolivar, took possession of Guayaquil. San Martin determined to have an interview with Bolivar, but he got little satisfaction as the latter treated him with considerable hauteur. The chiefs were brother

patriots and liberators, but even patriots may feel some degree of jealousy and a spirit of rivalry.

While San Martin was absent on this diplomatic mission, the people of Lima forcibly deposed Monteagudo. The wily minister, fearing the vengeance of the people, hastened aboard a vessel and was conveyed to Panama. The supreme delegate, Torre Tagle, who conducted the affairs of the government in the absence of San Martin, supplied the place of Monteaguda with a temporary junta; this body immediately summoned a national congress, taking advantage, perhaps, of San Martin's absence. At any rate, the protector was deeply chagrined when he returned from the north and found a congress holding secret sessions at the capital. Surrounded by difficulties, with a rival at the north, disaffection among the patriots and intrigues among the royalists, San Martin, on the 20th of September, 1822, resigned his authority in an able and patriotic address. He perceived that his day was a thing of the past in Peru, and was politic enough to lay down his authority in time. He returned to Buenos Ayres, stopping a short time at Valparaiso. In 1823, he sailed for England. He died at Boulogne on the 17th of August, 1850, aged seventy-two years. Peru's subsequent efforts to maintain her independence were not successful until General Bolivar achieved that result in the battle of Xauxa, August 6th, 1824, and finally, in the decisive battle of Ayacucho, December 9th, 1824.

CHAPTER VII

PARTY DISSENSIONS

While the war was progressing in Peru several matters worthy of notice were agitating the Chileans. There were several altercations between Lord Cochrane and the British naval commanders along the coast relative to the detention of alleged British vessels engaged in contraband trade. Chilean and Peruvian duties being enormously high, all manner of schemes were resorted to in order to smuggle in cargoes, chief among which was a system of licensing by which British vessels were entered ostensibly as of British bottoms, to escape the patriot navy, but with Spanish supercargoes to escape the tariff.

Some of these vessels attempted to run the blockades and were seized; this raised a clamor against Lord Cochrane at Valparaiso by British mercantile agents. But his lordship continued to collect duties, and bid defiance to his detractors and the British naval officers on the coast, who opposed him in favor of British commercial interests.

Lord Cochrane also encountered considerable difficulty in his attempts to secure funds, first from San Martin and afterward from the Chilean government for the payment of his officers and men; and it was

only after summary measures on his own part and threats of revolt on the part of his crews, that he was enabled to procure funds with which to meet the arrears.

Another event of importance about this time was the assembling of congress in July, 1822. O'Higgins had been led to call this because of the machinations of the aristocracy and the obstructions of the senate which he had appointed. The supreme-director earnestly desired that the country, having achieved its independence, should have a more free and representative form of government. This the aristocracy opposed, and the ministry sympathized with them. O'Higgins urged the necessity of a legislative body, but met with opposition, first on one pretext and then another. It was the beginning of the struggle between liberals and conservatives, and the director keenly felt the growing difficulties of his position.

To supply as far as possible the want of a congress, O'Higgins named five influential citizens to form a senate. He hoped that this body would second his views, but instead it soon began to oppose him at every turn, and sought to establish itself a perpetual power. To rid himself of the oligarchy the director appointed its members to foreign missions and other offices, and then summarily summoned a national congress.

The congress when assembled, employed the time at first in foolish, unimportant discussions. At length a new tariff schedule and constitution were submitted by the minister, Don José Antonio Rodriguez Aldea, and they occupied the legislative attention until October. The constitution gave to the supreme-director the powers of a dictator and caused much comment and considerable discontent. As the intention of the

tariff law was to prevent smuggling, foreign agents inveighed as loudly against it as they had against Cochrane. From O'Higgins to Balmaceda foreign interests in Chile have ever been antagonistic to liberal, progressive measures, beneficial to Chile, and have sympathized with the oligarchical rule, with the classes against the masses. In this tariff measure, however, the wily Aldea evidently introduced certain features to further his own schemes and speculations; speculations, which, in the course of two years, gave him a large fortune. He would buy up all the tobacco and then increase the elastic duties, which were altered to suit occasions; the same was done with spirits, sugar, and other necessary articles of consumption.

These malfeasances aroused public indignation, but O'Higgins, imposed upon no doubt, indiscreetly kept the obnoxious Aldea in office. Disappointed in the measures of congress and provoked by the misdeeds of the minister, the Chileans began to show a spirit of discontent and a feeling of ill-will toward the government. The devastating earthquake of November 19th, 1822, probably increased the dissatisfaction, just as bad crops often affect political issues. Local dissatisfaction had for some time prevailed at Concepcion in the south and Coquimbo in the north; in the former, General Freire, the military governor, had been refused pay and supplies for his soldiers, and the troops were destitute and their wages twelve months in arrears; in the latter place, the Coquimbans were in want of means to carry on their local government and all the duty on copper shipped from their port was diverted to the treasury in Santiago; restrictions were also made which were considered to be against the interests of their trade and mining industries.

General Freire took the initiative at Concepcion,

assisted by the influential citizens of his district and the old Carrera partisans. The southern provinces were declared independent of the rest of Chile, the laws and constitution of O'Higgins's congress were denounced as illegal, for the reason that Concepcion had not been fairly represented; the ministers were denounced as conspirators, plotting the ruin of the country. A local congress was assembled which countenanced the measures of the influential citizens. An English emissary was dispatched to Coquimbo with a full account of the proceedings which had taken place in the south, and bearing an invitation to the Coquimbans to join the movement; another Englishman was sent to Santiago to intrigue with the numerous malcontents in that city.

The governor of Coquimbo was deposed and an old Carrera partisan put in that office; the province was declared independent and the national congress denounced as an illegal body. It is worthy of remark, however, that it was expressly declared that these measures were not directed against the supreme-director, but only against his ministers and congress. O'Higgins had been Freire's benefactor and hoped that he would be able to put down the revolt with little trouble and without a resort to arms. But he overestimated his popularity.

Freire advanced with troops from the southern cities beyond the river Maule, and the Coquimbans took up arms in his favor, proceeding toward the capital with a considerable force raised in the north. In December, 1822, the northern force came to Illapel and at the beginning of the following year they occupied Aconcagua and Quillota without opposition,

On the 28th of January, 1823, a movement took place in the capital. The supreme-director was waited upon

by a committee from the disaffected party, headed by General Guzman, and asked to resign his authority into its hands. This he refused to do, but signified his willingness to resign to any proper and competent authority. He was then asked to yield his authority to a junta composed of Don Agustin Eyzaguirre, Don Fernando Errázuriz and Don José Miguel Infante. This he did on condition that the new junta should without delay summon a new national congress, to which they should resign their temporary executive authority; and if after six months the difficulties which had separated the disaffected parties from the main government should not be removed, the functions of the junta should entirely cease and their power revert to the people. This treaty was signed by O'Higgins and by Don Mariano Egaña, who represented the people of Santiago. Three citizens were to determine the power of the junta, according to the usual South American method of having one body watch and prescribe rules for another; thereupon the junta appointed Don Marian Egaña as minister of state and marine, and Don Agustin Vial, minister of finance and war.

The junta summoned a congress. It was at this time that both O'Higgins and San Martin prepared to quit the capital, the former going to Valparaiso to embark for Peru, the latter to Mendoza. Lord Cochrane had departed for England on the 16th of January, the government owing him some $60,000 on account of prize money, according to his claim.

When General O'Higgins reached Valparaiso, General Freire arrived there on board the "Independencia" which came conveying two transports bearing 1,500 men. The force was landed and O'Higgins taken into custody, but he was soon released by the request of leading citizens and went on his way. Freire then

marched his troops toward Santiago and issued a proclamation, disavowing all intentions of placing himself at the head of the government and pointing out what patriotic measures, in his opinion, should be adopted. He was as modest as he was ambitious; he encamped with his army at Maypo and kept himself out of the city; he refused and even fled when congress sent a messenger offering him the office of supreme-director; but a more urgent request had the desired effect. He was as coy as a maiden wishing to be wooed. He became supreme-director.

The prosecution of the war had not prevented O'Higgins attending to other interests of the young republic. He restored the public library in Santiago and the national university which had been suppressed by the royalists; he created a military academy, prohibited the unhealthy practice of burying the dead in the churches, founded the first cemeteries, constructed markets and boulevards (*paseos*), particularly the *paseos* in the *cañada* of Santiago, which until then were filled with rubbish. He gave freedom of commerce which led to a new impetus in trade, protected foreigners and promoted agricultural interests. The ancient Maypo canal was completed, and the water obtained from this for irrigating purposes made green fields of the sterile plains. Don Domingo Eyzaguirre engaged actively in promoting the completion of this work and afterward founded a town upon the plain which he called Bernardo in honor of O'Higgins.

O'Higgins managed fairly well the slender means at his disposal, for the revenues of the state were small and inadequate. In the last year of his administration it was found necessary to negotiate a loan in London of $5,000,000 and Don Antonio José de Irizarri was sent there for that purpose. He obtained the money

and thus began Chile's foreign debt. In effect, Bernardo O'Higgins was absolute king of Chile, governing without a constitution, laws or congress, though he himself desired the formation of a federation with a constitution. Despite his splendid services to the state his dictatorial position retarded the organization of a constitutional government. There was opposition to this centralized form of government, but while the war lasted, O'Higgins was able to keep the power, aided by the active influence of San Martin, the army, and intriguers who do not reflect much credit upon their superiors. The Carreras and Manuel Rodriguez fell victims to these intrigues, but in the end the advocates of constitutional and representative government forced O'Higgins to abdicate.

General O'Higgins was given an estate by the Peruvian government; there he passed the remainder of his days, dying at Lima in 1842, eight years before San Martin died in France.

PART III—THE ERA OF CONSTITUTION MAKING

CHAPTER I

THE LIBERALS IN POWER—FREIRE AND PINTO

General Freire was renowned and brave as a soldier, courteous as a gentleman, well-meaning as a patriot, liberal as a statesman, but he succeeded no better than O'Higgins in the trying position of supreme-director. A general overhauling of the ministry and an investigation of Rodriguez' robberies took place; reforms were the order of the day. But as is usual in these recurring spasms of public reform, nothing practical was accomplished, and affairs under the new liberal government were soon in as disordered a condition as under the old. The public soon discovered that the new order of patriotism effected only a change of men; peculations, procrastinations, and bad faith still continued in the public offices as during the old régime.

Freire adopted the tactics San Martin used in Peru; he disclaimed personal responsibility; he refused to act personally upon troublesome questions and referred everything to congress. Congress was as little responsible, for it held its sittings only during a few weeks of the year, and did little else than discuss ques-

tions of etiquette when it was in session. A new tariff schedule was constructed, but was soon found to be quite as obnoxious as the old system. Toward the end of the year 1823, a new constitution was promulgated in which it was sought to formulate a representative government without representation, in other words to keep the power in the hands of the oligarchs, and all public offices and officers were to be under the surveillance of an aristocratic committee, or of the aristocratic senate. The duties of the director, ministers, senators, representatives and other officers, were minutely defined and due guards placed over the official lives of each, while public morals were carefully looked after in the declaration that, "habits, exercises, duties, public instruction, rituals, and pleasures, were to be transformed into laws, laws into customs and customs into civic virtues, and morals."

The constitution passed in 1823, was similiar to this, but somewhat less anomalous. The effect and intention was to perpetuate the power of juntas, of the oligarchical senate, of the rule of aristocrats. The result was general dissatisfaction, which was greatly augmented by the failure of an expedition, which Freire directed in person, against the island of Chiloé to drive the Spaniards from the archipelago. Great preparations were made for the expedition, both the military and naval forces being brought into active service. General Freire took the command, January, 1824, leaving the government in charge of Don Fernando Errázuriz. He landed without opposition on the island with a force of 2,500 men, but instead of advancing at once upon the two principal towns, he divided his forces and sent forward one-half against Castro, while the other half prepared to advance upon San Carlos. The first division, commanded by Colonel Beauchef, routed the royalists

at Mocopulli, but afterward fell into an ambush, became panic stricken, and fell back in confusion upon the other division. This defeat, with the constant rains prevailing, demoralized the whole army, which soon embarked and returned home, June, 1824, having suffered heavy losses.

So great was the dissatisfaction and demoralization prevailing at this time, that the British consul-general, Mr. Nugent, did not think it advisable to recognize the independence and present government of Chile, though he had been sent out for that very purpose. He foresaw plainly enough that the country was on the eve of another revolution.

During this time two Spanish men-of-war had appeared at the island of Chiloé, having arrived there soon after Freire's departure. It was not until near the middle of the year 1824, that the government at Santiago gained information of this, and then the news occasioned considerable commotion. General Freire feared an attack upon Valparaiso, and to provide against it as best he could, dispatched a force to that port. He wished to overhaul the old war ships in the port for defensive purposes, but the senate refused to vote the funds. This occasioned a split between the director and the senate, so that he dissolved that body, and set aside the new constitution.

Having made himself, in effect, dictator, Freire now ordered the war vessels to be refitted; this required several months and the pay of the sailors was in arrears, so that they refused to do anything until they were paid. Taxes were levied, licenses granted, and a sufficient revenue raised to pay the men a portion of the amounts due them and complete the equipment, the total expense being about $100,000. Satisfied with this, the fleet put to sea toward the end of the year

1824, under the command of General Blanco Encalada, in search of the Spanish vessels, which seemed to have had no other reason for staying several months at Chiloé than that their crews were sick. As soon as their men were well they went on to Peru.

Director O'Higgins had sent to Rome the patriotic canon, Don José Ignacio Cienfuegos, to arrange certain ecclesiastical matters and to undertake the work of reuniting the different elements of the Romish church in Chile. He returned in the first part of the year 1824, at the time General Freire was absent on his expedition to Chiloé, and was accompanied by the apostolic vicar, Don Juan Muzi. This person came with full authority from the Pope to act in the premises, bringing with him a secretary, and was accompanied by the Roman canon, Mastai Ferreti, who some time after became Pope Pius IX.

These eminent prelates were received in Chile with some apprehension, as it was reported and generally believed that they served secretly the interests of the king of Spain and the sovereigns of the Holy Alliance, who had great influence with the Pope, and that they desired to see a return of the American colonies to their former allegiance to the mother country. The vicar associated much with the bishop of Santiago, Don Jose Santiago Rodriguez, a pronounced royalist, and with others whose sympathies were with the defeated cause of the king. This caused the patriots to look upon him askance and month after month passed, finding the government and the vicar more and more out of sympathy, until at last there came a decree from the government removing Rodriguez from the bishopric and installing the patriotic Cienfuegos in the office. Persisting in his opposition, Rodriguez was some time after banished from the country and went to Spain.

Other decrees followed with a view to regulating ecclesiastical matters, some convents were suppressed, certain religious functions were prohibited and a considerable amount of church property was converted to the use of the state. Failing in his mission, Muzi asked for his passports and embarked for Rome, after a residence of eight months in the country.

One of the most pressing difficulties with which Freire had to deal, was the depleted condition of the public treasury. He had come into office chiefly because of the dissatisfaction which prevailed by reason of the condition of financial affairs under O'Higgins' administration. Yet even during O'Higgins' six years of rule the resources of the state had been sufficient to balance the expenditures, while very soon under Freire, 1824, the expenditures amounted to two and one-half millions of dollars, the revenues to but little over a million.

In this trying situation dangerous expedients were, perforce, resorted to, one of which was the confiscation of monasterial property throughout the state, and the application of it to the service of the government. Again, the old monopolies of staples, once sold to private corporations by the government, the *estancos*, were resorted to. The interest on the public debt due in London amounted to about $400,000 a year. To discharge this, the Freire government sold to a company of merchants, landholders and British agents, Portales heading the company, the sole right to import tobacco, to grow it, and to sell it for a period of twenty years. At the end of that time they were to pay off the whole debt; the government meanwhile was to foster the monopoly by a grant of a half million dollars. A subsequent congress ratified this agreement with the clause left out by which the company agreed to dis-

charge the principal of the debt at the end of twenty years. Perhaps the reason why that important clause was omitted, may be found in the fact that influential persons in the capital held stock. The company was intolerable to the people and occasioned so much dissatisfaction that it soon came to fear the results and refused to discharge the obligation.

In the following year excitement ran so high that an attempt was made to assassinate two deputies, Don Joaquim Campino and Don Bernardo Vera, both warm friends of Freire. An investigation revealed the fact that several deputies were deep in the plot; this led the government to a determination to avert, if possible, the gathering storm. A proposition was made to congress that it should dissolve and place the supreme authority in the hands of the director.

On the 16th of May, 1825, congress did as it was recommended to do, dissolved. An exposition was made by the majority of the legislative body, numbering nineteen delegates, of the causes which had led to is dissolution. It cited riotous acts which had occurred on the nights of the 12th, 13th, 14th and 15th of the month, when armed citizens had appeared at the bar of the house shouting tumultuously, while others outside were proclaiming the omnipotence of the people and clamoring for the removal of a member who had offended them in a recent speech. These things they declared were the flashes preceding the blow, anarchy was fully exhibited, the sanctuary of the law had been profaned, the majesty of the people violated in the persons of their representatives. The house, they maintained, had resolved to meet in secret session, but its deliberations were further interrupted by the people; it had adjourned until 10 o'clock the following day, but the disorder still prevailed. On the last day of the session

there were such scenes that these delegates declared, "We may be permitted, in honor of the country, to pass silently the occurrences which took place within the house that day. They were such that the undersigned, abandoning all hope of a central assembly, declared their absolute separation, and retired to communicate it to their constituents, and resolved unanimously to notify the executive, recommending to him the public peace, so greatly disturbed." They closed their exposition by expressing regret that they had passed no important laws during their sitting.

On the 6th of July, Freire issued a *convocatoria*, calling a congress for September 5th. This was intended to be a general constituent congress composed of public deputies freely elected by each district, on the basis of one deputy to each 15,000 of population. Six days afterward the director issued a proclamation to the people setting forth the urgent circumstances which had led him again to convoke a general congress. Europe had recognized the independence of Mexico, Colombia and Buenos Ayres, it was desirable that Chile should be so recognized; the new governments of South America had extended an invitation to assist and prepare a form looking to a general South American assembly, the purpose of which was to form a grand pact, or union, of all the states; the government was embarrassed by the lack of a code and was without authority to establish principles or a policy adapted to the institutions. The director declared that he had no other interest at heart save that of the greatest good of the country, and from motives of delicacy announced that he would withdraw, during the period of the election, all the governors dependent on the directorial nomination, in order that the slightest influence on the part of the government should not be exercised.

However, when congress convened it was a mere assembly of the province of Santiago; hardly a week had elapsed before it attempted to assume the whole authority of the government. On the 13th of September, a popular movement had taken place at Valparaiso, the purpose being to pass resolutions censuring some of the measures of the minister of revenue in respect to that port. The government, as a matter of precaution, and to reëstablish order and stop the spread of the demonstration, stationed a body of one hundred cavalry on the road near Valparaiso to await news and observe the result. The Santiago representatives, who were in sympathy with the movement in Valparaiso and had received secret communications from there, gave orders to the government that no force should be sent out. Some altercations took place, when the Santiago representatives demanded to know whether or not they were recognized by the executive as the congress. The director replied that they were not, and that he would not obey resolutions which they might pass on general affairs.

After protracted discussions the representatives decided that on the morning of the 7th of October, the magistrates resident in the capital should take an oath of recognition and obedience to them as the only authorized national congress. The director then decided to resign his position and quit the capital until the matter could be settled. This he did, withdrawing a distance of five leagues, accompanied by a body of cavalry. The representatives then named Don Juan Francisco Sanchez supreme-director of the nation. But a majority of the inhabitants of the city adhered to the cause of Freire and issued an address on the 8th, entreating him to return and dissolve the assembly of representatives, who unlawfully styled themselves the con-

gress. At the same time, they withdrew the power of the seven Santiago representatives and subjected their conduct to the consideration of a commission appointed for that purpose, consisting of eight distinguished citizens. Freire was asked to take necessary steps for the public tranquillity and to secure the persons causing trouble and anarchy.

A circular was addressed to the people by the government, setting forth the disturbances as a reason for dissolving the false congress. A measure of security was promulgated, banishing eleven individuals, distinguished citizens of Santiago, who had been prominent in fomenting the disturbances, and also giving immigrants who had lately landed from San Juan, disaffected chiefs, twenty-four hours to leave Chile. Other ministers were nominated to all the departments of public business, Campino, foreign affairs, Novoa, war and marine, Benevente, revenue; and the director gave assurances that another and constituent congress should be soon assembled.

On the 12th, the director named in a public decree a body, called the "Consulting Council," composed of the ministers of the government, the president of the supreme court of justice, the chief of the court of appeals, and others, who should sit twice a week and aid him in expediting the serious affairs of state, and agree upon means for the best management of his office.

Disorganization had been general and parties had now become more sharply defined. The liberal party, arising originally from the reaction against the dictatorial policy of General Bernardo O'Higgins, formed now diverse factions, such as the federalists, who advocated, with Don Jose Miguel Infante as their spokesman, a federal form of government with the provinces as states, and the pipiolas, who were followers and

admirers of General Pinto. Opposed to the liberals were various factions of the conservatives, clericals, and the O'Higginistas, who dreamed of some day being able to reinstate the illustrious exile in power. Conservatives were nick-named Pelucones, because that party was composed chiefly of old and venerable persons who wore pelucas, or perukes.

It was not long before there was a revolt of royalists in the island of Chiloé. Freire with three thousand men, defeated these royalists in the battles of Pudeto and Bella-Vista. The island of Chiloé, like Callao, had long held out in favor of the royalists, but on the fifteenth of January, 1826, it capitulated, upon the stipulation being made that it should be received into the republic of Chile as a province and on equal terms with the other provinces, and that the officers and troops of the Spanish army, commanded by General Antonio Quintanilla, might remain in Chile so long as they should desire to do so; prisoners on both sides were set free. Callao surrendered to the patriots about the same time. There was a strong sentiment on the island in favor of the ex-director, O'Higgins. It was claimed in Chile that the many disturbances on the island had been instigated by exiled Chileans residing in Lima, and by the advice of Bolivar, for the purpose of establishing in Chile a strong centralized government such as Bolivar was seeking to establish in the northern provinces. Certain it was, that most of the troops in the revolts were blacks from Peru led by Peruvian officers. No doubt there was a strong party in Chile at this time in sympathy with the movement, while on the other hand, there was a strong feeling of jealousy entertained by another party against Bolivar.

On July 4th, 1826, congress met and continued in session for the uncommon period of one year. It

received Freire's message and with it his resignation, then appointed Blanco Encalada as provisional director, but after two months Encalada resigned in disgust and Freire was reinstated, not, however, until after the vice president, Don Augustin Eyzaguirre, had made a futile attempt to guide the ship of state for a short time.

Congress decided to adopt the federal system, as opposed to the junta system of the Santiago oligarchs, a system which had been attempted by the congresses of 1823 and 1824, but so far without giving satisfaction. It divided Chile into eight provinces, as the probable members of the future confederacy, Coquimbo, Aconcagua, Santiago, Colchagua, Maule, Concepcion, Valparaiso and Chiloé. It established provincial assemblies in the provinces, whose business it should be to ratify the new constitution. It soon became apparent, however, that these assemblies were determined to proceed upon the principle of self-interest and to usurp authority which did not rightfully belong to them. They interposed objections and gave opinions in advance as to what should and what should not go into the constitution. The assembly of Concepcion met late in 1826, prepared a memorial to the general congress, strongly representing the total unfitness of the federal system for Chile, and favored the idea of a centralized form of government; Chile was a nation, not a confederacy of states, it should, therefore, have one, not many assemblies. Later, on the 15th of March, 1827, they again addressed congress to the effect that their delegates were instructed to oppose every scheme for a federal system, as tending against national unity. Coquimbo followed with similar measures, when congress refused to listen to further petitions of the kind, as they were clearly in the line of usurpations of au-

thority by the provincial assemblies, as those bodies had been created to act only upon such matters as might be presented to them by congress. Congress was in the anomalous position of having created states for the purpose of forming a confederacy and then having its children dictate terms to it.

Santiago went so far as to vote in its assembly that no law passed by congress should be binding upon that province without its consent; the Colchagua assembly took possession of the national funds in that province and appropriated them according to its own judgment. It was apparent to congress that it must dissolve the provincial assemblies; yet this could hardly be done and carry out the federal idea.

Following its plan of a federation, congress changed the title of the supreme-director to that of president, and created the office of vice president. Friere became, as a matter of course, president; Francisco Anibal Pinto, vice president. But this was not for long. Surrounded by difficulties and seeing no prospect of better things, Freire on the 2nd of May, resigned the presidency. His resignation was referred by congress to a committee, and on the 4th, the committee reported. As the report was considered to be too general, it was sent back to the committee and the next day was reported more specifically; first, they voted to accept the president's resignation, second, that the vice president should act as the executive, third that the president of the legislative body should signify to General Freire their sentiments of regret. The result was communicated to the president, with the accompanying request that he should continue to act until the authority could be regularly committed to the vice president.

Pinto was next communicated with and notified that he should fill the office made vacant by Freire's resig-

nation. On the 7th, Pinto sent a note to congress, resigning as vice president and giving his reasons for so doing, the chief reason being that the country was destitute of any laws. His resignation was not accepted, and the president of the house, Elizande, was sent to him with the request that he should appear in the legislative hall and take the oath of office as president. We can not be quite sure whether General Pinto was sincere in his resignation, or whether he was merely coquetting, as General Freire had once done.

On the following day, May 8th, General Pinto was introduced at the bar of the house. He acceded to the request of congress, took the oath and made a short address, in which he pointed out that bad laws were the cause of the disorders and asked congress to pass better ones forthwith; to which address Elizande made a fitting reply. Don Jose Miguel Solar was made minister of the interior and foreign relations, (afterward Don Carlos Rodriguez succeeded him,) Don Ventura Blanco of the treasury, Don Jose Manuel Borgoño, of war and marine.

General Pinto was an officer of distinction as well as a lawyer. He had served in the war of the revolution in South America, not only in Chile but also in the Argentine Republic and in Peru. He had served as minister under Freire and had traveled extensively in Europe. In short, next to Freire, he was the most illustrious citizen of the young republic. He held very decided views of political and social reforms, and was for that reason supported by the liberals, but was objectionable to the conservatives.

The last act of this notable congress was to appoint a national committee consisting of eight persons, who were authorized to approve or reject all propositions which the executive might submit, discharging the

duties of a council for the government and a provisional legislative body ad interim. It was also authorized to draw up the plan of a new constitution on the basis of such general principles as might be agreed upon by the cabildos and provincial assemblies.

There had been trouble meanwhile with the old enemies of Chile, the Araucanian Indians. They were incited to war by Mariloan, Pincheira, and other old royalists, who, when the patriots had come into power, had taken refuge with the Indians, maintaining afterward on the frontiers a desultory war of robbery and pillage.

Being now hard-pressed (1828) by the Chilean forces under General Borgoño and Colonel Beauchef, many of these Spanish refugees living with the Indians made overtures with the government of Chile for a return. Pincheira and many of his followers escaped; the Chileans recaptured many of the stolen cattle and set free about three hundred captives.

In 1827, Chile had dispatched two war frigates to assist Buenos Ayres in her war with Brazil. One of these was wrecked off Cape Horn and all on board perished; the other put back to Chile, so that the expedition came to naught.

Considerable excitement followed an affair in a Valparaiso theatre in the latter part of 1827. A British officer struck a Chilean, and soldiers were called in. One of them touched the officer with a bayonet, when the latter drew his pistol and shot him dead. All the British officers were arrested. Sir John Sinclair, the British admiral, and Mr. Nugent, consul-general, applied to the government for the release of the officers. The authorities were slow in giving up the prisoners and the admiral landed his marines. Then the British subjects were all released, save the one who

shot the soldier; he was retained for trial, but was released subsequently. Feeling for a time ran high.

On the 5th of April a decree was promulgated making Valparaiso the capital of the maritime department, and the port at which foreign men-of-war should receive and answer salutes.

Congress was inaugurated August 15th, 1828. It assembled first in Santiago but soon retired to Valparaiso. In time a new constitution was adopted which it was hoped would give satisfaction and bring stability to the government. It was a liberal constitution and unsatisfactory to the conservative party.

In July of the following year, 1829, General Pinto resigned, but two months afterward resumed his office, having been reëlected in the general elections, which also returned the congress.

The new assembly passed diverse laws bearing upon social and political reforms, but the passions of leaders and party spirit became more irritated and aggressive and made it almost impossible to carry on the government in the regular way. The pelucones, or conservatives, accused the president and congress of abuses and irregularities, and, unwilling to submit to the successes of the pipiolas, or liberals, began to conspire against them. Pinto divined the gathering storm and a month and a half after his reëlection, resigned his office into the hands of the president of the senate, Don Francisco Ramon Vicuña, in the midst of general disorder, November 2nd, 1829.

CHAPTER II

THE CONSERVATIVES IN POWER—PRIETO AND PORTALES—FREIRE'S REVOLUTION—EXPEDITION AGAINST PERU—THE BATTLE OF YUNGAY

There were rapid changes in the government before the conservatives came into power in 1830. Six presidents were elected one after another and one provisional junta, consisting of three members, was formed. General Pinto had been called to the presidency with the congratulations of every peace-loving, well-disposed person in Chile, and it was hoped that there would be an end to party dissensions. Pinto was in favor of making Valparaiso a strongly fortified place, of lessening the duties, storage and port charges, and doing away with transit duty. But turbulent times followed. The province of Concepcion undertook to separate itself from the general government, disorders prevailed, robberies were of daily occurrence, blood was shed, and foreigners fled to Valparaiso.

In 1829, General Prieto started a revolt on the Araucanian frontier with the army which was stationed there under his command. He marched upon the capital where the conservatives organized a provisional junta to conduct the government, disregarding the authority of Francisco Vicuña, who had been acting as president from the time of Pinto's resignation. Vicuña

went to Valparaiso and thence to Coquimbo, where he confided to General Lastra the command of the regular army.

Lastra and Prieto met at Ochagavia, two leagues from the capital, and some indecisive skirmishing took place. Then the two generals held a conference and agreed to lay down arms and to recognize Freire as the head of the government. With this agreement the conservatives would not comply, and, after a few days, Prieto occupied Santiago with his troops and his party proclaimed another junta composed of three of their own adherents, December 22nd, 1829.

This conservative junta invited the provinces to send delegates to the capital to form a congress. Having assembled they named as provisional president Don Francisco Ruiz Tagle. Tagle resigned office after a month and a half and his place was filled by Don Tomás Ovalle, the vice president, March 31st, 1830. Six days after, Ovalle named as his minister, Don Diego Portales, who had become the leader in the conservative reaction. The new government soon began to persecute the liberals and congress declared the proceedings of the former congress null and void.

The changes of government were so rapid that a Chilean paper in January of the year 1830, pictures the situation as follows: "We believe that the day is not far distant when the inquiry of every morning will be 'Who is governor to-day?'"

While the fighting and plundering continued, business was almost at a standstill and merchants suspended payments. A paper dated in May of 1830, stated that the cities of Chile were being plundered by contending generals. In the disturbances, the house of the French consul was stripped. It was, in fact, a time of general revolt throughout South America. One

dictator even went so far as to offer a reward of $2,000 for General Bolivar's head.

The conservatives having obtained political ascendency in Chile, the liberals called upon General Freire to lead them, for their enemies had broken faith and were persecuting them. Civil war followed; two thousand men were killed or wounded for party sake. The decisive battle of Lircay was fought, April 17th, 1830, in which the liberals were led by Freire, the conservatives by Prieto. Freire embarked at Valparaiso and came to Constitucion, from which place he advanced toward Talca. Prieto marched against him. The liberals, after great losses, were compelled to quit the field utterly defeated. In the battle the valiant Colonel Tupper, an Englishman, fell; Colonel Viel, a French officer, escaped, but was captured near Illapel. Freire was banished from the country and retired to Peru. From that time the conservatives appeared to be strongly intrenched in power. Ovalle died on the 21st of March, 1831, and General Prieto was named by congress as provisional president until the new elections.

General Prieto was elected to the presidency in the early part of 1831, and took his seat September 18th. At the same time the energetic Diego Portales was elected vice president.

The civil war brought to a close, the government dispatched General Bulnes against the Pincheiras, who had been ravaging the districts of Chillan, Maule and Colchagua. These desperadoes had enlisted the Pehuenche Indians with them and in the fastnesses of the lofty Cordillera felt themselves secure. Bulnes penetrated to their camp by Lake Epulauquen, took them by surprise and utterly destroyed them.

Another attempt was soon made to draft a new con-

stitution, that promulgated in 1828, being found unsatisfactory. This was accomplished May 25th, 1833, after two years of animated discussions; it was a conservative constitution, a "Pelucone" document, and gave the president extensive powers, the powers of a dictator in fact, but still made him a creature of the oligarchy. This constitution, as amended at different times and particularly in 1874, is the organic law of Chile at the present time. It was drawn by Don Mariano Egaña, a distinguished jurist. The liberals viewed with chagrin the successes of their opponents.

Three years after the new constitution had been adopted, there was another attempt to overthrow the conservative government. Ex-president Freire had been banished to Peru; there he watched the course of political events in Chile until he believed the time ripe for a successful revolution. He then hired two warships, the "Monteaguado" and "General Orbegoso," manned them with deserters and Chilean refugees, about eighty in number, and on the 7th of July, 1836, set sail for the island of Chiloé, which he expected to make a safe base for future operations and from which he could coöperate with the revolutionists on the mainland. He intended to have touched at the island of Juan Fernandez and have taken with him the Chileans banished thither by the Chilean government, but there was a mutiny aboard the "Monteaguado" which frustrated his plans. The crew of that ship imprisoned the officers and took the vessel into Valparaiso harbor, where they turned it over to the Chilean authorities.

The government at Santiago now took active steps to counteract Freire's plans and prevent a revolution. Excitement ran high and business was almost entirely suspended. An embargo was laid on Valparaiso. The harbor to that port was protected by gunboats, troops

were dispatched south, and the naval forces put into requisition and sent in search of Freire, who was supposed to be making his way to Chiloé.

These active measures doubtless prevented the revolution, which was fully expected in Chile at this time. Freire was seized after landing at Chiloé and the rebellion quickly suppressed. In the meantime, business had suffered greatly and many vessels had been detained in Chilean ports by the embargo.

This futile attempt of Freire was the last the old veteran made to recover and reëstablish liberal ascendency in Chile. The pelucones were now firmly established in the government. Freire was again banished, but eventually returned to Chile, where he lived apart from politics and died about the middle of the century.

It was not forgotten by Chile that Freire had obtained his warships and complement of men and stores in Peru, when he made this last attempt to overthrow the conservative power. It was generally thought that Peru had given him secret aid. There were other grievances as well. Peru and Bolivia had formed a confederacy under the leadership of General Andres Santa Cruz, the president of Bolivia. The confederacy was formed of Upper and Lower Peru and Bolivia, each with a separate congress and president, but with Santa Cruz at the head. This naturally may have caused feelings of jealousy on the part of Chile.

In Peru affairs had been for some time in a turbulent condition. The ambitious Santa Cruz of Bolivia had long since conceived the idea of uniting Peru and Bolivia in a confederacy, with himself as the head. Generals Gamarra and Salaverry in Peru were heading a revolt against the president, Orbegoso, and were on the eve of being successful, when the latter ratified a treaty with Santa Cruz, in June 1835, by which the

Bolivian president agreed to enter Peru with an army to restore order, Orbegoso, on his part, promising to convoke an assembly to further Santa Cruz' scheme for a confederacy. Santa Cruz threw an army of 5,000 men into Peru and defeated Gamarra at Yanacocha near Cuzco, August 13th, 1835, and Salaverry in the battle of Socabaya near Arequipa, February 6th, 1836.

Following the battle of Socabaya, the revolutionary leaders, Salaverry, Fernandini, Solar, Cardeña, Rivos, Carrillo, Valdivia, Moya, and Picoaga, were condemned and villainously shot in the public square of Arequipa. This bloody affair, perpetrated despite the fact that General Miller, in receiving the surrender of the revolutionary chiefs, had guaranteed safety to their persons, turned the Salaverry-Gamarra faction of the Peruvians still more bitterly against the self-styled protector, Santa Cruz; and, though repressed, the revolutionists bided their time. Gamarra had escaped the massacre, with such officers as La Fuente, Torrico, San Roman, Elespuru and others and now watched for an opportunity to strike an effective blow. Santa Cruz entered Lima in October 1836, and proclaimed the confederation of North and South Peru and Bolivia.

The government of Chile, being at this time in the hands of the wealthy pelucones, found a pretext for war with Peru in the Freire affair, and in the further fact that the town of Arica had been made a free port by the confederacy, which consideration caused vessels to pass the ports of Chile; further it was argued that advantages were given to vessels by Peru which had not touched at any port in Chile, over those which did call at Chilean ports. Portales was the man to take prompt action, but his action can hardly be justified. Availing himself of the disordered condition of affairs in Peru, he dispatched the two war vessels, the "Aquiles" and

"Colocolo," to Callao harbor. Garrido commanded them, and he was as prompt as Portales: he immediately seized the three Peruvian warships lying unmanned in the harbor. This bloodless victory and capture of a nation's fleet occurred on August 21st, 1836. On the 11th of November following, Chile declared war, but took no active steps until September of the following year. At that time General Blanco Encalada sailed from Valparaiso with eight warships, twenty transports, and 3,500 troops.

He landed at Islay and on the 12th of October marched to Arequipa. In this desert city he was cooped up by Santa Cruz's able commander, General Cerdeña, who, with an army of six thousand men, was able to cut off Blanco Encalada's supplies. This forced the latter to capitulate on the 17th of November. The treaty of Paucarpata was signed, the Chileans agreeing not to renew the war and to return the Peruvian fleet.

This treaty was made in good faith and Chile should have abided by it. But she did not; she immediately began preparations for a renewal of the contest. The war, however, was unpopular with the liberals; a mutiny broke out, men and officers allying themselves with the liberals and denouncing the war with Peru. The mutiny was suppressed, but it resulted in the death of Portales, who was shot by the mutineers, June 6th, 1837. He was reviewing the army stationed at Quillota under the command of Colonel Vidaurre. By order of their leader the troops seized the minister, declaring that they rose in rebellion against the conservatives because they were opposed to foreign war and were in favor of reêstablishing a liberal government. The revolutionists then marched toward the capital but were met and defeated at a place called the Hill of the Baron by militia troops commanded by General Blanco

Encalada. During the progress of the combat an officer named Florin, who was guarding Portales, compelled him to descend from his carriage when he shot him. Vidaurre and the other principal leaders of the riot were apprehended and shot.

A second expedition sailed from Valparaiso in July destined for Ancon, where it landed, August 6th. Generals Bulnes and Santa Cruz commanded the army numbering about six thousand men. This was reinforced by disaffected Peruvians, under Gamarra, and then the Chileans advanced upon Lima. The Peruvian president, Orbegoso, was defeated at Portada de la Guia. General Bulnes was declared general-in-chief of the allies and the Peruvian general, Gamarra, director-general of the war. Santa Cruz, who had been somewhat embarrassed by the defection of his ally, Orbegoso, pushed forward toward the capital, while Bulnes retreated to Callejon de Huaylas. That the Peruvians did not instantly overwhelm the invaders is not strange, since there were now three factions of them contending for supremacy, the Santa Cruz, Orbegoso and Gamarra adherents, all determined to rule or ruin.

After considerable manœuvering, the destruction of the fleet of the confederacy at Casma by Robert Simpson, one of Lord Cochrane's old officers, and one severe skirmish on January 6th, 1838, the armies met at Yungay, January 20th. Here a sanguinary battle was fought, resulting in a complete victory for the allied Chilean and Peruvian armies, though they lost seven hundred men in killed and wounded. The confederation was broken up, and Gamarra, through Chilean influence, was made provisional president of Peru. Santa Cruz retired from the country and went abroad.

Prieto and Portales had been successful in the war against Peru and Bolivia, they had administered the

government with marked ability, but their pelucone policy was as retrograde and illiberal as could well be imagined in a nation professing to be a republic. Still, as the conservatives claim for this administration, many substantial institutions were built up. A constitution, such as it was, they succeeded in establishing. Literature was fostered, and Chile at this time became the home of several celebrated scholars. Such men as de Mora the poet, Bello the writer on international jurisprudence, Claudio Gay the naturalist, and Gorbea the mathematician, are a glory to the nation.

Don José Joaquin de Mora was a distinguished Spanish poet and litterateur, who visited various American countries, writing and teaching. President Pinto gave decided assistance and protection to the school de Mora established, the *Liceo de Mora.* In opposition to de Mora the pelucones founded the college of Santiago, giving it in charge of Don Andrés Bello, a Venezuelan patriot and an old friend of Bolivar. He came from Europe in 1829, and established himself in Chile, becoming the highest literary authority in Spanish America. For thirty-six years he lived in Chile, occupied with jurisprudence, philosophy and literature. Until his death he was at the head of the university; he wrote several notable works. Though holding public office at different times he held aloof from party strife.

Claudio Gay came from France, having been engaged as professor for the college of Santiago. The young naturalist undertook many scientific excursions, observed closely the natural history of Chile, collected insects, birds, plants, etc, and inaugurated a movement which resulted in the establishment of the public museum of natural history. He examined the archives of the nation and, returning to Europe, wrote and pub-

lished at the cost of the state, his important history of Chile, "*Historia fisica i politica de Chile.*"

Don Andrés Gorbea, the Spanish mathematician, was for thirty years professor of the exact sciences in the university of Santiago. He had gone there from London with the Chilean minister, Don Mariano Egaña.

It was at the close of President Prieto's administration, 1841, that William Wheelwright, an American, began to run steamers between Valparaiso and Callao, the first in the Pacific. An English company was formed which afterward put the two steamers, the "Chile" and the "Peru," on the line between Valparaiso and Callao, and later still ran them to Panama. Wheelright also projected the railroad from Caldera to Copiapo, which was the first line constructed in South America, and undertook other important works that have made his name celebrated in both Chile and Argentina. The Chileans have honored his memory with a fine statue in Valparaiso.

After the expatriation of the bishop, Rodriguez, the apostolic vicar, Don Manuel Vicuña, governed for a time the diocese of Santiago. He was humane and charitable. The distinguished patriot priest, José Ignacio Cienfuegos, was made bishop of Concepcion. At the close of Prieto's administration an archbishopric was established in Santiago and bishòps appointed for La Serena and Ancud; this was done by special decrees of Pope Gregory XVI. Vicuña was made first archbishop in 1841, but died after two years. The dean, Don José Alejo Eyzaguirre, succeeded Vicuña and held the office one year when he resigned. Don Rafael Valentine Valdivieso, a lawyer, was, in 1848, consecrated as archbishop and held the office for the long term of thirty years. The bishoprics of La Serena and Ancud were not long maintained.

In the last year of Prieto's administration Chile had become an attractive market for European wares. During the month of January, 1840, alone, seventy foreign vessels entered Valparaiso with goods. Prices in consequence declined. American flour, sugar, domestics, English goods of all kinds, declined in price to nearly home cost. The market was soon overstocked, a benefit to the Chilean consumers, though a matter of much complaint among the foreign merchants and tradesmen.

The president's message to congress on July 26th, 1840, gave the revenues of Chile for the closing year at $2,289,108, expenditures $1,700,000. This was a good showing for the finances, and $200,000 was remitted to London to pay interest on foreign bonds. New customhouses were erected at Valparaiso during the year at a cost of $100,000.

CHAPTER III

THE ADMINISTRATION OF BULNES—THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT MONTT—THE CIVIL WAR OF 1859

General Manuel Bulnes was naturally the hero of Chile after having defeated Santa Cruz at Yungay. Chile adores her military heroes and cherishes their memories with national pride. Bulnes had fought at Maypo, at Ochagavia, at Lircay, and also against Benavides and the Pincheiras. General Prieto, the hero of Lircay, had been sufficiently honored by two terms in the presidency, he was now succeeded by General Bulnes, who was a pelucone and a military hero of the old school, like his predecessor. He was a man of good judgment and made up in natural qualifications what he lacked in high birth and education.

The new president was inducted into his high office in September, 1841, and immediately honored his associate in the late war, General Cruz, with the war portfolio. He formed his cabinet by naming leaders of different factions and parties for the different departments; Don Manuel Montt was made minister of public instruction and justice, Don Manuel Renjifo, of foreign affairs.

With such men at the head of the government militarism and peluconism were paramount, although Bulnes began his administration by declaring a general

amnesty toward political offenders and inviting exiles to return. The policy of the administration was pelucone so far as liberal and republican sentiments were concerned. Although the government was at first conciliatory it soon began persecutions and became as retrograde and oppressive as under Prieto.

Prieto had encouraged literature of a kind bearing the aristocratic stamp and Bulnes continued the policy. The new university at Santiago was inaugurated by Minister Montt in 1843. Don Andrés Bello, the author of a well known work on the law of nations, was installed as first rector. The members of this state institution were authorized to prepare a national history; Bello was intrusted with the task of writing a civil code, a work of which Chile stood much in need. Schools were also established for teaching the different branches, such as agriculture, navigation, art and music.

Literary periodicals appeared at this time and promoted a new zeal for literary and educational affairs; religious matters came to be discussed with much warmth, for there were outspoken sceptics who were not backward in expressing their ideas; considerable attention was given to art, particularly after the arrival of the celebrated French painter, Monvoisin; a new impetus was given to theatrical matters by the introduction of lyric operas. Argentine exiles, escaping from the tyranny of Rosas, contributed with their pens to the literary awakening. One of these, Don Domingo Faustino Sarmiento, became in time the principal of the normal school, which was established in Santiago for the purpose of preparing competent teachers for educational work.

The school of arts, when established, was given in charge of a Frenchman, Jariez. The Neapolitan painter,

Cicarelli, was also invited to come to Chile at the time the academy of music was founded. Extensive buildings were erected for educational purposes, a naval school was started, a school of agriculture founded, and a department of education created in the government. A Frenchman, Pissis, was given in charge the work of preparing a topographical chart of Chile and making a geological survey. These commendable efforts were chiefly due to the zeal of Manuel Montt.

It was at this time that German colonists were first induced to settle in Valdivia.

The discovery of gold in California opened a market for Chilean wheat and flour and gave a new impetus to commerce and agriculture. Wheat began to be grown extensively for the Californian and Australian markets and brought exorbitantly high prices. The mines of Copiapo began to yield their inexhaustible wealth, the Chañarcillo mine having been discovered some years before by Juan Godoi. Prosperity brought a large increase in the public revenues and the future of Chile seemed bright. But California and Australia began to grow wheat, and the prices of minerals steadily declined. Seven or eight years later a financial panic ensued which brought Chile to the verge of bankruptcy.

A colony was established in 1843, on the Straits of Magellan, for the purpose of occupying the bleak and uninhabited countries of the south and promoting the interests of navigation. This colony, Punta Arenas, was some years later, 1851, the scene of Cambiaso's rebellion—a fierce fellow, an officer of the garrison, who perpetrated most horrible cruelties for which he paid the penalty on the gallows in Ancud.

The foreign debt was consolidated and found to be something over eight millions of dollars. Interest had not been promptly met; this was now capitalized, and

afterward paid promptly for several years. At this time the internal debt was about four millions of dollars.

General Bulnes' administration was firm during his first term, and gave stability to Chilean institutions. It is barren of military incidents for the reason that the country enjoyed peace, and now began, after the first formative dissensions during the time the young republic was learning self-government, to become prosperous under a constitution and more stable laws. People began to turn their thoughts to other matters than war.

In 1846, General Bulnes was elected president for a second term and again sought to carry out his plan of conciliation. His minister, Vial, gave some assurances to the liberals, who had been outspoken in their opposition. These reform tendencies alarmed the pelucones. José Joaquin Perez, Antonio Garcia Reyes and Manuel Antonio Tocornal, were taken into the cabinet. They were moderate conservatives. But they were soon obliged to give up their places to conservatives more conservative. The liberals had a majority in the congress of 1849, and an agitated session was the result. The government influence, however, and the want of discipline and harmony in the ranks of the opposition soon caused the liberal majority to disappear. But the conservatives were well aware of their own waning influence with the people, and to hold power again resorted to violent repressions and prepared to elect as Bulnes' successor a president who would make no compromises. That man was Manuel Montt, and he was ably seconded in his presidential candidacy by Don Antonio Varas of the ministry. To oppose the combination favoring the interests of Montt, the liberals formed a society in Santiago called *La Igualdad* (The Equality), the leading spirit of which was Don Fran-

cisco Bilbao. One night while the society was holding a meeting a party of administration sympathizers entered the room and dispersed the members.

In 1851, Don Manuel Montt, Bulnes' able minister of justice and public instruction, was elected president, but not without strong opposition. The liberals, enraged at the treatment they had received, determined to make a strong fight to regain ascendency and nominated as their candidate General José Maria de la Cruz, who had fought with General Bulnes at Yungay and had been his late minister of war. The efforts which the contending parties made to win in the forthcoming elections led to a revolt and armed conflicts, nearly amounting, in fact, to a revolution. The first clash came in April, the liberal forces being commanded by Colonel Urriola. There was a severe conflict with the government forces at Santiago during Holy Week, in which Colonel Urriola lost his life and between two and three hundred were killed and as many more wounded before the insurrection was put down, April 20th.

In September the revolution broke out afresh, first in Coquimbo, afterward in Concepcion, headed by General José Maria de la Cruz in person, the defeated liberal candidate. There were several unimportant combats, in which the revolutionists were usually victorious. But government money was freely used and intrigues were rife. Extraordinary powers were given to the president and General Bulnes was assigned the command of the government forces. The commerce and industries of the country were paralyzed and suffered untold injuries in these wars of the factions. For more than two months the struggle continued, then came the decisive battle of Loncomilla on December 8th, 1851. It was a hard fought, bloody struggle.

Cruz was defeated, and afterward, in a conference with Bulnes, he and his troops laid down their arms. The revolution was crushed, but in this factional strife more than four thousand men yielded up their lives. This formidable revolt shows well the strength and energy of the liberals at this time, and the government wisely granted a general amnesty to the defeated insurgents.

Under President Montt the country made considerable material advancement. In May, 1851, a new tariff had been adopted by which differential duties on goods were abolished. This measure gave great satisfaction to one class of the people, the consumers, if it did not tend to improve the revenues. The new civil code which Bello was to prepare was soon given to Chile; tribunals of commerce were organized; a discount and deposit bank was established at Valparaiso; later, January 1st, 1856, a bank was founded to loan money on real estate. A law was passed, with the assent of the church, to convert church tithes into a tax; a law was also passed to reorganize municipal institutions. Money was now for the first time coined on the decimal plan, the Spanish system being discarded. A bill was introduced in 1854, to readmit the Jesuits, and Capuchines were invited to establish missions among the Araucanians. Treaties of commerce were concluded with France, with Sardinia, and with the United States, Great Britain and the Argentine Republic. Public libraries were established and schools multiplied. The telegraph was introduced. A railway between Valparaiso and Santiago was projected, the government subscribing $2,000,000 for the purpose; gas was introduced into the cities, the extensive coal mines of Lota and Coronel were opened, Puerto Montt was founded, and other colonies of Germans were induced to settle in

the southern provinces. A political alliance, for mutual protection against attacks from abroad, was formed with Peru and Ecuador in 1856, Costa Rica soon after joining it.

President Montt was elected to a second term in 1856; the elections for congress in 1858 were also carried by the government, though opposed by both the conservative and liberal parties. But Manuel Montt, with his favorite minister Varas, who was to him what Portales had been to Prieto, governed Chile with pitiless severity. All attempts to introduce more progressive political institutions than such as tended to improve Chile for aristocrats, were summarily suppressed, while many leading liberals were driven from the country. Montt and Varas were the apostles of government by the classes, and they openly defied congress when congress was not in harmony with them. They formed a new party in Chilean politics, the Montt-Varistas, believing in aristocratic government, though allied at times with both the conservatives and the liberals.

Against this iron government insurrections at last broke out in several places. The government's measures of repression, made more odious by a law which placed the cities largely under the political control of the government, gave great dissatisfaction.

For a time the clergy and the president had acted in harmony, but a question arose which in the end arrayed the church against him. The expulsion of a sacristan from the cathedral gave rise to a dispute which caused two leading prelates, suspended by ecclesiastical authority, to have recourse to the supreme court. The court gave a decision which the archbishop discredited and with which he would not comply. This was the venerable Valdivieso. The government was enraged and would have banished the archbishop, per-

haps, but the latter left for Europe of his own accord. This caused a rupture between the clergy and the government and the former was joined by the pelucones, dissatisfied now with the president they had elected.

There were many citizens imprisoned or banished for political offenses, which the opposition now sought to have returned to civil rights. Some of the pelucones joined with the liberals and passed a general amnesty law through congress, in spite of the protests of the government. This still farther separated the pelucones from the government. A new ministry was formed with Salvador, San Fuentes, and other leading liberals, as members, and for a time the agitation subsided. But at the end of three months the new ministers resigned and the opposition became pronounced.

The subsequent elections which soon followed (1858), increased the political ferment. For a time liberals and conservatives laid aside their ancient differences and united in opposition to the government. The president determined upon more stringent and repressive measures; newspapers were suppressed, meetings dispersed and leaders apprehended. The liberals insisted upon a revision of the constitution, making it more democratic in some of its provisions. A meeting was called in the capital, having for its object the formation of a club to agitate the question of constitutional revision. The government prohibited the meeting and apprehended those who assembled in pursuance of the call, December 12th. A state of siege was declared and repressive measures were more strenuously enforced. The result was a revolution, fomented by the liberals and abetted by many of the old pelucones. Copiapo, Talca, Talcahuano, San Felipe and Putaendo joined the revolutionists. The government had the army and the

resources of the nation with which to combat the opposition. Talca was taken, also San Felipe, which was sacked by the government's troops. The revolution in the south was soon suppressed.

For four months, during the year 1859, the civil war raged in the north with fury. Five thousand men fell, victims to party strife. Pedro Leon Gallo, a young, rich and popular leader, commanded the liberal forces. He occupied Copiapo, where he raised an army of one thousand men and defeated the government forces under Colonel Silva Chavez in the battle of Los Loros, March 14th, 1859. Then he entered and occupied Coquimbo and La Serena. By these successes he gained considerable popularity for the revolutionary cause. Another attempt was soon made by the opposition to organize in the south. One thousand men attacked Chillan, but were repulsed. This crushed the rebellion in the south and enabled the government to dispatch additional troops to the north.

In the following month, April 29th, another battle was fought, that of Cerro Grande, at La Serena. General Juan Vidaurre commanded the government troops, an army of four thousand men; Gallo led the liberals, numbering not over two thousand. Gallo was defeated and his troops routed and dispersed. The leader, with seven hundred of his men, crossed the Cordillera to San Juan; Le Serena and Copiapo were then occupied without resistance.

In September there was an outbreak at Valparaiso, but this, after considerable bloodshed, was suppressed; the intendente, General Vidaurre, the hero of Cerro Grande, was killed in the riot September 18th. Then followed a general banishment of leading liberals, such as Gallo, Vicuña Mackenna, Santa Maria and many others. Some retired to Peru; others went to Europe

and there patiently awaited the time when there should be a change of the government before they could hope to return in safety to their native soil. A law, called the law of civil responsibility, was passed after much opposition, and by its terms citizens taking part in riots and revolutions must answer with their persons and their property for damage caused. So long, therefore, as Montt was at the head of the government, political refugees dared not show their faces in Chile.

Congress passed the new civil code drawn by Bello, which had long been under consideration, toward the close of Montt's administration; also commercial and penal laws, and rules for court proceedings. Educational matters still continued to occupy the attention of the government, public works were completed and new undertakings essayed. A company, in coöperation with the government, pushed forward a railroad toward the south as far as Rancagua. To complete the railroad between Valparaiso and Santiago, the government obtained a loan in Europe of $7,000,000. The revolution retarded the work so that the line was not completed until 1863.

Varas had some time before resigned from the ministry, but it was well known that his counsels still prevailed with the administration. The names of Montt and Varas go down to posterity together, both eulogized and condemned. Naturally the party of the administration wished Montt's successor to be the able ex-minister. But it was forseen that his canvass would meet with stubborn resistance and might result in defeat, or even in a new revolution. Varas, therefore, refused to be the official candidate and José Joaquin Perez was selected in his place. Having lived some years apart from politics, Perez would arouse few antagonisms and for that reason was at this time an available candidate.

CHAPTER IV

THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT PEREZ—OUTBREAK OF THE ARAUCANIANS—CHURCH QUESTIONS—THE WAR WITH SPAIN

Don José Joaquin Perez succeeded Montt as president. He was a diplomatic statesman who had studied politics in Europe and was not committed to strong views. The civil rebellion which had been but recently put down at the cost of so much blood, had quelled, but had by no means annihilated, the liberal party. Perez found it strong enough, clamorous for political and constitutional reforms and opposed to the iron rule of Manuel Montt and his party of nationals, who were only a little less conservative than the pelucones. There were also the advanced liberals—the radicals, or "reds," as they were called—under the leadership of Gallo and the Matta brothers. Perez entrusted power to a coalition of the moderate liberals and conservatives, aiming by this to effect a fusion of those elements. This soon led to an alliance between the Montt-Varistas and the "reds."

The new president had been almost unanimously elected, receiving two hundred and fourteen out of two hundred and sixteen of the electoral votes.* Two votes

*The electoral college in Spanish-American countries is usually dominated by the president and party in power. The electors are chosen by the people by bal-

were absent, but would, it is said, have been cast for him had they been present. The electors had been chosen on June 5th; on July 25th, they met and balloted, and on August the 30th, the assembled chambers opened the returns and made formal announcement of the result. On September 18th, 1861, the president-elect took his seat.

Señor Perez belonged to one of the first families of Chile, and began his political career in 1829, as secretary of legation in France. He had been sent as a special envoy to Buenos Ayres to effect an alliance with Rosas when Chile was at war with Bolivia, and had since that time been in the state council, minister of finance, of the interior, of foreign affairs, president of the chamber of deputies and of the senate. Preceding his election to the presidency, he had been some time out of active politics. His political training had well qualified him for the difficult position in which he was now placed.

He formed his cabinet partly of conservatives, partly of moderate liberals. He had barely been installed in office when he proposed to the chambers a general law of amnesty toward the late liberal leaders, which was adopted unanimously on October 8th, 1861.

This conciliatory policy, however, met with the usual result of all such attempts; the statesman who tries to conciliate is generally regarded with distrust, if indeed, he does not come to be cordially hated by all factions.

---

lot, but the fact that there are property and educational qualifications reduces the number of voters in comparison with the population, so that elections are more easily controlled. Thus it happens that the government can usually carry any election, and the opposition, unless strong, makes but a slight showing, or none at all. Unless the party out of power feels confident of being able to develop considerable strength it refrains from voting and the electors are chosen almost unanimously by the party in power. It is this which so frequently causes revolutions in Spanish-American states. A party in power can rarely be defeated in any other manner. New laws have been passed from time to time intended to remedy the defect, but so long as the voting population continues to be limited, so long will aspiring leaders precipitate revolutions, for the ballot can at no time be said to represent the will of the people.

The president's policy was now attacked by all parties, but the most savagely by the nationals, or Montt-Varistas, and this led in June to a change in his cabinet. The new cabinet, appointed on June 20th, 1862, was also composed of liberals and conservatives. Manuel Tocornal was made minister of the interior and of foreign affairs, Victorino Lastarria, of finance, Miguel Guemes, of justice, Marcas Maturano, of the war and navy departments. Two years later Tocornal and Lastarria were succeeded by Alvaro Covarrubias and Alejandro Reyes.

One of the first acts of President Perez' administration was an attempt to open negotiations with the Araucanians, for the purpose of bringing the Indians of the southern provinces into closer relations with the government. The governor of Nacimiento was charged with this undertaking. The Indians, however, stubbornly refused to negotiate. Their head toqui, Guentecol, wrote President Perez a haughty letter, and the chiefs of the nation refused to meet commissioners in a council

A singular turn was now given to the affair. Living among the Indians was a Frenchman, M. de Tounens, who induced them to believe him capable of defending them against the Chileans. They elected him head toqui, or king, with the title of Aurelie Antoine I. and framed a constitution.

King Aurelie caused considerable amusement in Chile for a time, but his majesty soon gave the government so much uneasiness that it was found expedient to devise means to rid the country of him. A plan was arranged in 1862, and the king was seized by disguised Chilean policemen, who mounted him upon a horse and compelled him to go with them, though his loyal sub-

jects were in hot pursuit. His majesty was afterward confined in prison.

Congress assembled in June, and the president's message noted reforms, and made numerous promises. Some difficulty was experienced over the ownership of some guano fields lately discovered off the coast of Mejillones. By the law of 1842, the government claimed the discoveries as public property. Subsequently it granted licenses to load vessels under certain restrictions, which tended to allay public dissatisfaction.

At the beginning of the year 1863, a claim was presented by the British representive for $50,000 damages on account of the loss of an arm by a young man named Whitehead, who had had some difficulty with a sentry during the late revolution. The attempt to enforce the claim excited the greatest indignation, and the British merchants of Valparaiso met to the number of four hundred, and denounced it as most unjust. Then the English government consented to modify the claim.

At the latter end of the year 1863, December 8th, a sad calamity occurred in a Jesuit church at the capital, which for a time caused great excitement. There was an evening service, and the huge cathedral, crowded with over three thousand persons, was brilliantly lighted and covered from floor to ceiling with ornamental designs of gauze, canvas and pasteboard. The decorations caught fire and the whole interior was instantly in a blaze, the flames enwrapping the people, who were unable to escape, as there was but one door and it was soon blocked up. In a few minutes two thousand people had perished, though on the outside every effort was made to rescue them.

This terrible calamity caused the government to issue an order that the church should be razed to the earth, and a legislative act was passed to the effect that no

RAILROAD BRIDGE BETWEEN SANTIAGO AND VALPARAISO.

illumination should be henceforth permitted. It also led to the formation of an effective fire brigade.

In the year 1863, President Perez opened the railway between Valparaiso and the capital, a road which had cost $12,000,000. A railway was also put in operation at Coquimbo, and a telegraph to Panama was projected. Montt had let the contract for the completion of the Santiago-Valparaiso line to Henry Meiggs, an American, and he had finished the work in two years.

The Chilean legislature took an active interest in the dispute between Spain and Peru, and there was considerable discussion at this time of the advisability of aiding Peru. Congress went so far as to prohibit Spanish war vessels from coaling in Chilean ports, and in view of the possibility of trouble with Spain, increased the estimates for the ensuing year by $2,000,000, the greater part of which was intended for the navy.

The government adopted active measures to aid colonization and appointed a commission, which met on the 25th of December, and formulated plans for inducing foreign immigration. A German colony at Puerto Montt had become so flourishing that they now had a town of over 15,000 population; beside this a number of other settlements of foreigners had sprung up in the south.

About this time, March 7th, 1864, the engineer, Durois made his famous report in favor of the practicability of constructing a railway over the Andes by way of the Uspallata pass. He estimated that it could be built in four years and at a cost of $8,000,000. The Uspallata pass is thirteen thousand feet above the sea, yet this railroad has been built over it.

In the month of July, 1865, an exciting debate was begun in the Chilean congress respecting the amendment of the fifth article of the constitution, which read

as follows: "The religion of the republic of Chile is the Roman Catholic, to the exclusion of the public exercise of any other." The debates terminated in a manner highly gratifying to the liberal party, notwithstanding the full strength of the clerical party was marshalled in opposition. The law as amended, permits worship by other denominations within buildings belonging to private persons or organizations, and further permits dissenters to establish and sustain private schools for the instruction of their children in the doctrines of their faith. As a matter of fact, the liberal elements of Chile have made the republic as religiously, socially and politically free as any republican living there could wish; and this evolution has been accomplished though at every step opposed by most bitter prejudices.

The Peruvian government had become involved in a serious difficulty with Spain in the spring of 1864. The Spanish government had sent an envoy, Señor Eusebio Mazarredo, to Peru to arrange certain diplomatic questions arising out of the killing of two persons and the wounding of four others at Talambo, in a difficulty between Peruvians and some Basque colonists who had a short time before arrived from Spain. The matter was under adjudication in the Peruvian courts, which are proverbially slow, when this interference was made. Señor Mazarredo insisted upon being recognized as "royal commissary," a peculiar title not very satisfactorily explained, and the Peruvian government would treat with him only as "confidential agent." This enraged Mazarredo, and forthwith he seized upon the Chincha guano islands, April 14th, 1864, claimed $3,000,000 indemnification, and took other high-handed measures, in conjunction with Admiral Pinzon of the Spanish fleet, to insult the government and retaliate

upon the Peruvians, whose independence he declared had never been recognized, although Spain had tardily signed a treaty of recognition with Peru in 1853.

The active sympathy which Chile manifested for Peru in this difficulty with Spain, the Spanish Admiral Pereja afterward declared to be a breach of international comity. Considerable diplomatic discussion had taken place and in May an arrangement of the matter had been reached with San Salvador de Tavira, Spanish Chargé d'Affaires in Chile, who deemed an explanatory note which the Chilean government transmitted to him as a sufficient amende honorable. The home government, however, recalled its representative on July 25th, 1865, and disapproved of his conduct. In September Admiral Pereja, who had succeeded Pinzon in the command of the Spanish fleet, sailed into Valparaiso harbor (September 17th, 1865), and notified the government of the non-approval of Tavira's settlement of the affair, and demanded immediate reparation, threatening to begin hostilities in case of a refusal. He formulated his complaints, which were to the effect that Chile had not made reparation, or sufficient apology, for certain insulting cries and threats uttered against Spain in front of the house occupied by the Spanish legation, that the publication of the paper called the "San Martin" had been allowed, and that it had constantly filled its columns with abuse of Spain, and further, that the Peruvian war steamer "Lerzundi" was allowed to coal and enlist men in Valparaiso, while coal was refused Spanish vessels.

Satisfactory explanations were demanded within four days for each of the grievances above enumerated and a salute of twenty-one guns by the Chilean forts to the Spanish flag. Otherwise, the admiral declared that he would feel himself bound to use force and to obtain

indemnification. The minister of foreign affairs replied at length to this as he had previously done to Señor Tavira, disclaiming that the riot before the Spanish legation was an insult to the Spanish flag, declaring that the paper "San Martin" had been publicly rebuked by the president, and that with respect to the coaling of the Peruvian vessels, the decree had been issued at a time when no state of open hostilities was supposed to exist between Spain and Peru, while, on the other hand, such a state did certainly exist when the Spanish vessels were refused the privilege, so that coal was then contraband. The minister closed by peremptorily refusing the proposal for the humiliating salute of the Spanish flag.

Pereja then issued a second ultimatum, September 22nd, declaring that unless his demands were complied with all diplomatic relations would be severed by the 24th, and that he would afterward seek indemnification with the force at his command. To this Chile replied that she would hold Spain responsible for all damage sustained by her if such a course were pursued. Efforts were made by the foreign diplomatic corps in Santiago to dissuade Pereja from the course he was about to take, but without avail, as his intentions evidently were to provoke a quarrel. Then the Chilean congress prepared for war. A war loan of $20,000,000 was authorized, and powers granted the president for raising troops and obtaining war vessels. Agents were dispatched to the United States and to Europe to procure munitions of war.

Admiral Pereja's fleet consisted of seven vessels in the ports of Chile, carrying altogether one hundred and sixty-seven guns, and one, the ironclad frigate "Numancia," of forty guns at Callao. With these he undertook to blockade some forty ports, but yielding

subsequently to the remonstrances of the diplomatic corps against the legality of the blockade the admiral soon confined it to six. He failed even to enforce a blockade against six ports and reduced the number to four, viz: Caldera, Coquimbo, Valparaiso and Talcahuano.

On November 26th, the Chilean war steamer, "Esmeralda," captured the Spanish gunboat "Covadonga" off Papudo after an engagement of thirty minutes, in which two Spaniards were killed and fourteen wounded. About one hundred and sixteen prisoners were taken, including six or seven officers. Don Juan Williams Robolledo, the commander of the "Esmeralda," was rewarded for his bravery by promotion. A Spanish launch mounting one gun, was also captured about this time by the "Independencia," a Chilean tug steamer mounting two guns. These two boats, the "Esmeralda" and "Independencia," constituted at this time Chile's entire fleet.

These disasters so discouraged Admiral Pereja that he committed suicide, November 28th, and was succeeded by Commodore Mendez Nuñez, of the "Numancia." Nuñez immediately raised the blockade of all the ports, except those of Valparaiso, and Caldera; against these he attempted to make it effective.

A few days after this on December 5th, Señor Santa Maria, who had been sent to Peru to conclude an offensive and defensive treaty with that nation against Spain, accomplished the result and the treaty was formally ratified by the Chilean congress on January 14th, 1866. President Pezet of Peru had been temporizing with the Spaniards; he was now supplanted by Prado in the presidency, and the latter formally declared war between Peru and Spain. Sometime after Ecuador and Bolivia entered the alliance.

The Spaniards had thus far accomplished little in

their offensive operations along the Chilean coast, except the capture of eight or ten merchant prizes. So soon as the treaty between Chile and Peru had been signed the fleets of the two republics united near the island of Chiloé, where they sought a place of safety, not being able to cope with their powerful adversaries.

Near the north end of the island in the harbor of San Carlos, an engagement took place, February 7th, between six of the small vessels of the allied squadron, assisted by the shore batteries, and two vessels of the Spanish fleet, the "Villa de Madrid" and "Blanca." After two hours of long-range cannonading, the latter vessels withdrew to Valparaiso. No great damage was sustained by either side.

Considerable diplomatic effort was made in March to bring about peace, the American minister, Kilpatrick, and Commodore Rodgers of the United States navy, using their best efforts toward that end. Chile demanded an unconditional abandonment of the war; Admiral Nuñez insisted upon certain requirements, to the effect that Chile should disclaim any intention to insult Spain, that she should give up the "Covadonga" in exchange for the twelve prizes captured by the Spaniards, and that there should be reciprocal salutes. Chile refused, and Nuñez proceeded to carry out a threat he had previously made to bombard Valparaiso, in case the Chileans did not accede to his terms.

Valparaiso was defenseless and the foreign residents and ministers protested earnestly against the barbarous measure, but Nuñez carried his threat into execution, perhaps by direction of his government. On the 31st of March, 1866, he bombarded the city for three and one-half hours, sparing nothing within range of his guns. Over ten millions of dollars worth of property was destroyed, nine millions of which belonged

to foreigners. A manifesto was prepared by all the consuls resident in Valparaiso and transmitted to their respective home governments; in this the bombardment was severely denounced.

The blockade of Valparaiso was raised on the 14th of April, and the Spanish fleet sailed north to begin the blockade of Callao. On the 2nd of May an action took place between the fleet and the Callao batteries which resulted in the repulse of the attack. The Spanish fleet retired to the island of San Lorenzo just outside the harbor. Nuñez was wounded in the engagement and afterward died of his wound. Galvez, the Peruvian minister of war, was killed in a magazine explosion, during the attack. Soon after the war was abandoned and the Spanish fleet withdrew, but it was a long time before the matter was settled on a peace basis.

The Chilean government now issued a decree ordering all Spanish residents in the republic to quit the country or take out naturalization papers; this resulted in a large number of Spaniards becoming citizens. Those who were not willing to submit to the decree retired to Buenos Ayres.

The presidential election of this year was not marked by any unusual circumstance, and resulted in the reelection of President Perez by a majority of two-thirds of the electors. The radicals of the liberal party and the nationals, or Montt-Varistas, sought to create an effective opposition by charging that the president and his war minister, Fredrico Errazuriz, had not brought the war with Spain to a satisfactory conclusion, for the matter was in abeyance a long time afterward; that ships which had been purchased in the United States for the war had been sold to merchants at a great sacrifice when actual hostilities had ceased; that the for-

tifications constructed in Valparaiso had largely increased the war debt, which amounted to over $20,000,000. These were the arguments, and they were vigorously combated by the coalition of conservatives and moderate liberals which supported the government, and with so much effect that the candidate of the nationals, the old hero Bulnes, was easily defeated.

In January, the United States minister, General Kilpatrick, sought to bring about peace by prevailing upon Chile to submit her controversy with Spain to the mediation of the United States. Chile would consent only under certain conditions and the matter was soon abandoned. Spain, she maintained, had acted in a manner wholly unjustifiable in occupying the Chincha islands on the 14th of April, 1864, and in blockading the ports of Chile on the 25th of September, 1865; Chile would not, therefore, renounce the reparation which she claimed Spain should make her. Hostilities were not resumed, and so far as Chile was concerned, the war only existed on paper from that time. Urged at last in 1869, by Peru, Bolivia, and Ecuador, Chile consented to submit the whole matter according to a plan previously suggested by the United States, namely, that plenipotentiaries from all the belligerent nations should meet in Washington U. S. A. and compromise their differences, the president of the United States acting as mediator. So the war, which was begun without reason, ended with no satisfactory results to any of the nations engaged in it. A treaty of armistice and of indefinite truce was signed in Washington on April 11th, 1871, that being as near as they could come to an agreement. The final treaty of peace between Spain and Peru was not signed until 1879. On the 14th of August of that year an agreement was reached at Paris. In the thirteen years in which the matter

had been kept in abeyance it had died a natural death, and there was in the end merely an abandonment of the whole controversy.

During the years 1866, 1867 and 1868, the government of Chile made strenuous efforts to occupy and colonize the country in the south. Settlements were established, and steadily increased during those years. Lands were granted free to colonists, and foreign immigrants locating upon them were made citizens of Chile without other or further steps at naturalization. A contract was entered into with Godeffroy and Son in Germany to send out emigrants of good character, such as were approved by the Chilean consul at Hamburg, who upon their arrival were to be assigned lands in Arauco. The colonists were to be furnished free passage, the government agreeing to pay forty dollars for the transportation of each adult and twenty dollars for each child under twelve. The contract was to continue for a period of four years, the government agreeing to pay for the passage of one hundred families the first year, one hundred and fifty the second, two hundred the third and three hundred the fourth, with the privilege given to Godeffroy and Son to increase the number twenty-five per cent, if they should choose to do so.

The Chilean government had at some time prior to this contracted for two corvettes in England, the "Chacabuco" and "O'Higgins." Pending the settlement of the dispute with Spain these vessels were held. Early in the year 1868, arrangements were made by the Chilean representative in London for the departure of these warships, consent being given by him for England to turn over to Spain two ironclads, which had been in like manner constructed for the Spanish government

and detained by the English pending the termination of the war in the Pacific.

During the year 1868, the Araucanian Indians caused considerable trouble in the southern provinces. In an attack, April 25th, upon a small outpost of Chilean troops, the latter were repulsed after several hours of hard fighting and compelled to retreat, leaving twenty-five of their number dead and wounded upon the field, among whom were several officers.

It was feared that the frontier settlements would suffer from incursions, and to protect them a body of 1,400 troops, with a park of artillery, was dispatched south under the command of Colonel San Martin. During the following year, the government troops acted upon the defensive. Despite their vigilance, the Indians made several successful inroads; about two thousand of them crossed the river Malleco and robbed, murdered and plundered the surrounding villages. Their object appeared to have been to steal cattle, and in this they were quite successful. But the Chilean troops retaliated; a party of eight hundred of them penetrated the Indian territories and drove off a great number of their cattle and sheep.

The severe southern winter set in and the troops were compelled to remain inactive. The Indians took advantage of this and again began hostilities among the settlements. But in the latter part of the year, some of the chiefs were induced to visit Santiago, where they were received with marked attentions and made to understand the power with which they were hopelessly contending. They were urged to preserve peace, and given to understand, by the present of a huge ornamented warclub, what they might expect if they continued their depredations. The Indians were impressed with the futility of contending longer against such

vastly superior numbers and resources, and promised peace. Congress, however, knowing these Indians of old, took the precaution to vote $25,000 to fortify forts among the stubborn savages. A year had barely passed before the Indians were again on the warpath, and congress voted $5,000,000 and two thousand men to put an end to the guerrilla warfare. In October, 1870, the Indians were defeated and clamored for peace. A line of forts was built on the Malleco river to protect the new cities of the south, which now began to grow into importance.

Congress, during the year 1868, was occupied principally with the question of electoral reform, and in an attempt to impeach the supreme court, of which ex-President Montt was the president. The charges were for high crimes and misdemeanors in the administration of justice. San Fuentes presented the matter by motion to the chamber of deputies in August, and it was decided by a vote of forty-two to sixteen to begin impeachment proceedings. The trial created the greatest excitement, the moderate liberals, in the main, sympathizing with the court. It was not until the following year that the long pending question was settled and the court exonerated, the accusations being declared unfounded.

Among the reformatory measures passed by this congress was the amendment of the constitution prohibiting a president from being reëlected; the law of civil responsibility for political treasons was repealed; imprisonment for debt was abolished.

In the matter of electoral reforms the liberals contended earnestly for an extension of the franchise to all voters who could read and write. In his message at the opening of the congress in June, President Perez expressed his approval of the measures which had been

proposed and recommended them to the consideration of the chambers. The measures were opposed by the clericals and conservatives and the discussions prolonged into the following year, when the radical-liberal press made strenuous efforts to bring about the reforms; but it was decided by a majority in congress that only those who possessed a certain amount of property, or practiced some profession, in addition to being able to read and write, should vote. Numerous meetings were held by the progressionists, who had formed many reform clubs in Santiago and other cities, and a programme setting forth their views was adopted. In substance this was: "That individual liberty should be securely guaranteed, that local governments should be invested with that complete independence necessary for the thorough exercise of their prerogatives, that the different branches of government should be independent of each other, that all persons should be equal before the law and that all special privileges should be abolished." Pledges were made to use every effort to accomplish something toward a realization of these results in the forthcoming elections of 1870.

As will be seen, the main object of the struggle was to bring about a liberal reaction and to reduce the enormous public patronage in the hands of the president. It was a movement away from the oligarchy and toward democracy, and meant, in the event of the adoption of these progressive principles, the extension of the franchise to 200,000 voters, where it was only exercised before by 30,000. These popular movements induced the government, which had been upheld by a coalition of conservatives and moderate liberals, to recede from its too conservative policy and to place some of the leading radical liberals in the offices of prefects and governors of provinces, hoping thereby to

avert the gathering storm. Because of this timely consideration, the government was in the main successful in the April elections of the following year, 1870. A vastly superior class of men took seats as deputies, thirty of whom were of the opposition.

On the 13th of May, 1868, the first steamer sailed from Valparaiso bound for Europe by way of the Straits, on the line which the government had subsidized with $60,000 a year and the promise of an increase subsequently to $100,000 a year. This line put Chile in direct communication with Europe.

In 1856, a treaty had been entered into with the Argentine Republic, doing away with all duties on the overland trade between the republics. This Chile now abolished, in accordance with a notice she had previously given the Argentine government in 1867. The Chilean press generally censured this abolition of the treaty, as prejudicial to the commercial interests of both republics.

In May, 1869, an agricultural exhibition was held in Santiago, at which all the South American states had exhibits. This exhibition did much to introduce labor-saving machinery and blooded stock into Chile, and stimulated new ideas in agricultural methods. The fair was in every way a success, and gives as much of an indication of the progressive and enterprising spirit of the Chileans at this time, as the active railroad building which went on through all the latter years of President Perez' administration.

During the first term of Perez' administration, the southern railroads had been pushed as far as San Fernando. Afterward this line was carried farther to Curico. A line was begun between Chillan and Talcahuano and another from San Felipe to Llai-Llai. A telegraph line was also completed to the frontier.

During this period the new university building in Santiago was completed; also the new customhouses in Valparaiso. In the latter city the construction of a mole was begun in the harbor and other improvements made.

Much was done at this time to promote education of a more primary nature than had been undertaken before. Lyceums were established in all the capitals of the provinces, and in them certain studies were made obligatory, such as the different branches of the sciences. There was soon almost a revolution in the methods and studies of both the public and private schools.

CHAPTER V

THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT ERRAZURIZ

The year 1871, was signalized by a very active presidential election. The more radical wing of the liberal party, so long out of power and unsuccessful in all its attempts at regaining the ascendency lost with Freire, made a determined effort at the polls. This party had been active in the last year of Perez' administration, so much so that the president had felt compelled to make several important concessions; legislative reforms, too, had been fostered until the clericals and conservatives were now thoroughly aroused. The struggle was of unusual significance, as the liberal party comprised much of the wealth and intelligence of Chile, and boldly announced in its platform several reforms, notably the determination to curb the power of the clergy, secure freedom of religious worship and ere long a separation of church and state, a struggle which has at different times agitated all the South American nations. They named as their candidate Don José Tomás Urmeneta; the conservatives put up Don Frederico Errázuriz.

The enormous patronage in the hands of the government enabled the conservatives and moderate liberals to elect their candidate, for the government employed all the means at its disposal in Señor Errázuriz' inter-

est, and to this the liberals unhesitatingly attributed his success. The elections passed off quietly in Santiago and Valparaiso, but the same could not be said of the outside towns.

President Errázuriz when elected was in the prime of life, and had had a long and varied experience in public affairs. He had, in fact, served as the head of nearly every cabinet office; he had been minister of foreign affairs, of the interior, of justice and of war, and member of both branches of the legislative body. He was in every way qualified for the chief executive office.

He formed a ministry of conservatives and moderate liberals, but the same aggressiveness on the part of the liberals which had caused Perez to recede somewhat from his first policy, soon began to embarrass Errázuriz. The question of the abolition of ecclesiastical tribunals and the trying of the clergy by the civil and the criminal laws of the country, soon came to the front and like Banquo's ghost would not down. Again the government, thinking to gain liberal support, decreed that space should be reserved in the Catholic cemeteries—or rather public cemeteries—for the interment of dissenters, who should be permitted burial according to the rites of their respective denominations. This measure was loudly denounced in certain quarters, as being unconstitutional in that it deprived the church of a part of her property and gave it to her declared enemies, an argument which it would seem ought to have had considerable force.

The new criminal code, so bitterly opposed by the clericals, did not finally pass congress before the end of the year 1873. It provided that the clergy should be amenable to the civil authorities, and further, that all sects might worship in churches erected by private

enterprise. The clerical party sent in a remonstrance signed by the archbishop of Santiago, Don Rafael Valentine Valdivieso, and two of his bishops, and considerable discord followed. The clericals had attempted to override the law in Brazil, they now in Chile thundered archiepiscopal excommunications at those voting for the amendments, as well as at the magistrates who should undertake to enforce the new law.

The congress of 1872, passed other reformatory measures than those connected with the church question. A bill for legalizing civil marriage was introduced, but conservative opposition prevented it from becoming at this time a law; a law urging further efforts to induce foreign immigration was passed and a bill to abolish flogging for crimes introduced. Bills were also introduced for a new assessment of landed property, for the abolition of the tobacco monopoly, and for a repeal of the duty levied on foreign coal.

For the purpose of promoting the education of the people, the government took an active interest in establishing circulating libraries in a number of the towns. It had at first acted with the conservatives in these matters and opposed all the reforms tending to lower the level of educational requirements. But this caused such opposition by the liberals that the president receded from his first position. It was an era of discussions, of zeal for education and for reforms, of the beginning of democracy in its true sense. These questions tended, however, to separate the parties more and more. The president in this even went so far as to declare that the teaching of the Roman Catholic religion in the colleges was not obligatory with the sons of dissenters.

The various reformatory and ecclesiastical questions which were discussed at the time separated the moder-

ate liberals from the conservatives and the coalition between them, which had existed since the year 1858, came to an end. The president sought to conciliate the conservatives, but, failing in this, soon found himself acting with the liberals. The clergy, aroused by the ecclesiastical questions now formed a separate party called the ultramontane, or Roman party, as in Europe, because of their staunch adherence to the interests of the Papal See.

One important reform of the electoral laws was attempted. Up to this time the municipalities were instruments of the president in the matter of the elections. He had the appointment of the officers and they had the naming of the qualified voters for the lists. One vote was sufficient to carry the election and elect, in effect, all the municipal officers and the deputies and senators of the department or province. The new law sought, contained provisions giving to the minority a fair proportional representation, also declaring that the municipal offices should be filled by the party casting the most votes in the municipality. The measure proposed counted a majority in congress, but the president opposed it. In the end a compromise was proposed by the president which was accepted by the radicals. This was, that majorities should elect the deputies; majorities should have two-thirds, minorities one-third, of the municipal offices; the election of senators and presidential electors should be in accordance with the old law. The law was approved in this form and put into operation in the year following. The accepting of this compromise by the radicals brought them again into union with the liberals.

This was a time of beginnings of great national improvements. The projection of the transandine line which should connect Santiago and Buenos Ayres, was

a notable feature in the year 1872. Important concessions were made by congress in other matters than railroads. In 1871, the exclusive privilege was granted for introducing a new method of illumination by means of purified naptha. In the following year congress conceded to Señor Ramirez, discoverer of guano at Magellan's Straits, the right to remove three thousand tons of it within a year, from the islands of Santa Magdalena and Quarto Maiter, he paying $8,000 for the privilege. This discovery of the valuable fertilizer at the Straits revived an old question, that of the true boundary between Chile and the Argentine Republic, first broached in 1843, when Chile had established a colony in the south. The Argentine press took up the discussion and clamored for that government to examine the basis of Chile's claim more thoroughly than had been done and to take prompt and active steps in the matter.

This long pending dispute with the Argentine Republic over the boundary of Patagonia, was continued through the years 1872, 1873, 1874, and 1875. The question had continued to be for a long time a cause of much irritation between the republics. In 1856 a treaty had been entered into by the terms of which it was agreed that the two countries should recognize the limits as they existed at the time of their separation from Spain in 1810. The Chileans claimed to Cape Horn on the south, and to the Andes on the east. In 1873, the Argentine government, urged thereto by the press, commissioned Dr. Quevada, director of the national library, to proceed to Spain and unearth such ancient documents as had any bearing upon the question. His researches were published in eight volumes, and it appeared that he made out a case in favor of Argentina, so far at least as the boundaries during the colonial period were concerned. During the year 1875,

the Argentine legislature established a line of sailing vessels between Buenos Ayres and the coasts of Patagonia, which were to touch at the settlements on the Chubet river and those south of the river Santa Cruz, and granted ten square leagues of territory to the company.

The Chilean minister objected, and claimed that his government would not consent that the disputed territory south of the Santa Cruz should be invaded. This called forth an elaborate presentation of the matter in the reply made by the Argentine minister of foreign affairs, and the dispute seemed to be as far as ever from an amicable settlement.

As a matter of fact, the Argentines had tacitly acquiesced in Chile's claims for so many years that some of their own papers now even admitted that they had forfeited whatever original rights they may have had by their silence and previous unconcern. The matter was not finally arranged until October 23rd, 1881.

At the same time, the question of the disputed boundary between Chile and Bolivia was revived by the discovery of the rich Caracoles mines, in 1870, and to this the president referred in his opening address to congress in 1872. The question was for a long time pending in a very troublesome way. In February, 1873, Peru and Bolivia entered into a secret treaty, guaranteeing to each other mutual protection and the integrity of their respective territories. The treaty was, in effect, an alliance against Chile. It was intended to be a secret treaty, but the Chileans soon learned of it, and immediately began to take measures to protect their interests in the north. A treaty with Bolivia had been adopted in 1866, which we shall hereafter notice more particularly. In November, 1872, Señor Frias, an Argentine, was appointed as a sort of umpire in the

dispute, but no satisfactory arrangement was reached until 1874. In the beginning of that year Don Carlos Walker Martinez began to press the matter upon the Bolivians and by August 6th, had arranged through Señor Frias a new treaty, by the terms of which Chile withdrew her claims to half of the port duties to which she was entitled under the treaty of 1866, and, waiving her claim to the extreme northern boundary—title to which she had rather ambiguously maintained—obtained in lieu thereof, for the industries which she had established upon the disputed territory, freedom from duties for a term of twenty-five years. The questions, however, were by no means satisfactorily settled.

On March 25th, 1871, there had occurred an earthquake which destroyed considerable property in Santiago and Valparaiso; another in July of the year 1873, caused some loss of life and property in the same cities.

By the year 1874, the coal fields in the south had become quite important; this was fortunate, as Chile had long felt the want of this very necessary article. Importations of foreign coal declined during the year twenty-five per cent, while exportations of the same increased fifty per cent over 1873.

In the latter part of this year, November 2nd, 1874, the president was authorized by congress to contract a loan of $9,500,000, of which $4,500,000 should be applied to the liquidation of the seven per cent loan obtained in London in 1867, and $5,000,000 should be used to convert high interest bearing bonds, which congress had previously authorized, into a foreign debt. Chile's credit ranked high, and the scheme was both to obtain loans at lower rates of interest and to convert the home debt into a foreign loan so as to bring gold and silver into circulation, there being at this time an overissue of paper.

At the close of President Errázuriz' administration the population of Chile was 2,068,447. In 1865, it was 1,819,223, an increase of 249,228 in ten years. There were at this time, 1875, 26,528 foreigners resident in the country. Railway building had gone on actively and there were now six hundred and nineteen miles in operation, three hundred and ninety-three miles of which belonged to the state, with one hundred and ninety-three miles more in process of construction. Curico, Talca, Chillan, Angol and Talcahuano, were now united with the capital by rail. There were 1,650 miles of telegraph, and on February 3rd, 1875, the first dispatches direct from Liverpool and London were received at Valparaiso by way of Buenos Ayres. These figures give a general idea of the material advancement of the country and indicate how thoroughly alive were the people to modern enterprises.

The continued agitation of matters religious, the passing of the new penal code by which the clergy were made amenable to the civil courts, electoral, educational and other questions, had separated President Errázuriz and the moderate liberals from the clericals and conservatives. The building of railroads and active pushing forward of public works had created recurring deficits in the annual budgets, and the affairs of state were in a very unsatisfactory condition at the close of the administration. The condition of the revenues, it may be said, was in part due to commercial stagnation; a financial crisis was feared, and in truth was at hand.

President Errázuriz was an able and conscientious executive, but he was placed in the trying position of undertaking to deal with the old and the new, of trying to reconcile and harmonize interests which could not be harmonized.

HOUSES OF CONGRESS.

CHAPTER VI

THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT PINTO

President Errázuriz had brought disaster into the ranks of the conservatives,* in much the same manner as Perez had, with the conservatives, initiated a reaction against the oppression of the Montt-Varistas. Don Frederico Erràzuriz had mounted the presidential chair upon the backs of the conservatives, yet he soon came to be more liberal in sentiment than conservative, and sought to curry favor with all parties, with both liberals and Montt-Varistas, who had previously united sufficiently to urge together one or two advanced laws and political reforms. The favorite leader of the liberals in the approaching election was Don Benjamin Vicuña Mackenna, who was especially popular in the southern provinces. He was nominated, and his address at the time was a stirring keynote for the campaign. He favored religious freedom in the fullest sense; amenability of the ecclesiastical functionaries to the law; reform of the national guard; civil marriage complete in law; the rapid development of Arauco by means of railroads and colonization; the opening up of the province of Valdivia; railways over the Andes; the establishment of a college of agriculture; local administration with greater autonomy; increase of common schools; abolition of monopolies held by the gov-

* "Acordo romper con Errázuriz que se estraviaba."—C. WALKER MARTINEZ.

ernment, such as the tobacco *estanco*, and other radical measures.

The moderate liberals were not in favor of Mackenna and a split in the party seemed imminent. To avoid this, liberals and radicals called a convention of notables and sought to harmonize their diverse interests and opinions and agree upon a candidate. When the convention met it was found that sentiment was pretty equally divided between Don Anibal Pinto and Don Miguel Luis Amunátegui, while Mackenna and his friends refused to recognize the convention and sought to turn popular opinion against the convention and its attempt. This caused the first effort in naming a candidate in convention to be a failure. But another was soon made; about one thousand leading citizens assembled at Santiago and a vote being cast, Pinto received the majority and was recognized as the candidate without further opposition. In politics he was a liberal; he had been intendente of Concepcion and minister of war and marine under Errázuriz.

Pinto was favored by Errázuriz, and his election was, therefore, assured. As this was a foregone conclusion, as soon as the government had indicated its choice, the elections passed off quietly, the opposition simply refraining from voting. The undercurrent of liberalism and reform had set in, and no sooner had the discussions of the religious questions relating to the cemeteries begun than the radical liberals joined Pinto, even those who had been before pledged to the support of Mackenna, finding the new president in full sympathy with them.

President-elect Pinto was inaugurated September 18th, 1876, and immediately selected the following cabinet: Interior, Don José V. Lastarria; foreign affairs, Don José Alfonso; finance, Don Rafael Sotomayor;

justice, public worship and public instruction, Don Miguel Luis Amunátegui; war and navy, Don Belisario Prat. The cabinet officers were several times changed during the next five years; in 1878, Prat was in the interior; Alfonso, foreign affairs; Santa Maria, (a most pronounced liberal), justice; Cornelio Saavedra war and navy; finance, vacant. Santa Maria was about the only one who remained in the cabinet throughout the administration.

The later ministry favored, more than the first cabinet had, the early settlement of the dispute with the Argentine Republic over the Patagonian boundary, which question had created considerable popular excitement about this time. Don Barros Araña had been sent to Buenos Ayres as envoy and had entered into an agreement with the Argentines to submit the dispute to arbitration upon the question as to whether the disputed territory belonged to Buenos Ayres or to Chile, at the time independence from Spain was declared in 1810. This was not satisfactory to the Chileans, as they based their claim more upon the long acquiescence of the Argentines in their claim, subsequent to that date, than they did upon the question of actual possession in the colonial period. The minister of foreign affairs at Santiago declared the act of Señor Araña to be unauthorized, and congress passed a vote of censure upon the plenipotentiary. Subsequently it was agreed between the two republics that the question should be submitted to arbitration, and this to be conducted in accordance with the treaty of 1856, both governments in the meantime to prevent armed conflict and refrain from sending war vessels to the coasts or rivers of the disputed territories.

The troublesome question was not finally settled until the 23rd day of October, 1881, when a treaty was

signed between the republics, by the terms of which the watershed of the Cordillera was fixed as the boundary on the east of Chile, and that on the south at a line nearly coincident with the 52nd parallel. More particularly, the southern boundary was fixed at a line extending from Point Dungenness along the land to Mt. Dinero, thence west to the point of intersection of the seventieth meridian and the fifty-second parallel of south latitude; thence westward along that parallel to the dividing line of the watershed of the Andes. The regions lying north of said line were to belong to the Argentine Republic, those south to Chile. The island of Tierra del Fuego was divided, as well as the outlying islands. The Straits of Magellan were made neutral forever, navigation of the same being declared free to all nations with no forts ever to be erected there.

The revenue questions, which had given President Errázuriz so much trouble during the last year of his administration, were still of paramount interest. In 1876, the receipts had more than met expenditures; in 1877, there was a deficit of over two millions of dollars. For a few years trade had been against Chile, owing to failures of wheat crops and heavy depreciations in copper. At this juncture the government authorized the banks to suspend specie payments until August 31st, 1879, and guaranteed their emission of paper money to the amount of $15,600,000, which was declared to be redeemable in coin on August 31, 1879.

It was estimated that there were not to exceed $5,000,000 of bullion and coin in the country, and knowledge of this fact caused a depression and a feeling of insecurity in commercial and financial circles, notwithstanding the fact that the government was cutting down expenses in every direction.

The cutting down of custom duties was a serious

matter for the government, as the revenues were derived almost wholly from that source and from the tobacco monopoly; income and real estate taxation had long been vehemently opposed by the landed proprietors.

The country scarcely had had time to recover from the effects of the issue of paper money of 1878, before the government found it necessary to resort to a further emission of $6,000,000. This was in the spring of 1879, and was made necessary on account of the extraordinary expenses incurred in the beginning of the war with Bolivia and Peru. Negotiations were again opened with the banks, but they were afraid of this second issue and refused to undertake it, whereupon the government determined upon issuing the full amount itself. This was well received by the patriotic Chileans, who were prepared to make great sacrifices to carry on the war. The government arranged with the foreign creditors to suspend payments to the sinking fund, and paid maturing interest upon the loans promptly. This preserved the national credit, and satisfied the bondholders.

The failure of crops and decline in the price of copper in 1877, had caused a decrease of about $15,000,000 in the value of exports. In this grave emergency, the capitalists in Santiago and Valparaiso petitioned congress to levy an income tax. The revenues, despite the war, soon began to improve. In 1880, the receipts (ordinary) were $27,693,087, the expenditures (ordinary) $24,777,360, so that there was a surplus of nearly three millions where before there had been a deficit of a million. These items do not include war expenses, which at this time amounted to about two millions a month. In his message in June, 1881, President Pinto estimated the total receipts for the year at

$43,992,584, and approximated the total expenses (ordinary and extraordinary) at $43,123,829. The guano beds and Tarapacá nitrate fields had yielded enormous profits to the government and from these sources the credit of the republic had been maintained at home and abroad. In the preceding August, 1880, the senate had authorized a further paper money emission of $12,000,000 for the year, and this, like the preceding issues, was well received by the people. The unpopular tobacco *estanco*, a relic of Spanish tyranny, had been annulled, and thus this profitable but unjust source of revenue was cut off. But the Atacama desert more than counterbalanced this. From 1843 to 1875, $89,131,706 worth of silver had been mined there. Of minerals of all kinds including nitrates, there had been in the thirty-two years the enormous sum of $240,000,000 taken from that arid province. Verily it was a desert worth fighting for; it was yielding $10,000,000 a year.

At the close of 1875, there were 595 miles of railroad in operation in Chile and 2,559 miles of telegraph; in 1876, there were 940 miles of railroad and 2,650 of telegraph; in 1877, 1,265 miles of railroad, and 4,800 of telegraph. In 1876, the national debt was $10,929,600 home, $40,689,000 foreign, being a total of $51,618,600. Of this the government had put $35,000,000 into railroads, which were owned and controlled by the state. At this time from five thousand to six thousand vessels entered and cleared Chilean ports annually, and the exports and imports averaged from thirty-seven to forty millions of dollars each, with imports somewhat in excess of exports.

With the exception of the Argentine Republic, Chile was at this time making larger appropriations for school purposes than any other of the Spanish-American republics. In 1875, expenditures for this purpose amount-

ed to $2,035,412, and this represents about the sum Chile now began to spend annually upon schools. In the same year there were two hundred and ninety-eight university degrees conferred; there were 1,359 primary schools, eight hundred and eighteen public and five hundred and forty-one private, with an average attendance of 65,875 pupils. In 1877, Pinto's active minister of public instruction, Amunátegui, addressed a circular letter to the professors of the Normal schools recommending the establishment of evening schools for adults; also, that such classes be established in the provincial lyceums. This was a very popular measure and received hearty support. Within the year there were established forty-seven night schools, supported by the government, with an average attendance of four thousand adults, eager to learn the primary branches.

The disputes in respect to church questions continued through President Pinto's administration with unabated zeal and acrimony. In 1877, a conflict arose over the appointment of a successor to the archbishop of Santiago, Don Rafael Valentine Valdivieso, who died June 9th, 1878. A majority of the clergy, the ultramontane section, opposed Don Francisco de Paulo Taforó as successor in the See, he being the government's choice. The government was determined that church dignitaries should thereafter be named by the civil authorities, if the state continued to pay the ecclesiastical officials of Santiago. Hence the conflict. The government supported Señor Taforó; the ultramontane clergy did not. The matter was agitated for several years; an apostolic delegate, Señor Celestino del Frate, Bishop of Himeria, was sent out from Rome to report upon the trouble and was expelled by Santa Maria. Feeling ran high, but in the end reformatory measures were carried and the government won the

battle, January, 1883. In all the South American republics, and in Mexico as well, questions similar to this have been brought up by the advanced parties and settled along lines of progress.

There were also at this time renewed discussions of the civil marriage law, particularly as to the hardships which protestants under the existing laws encountered in marrying the beautiful Chilean ladies. As the law stood, a protestant wishing to marry a catholic woman in Chile, was obliged to execute a bond under oath, stating that the sons as well as the daughters born in wedlock should be educated in the catholic religion; also, that he would abstain from any attempt to prejudice the catholic belief of the sons and daughters; that in selecting masters or schools for his children, if his wife, or (in the event of her death), if the parish priest should decide that the measures he might wish to adopt would endanger the catholic faith of his children while they were under twenty-five years of age, he would desist from such measures. He was also obliged to bind himself not to name at his death a tutor or guardian for his said sons and daughters who was not a catholic. The lady on her part was required to give two hundred dollars to the hospital for fallen women, as though she were counted as one with them and scarcely less in disgrace. She must also promise under oath to educate the children in the catholic faith, and to convert, if possible, her heretical consort. It seems incredible that there should have been a strong party in Chile opposed to reforms in such matters as these.

The trouble with the Araucanian Indians was not settled by Pinto. In 1877, an uprising had been feared and troops were again sent to the frontier. Brigands,

also, infested the interior, and caused considerable trouble before they could be suppressed.

Before proceeding to the elections of 1881, which resulted in the choice of Santa Maria as President Pinto's successor, and brought about the triumph of the liberal party, it will be interesting for us to turn our attention to the Tarapacá desert and the Peruvian capital, where Chilean arms were at this time achieving glory and conquering new provinces.

PART IV—THE WAR WITH PERU AND BOLIVIA

CHAPTER I

THE BEGINNING OF THE WAR

Many of the cases reported in the law books have to do with the boundaries between estates, so likewise most of the wars of history have to do with the territorial boundaries between tribes and nations. Maps, as well as politics, have been made on battlefields. To make a map Chile, Peru and Bolivia exhausted their resources in a devastating war, and that, too, the map of a desert.

Still, it was an important and rich desert. Sooner or later the question was bound to arise; sooner or later supremacy must be fought for and established among the Pacific coast republics. Pizarro and Almagro had once fought over this boundary; then it was the riches of Cuzco which was the direct cause of the strife; now it was the riches of what was then a forbidding desert which led to war. With the exception of some silver mines near Iquique there was a three hundred miles strip of territory long considered worthless, hence the boundary in which three states were mutually interested was never very definitely fixed. True, when the South American republics started upon

their career of independence, the boundaries were fixed according to the respective limits of provinces as they existed in 1810. But those were by no means definite. A boundary was established between Chile and Peru in 1628, in which the northern limits of Chile were fixed at El Paposo in 25° 2′ south latitude. In 1776, when Buenos Ayres was formed into an independent viceroyalty, Bolivia, then Charcos, was included in it, with the boundaries as defined by an old law. This declared the Chilean boundary to be at El Paposo, the first inhabited place to the southward of the desert, and at this point the old maps of Chile fixed her northern boundary. But the limit, established in 1628, can hardly be said to have been very definite.

Chile early claimed the twenty-third parallel and Bolivia conceded the twenty-fourth, on August 10th, 1866, the republics then being allied in a war against Spain. In the treaty it was further stipulated that Chile should receive one-half the customs between the twenty-third and twenty-fourth parallels, as Chilean citizens were largely interested in that region; also, that Chilean citizens should be allowed to mine and export the products of this district without tax or hindrance from Bolivia. In return, Bolivia was to have the same rights in the territory claimed by Chile between the twenty-fourth and twenty-fifth parallels. To enable Chile to obtain her share of the customs, she was allowed to have a representative in the custom-house at Antofagasta.

In 1870, Bolivia made a further concession; in consideration of a sum of $10,000 she granted the right to a company to work the nitrate deposits north of 24° south, construct a mole at Antofagasta and build a road to Caracoles, where rich silver mines had been discovered. The company was English and Chilean, employ-

ing principally Chilean labor. In short, it was Chilean and foreign capital and energy combined which developed the wealth of the nitrate regions. The Bolivian Indians and half-breeds contented themselves with selling water and vegetables about the *oficinas*. Bolivia may have been cheated in her arrangements with Chile, but it was not until after she had discovered that Chileans could produce wealth from her deserts that she thought of rescinding her treaty contracts.

In 1873, February 6th, Bolivia and Peru entered into a secret agreement, the object of which was declared to be the mutual guarantee of the independence, sovereignty and territorial integrity of the two countries, and mutual defence against exterior aggression. The exterior aggression was anticipated from Chile.

On August 6th, 1874, another treaty was signed with Bolivia, by which Chile agreed to withdraw her claim to half the duties in Bolivian ports on condition that all Chilean industries established on Bolivian territory should be free from duty for twenty-five years. There was also a further waiver on the part of Chile of her claims to the territory between the twenty-third and twenty-fourth parallels. The Bolivian congress on February 14th, 1878, almost four years after the treaty had been made, concluded that it would ratify the treaty on condition that a tax of ten cents per quintal (hundred-pound weight) on all nitrates should be paid. Being remonstrated with for a breach of the treaty, Bolivia refused to remit the tax and declared that nitrates in the hands of exporters would be seized if the levy were not paid.

Chile then sent her fleet to protect the property of her citizens. The ports of Antofagasta, Cobija and Tocapilla were blockaded.

On the 24th of January, 1879, the Chilean govern-

ment ordered the occupation of Antofagasta, and on the 14th of February, Colonel Sotomayor with a body of men, estimated at from two to five hundred, took possession of the port. On the 16th of February, Sotomayor was sent to protect the mining interests at Caracoles. Then the Bolivian president, General Hilarion Daza, declared war, March 1st, expelled some Chilean residents from the country and confiscated their property.

On the 23rd of the month, a skirmish occurred at the village of Calama on the banks of the river Loa, between Sotomayor's force, amounting now to six hundred men, and a party of one hundred and thirty-five Bolivians commanded by Dr. Ladislao Cabrera. The latter had posted his men on the road at a point commanding, from an advantageous position on the heights, the ford which Sotomayor must pass. For three hours the little party of Bolivians fought their superior foes, but at length gave way and retreated toward Potosi. The Bolivians lost twenty killed and thirty prisoners, the Chileans twelve killed and wounded.

Peru now offered her services as a mediator and sent envoys to the Bolivian and Chilean capitals. But in view of the fact that the Chileans knew of the secret treaty of 1873, between Bolivia and Peru, the latter's offer of mediation was not fruitful of results. Besides, Chile had another grievance with Peru, for the latter had, in 1875, passed a law intended to monopolize the Tarapacá nitrate beds. True, Tarapacá was Peruvian territory, but this law was inimical to Chilean interests in that region and to Chilean capital invested in the Tarapacá nitrate works.

The Peruvian envoy to Santiago, Señor Lavalle, had required, as a basis of arbitration, that the Chilean troops should evacuate Antofagasta; that there should

be a neutral administration of affairs in the port under the guarantee of the three republics; that the customs of the territory should be applied first to the local administration, then that the rest should be divided between Bolivia and Chile.

Chile demanded that preparations for war on the part of Peru should cease, that the secret treaty of 1873 be annulled, that neutrality be declared. These requirements were declined. Chile, therefore, on the 5th of April, 1879, declared war and Peru became one of the belligerents, expelling many Chilean residents from her territories.

Prior to the breaking out of war, the Chilean regular army numbered about 2,500 men, one-fifth being cavalry, one-fifth artillery, three-fifths infantry. These regulars were recruited from the Indians, and were a fine body of men, excellently disciplined, well-officered and equipped with the best modern weapons. The national guards, or militia, numbered twenty-five thousand, and this force was raised to fifty-five thousand when war was declared.

The standing army of Peru numbered anywhere from nine thousand to thirteen thousand men, the troops being stationed in and around Lima. The soldiers were principally of Indian descent, with quite a large number of negroes. After the declaration of war this army was increased to forty thousand men.

The Bolivian regular army was about the same in size as the Chilean, but the government possessed only 1,500 stands of Remingtons, the most of the troops being armed with old flintlock muskets. The Bolivian army was composed almost exclusively of Aymara Indians, brave, sturdy fellows and excellent soldiers.

More important, however, than the armies was the command of the sea, and here Chile had the advan-

tage. Fully alive to the importance of having a good navy, the Chilean government early sent her officers abroad to examine warships and gain experience in the foreign service. She also purchased the best modern ironclads, two of them of English build, together with a splendid corvette. At the breaking out of war her navy consisted of the "Almirante Cochrane" and "Blanco Encalada," ironclads, well armored and carrying heavy machine guns; the corvettes "Chacabuco" and "O'Higgins," the "Magallanes," the "Abtao," the "Covadonga," the "Esmeralda," and ten steam transports. The "Magallanes" carried one large and two small guns; the "Abtao," "Covadonga" and "Esmeralda" were old boats, but each had from two to three heavy artillery pieces, besides as many more small guns.

Bolivia was without a navy; Peru had few good ironclads of the latest make. The "Huascar" and "Independencia" were ironclads built in 1865 and 1866, but were barely able to cope with the "Almirante Cochrane" and "Blanco Encalada." There were two antiquated monitors, the "Atahualpa" and "Manco Capac," used principally for the defence of Callao and Arica, and two wooden corvettes, the "Union" and "Pilcomayo." This comprised the Peruvian navy, unless we may include the "Chalaco" and "Limiña," armed transports.

Chile, as will be seen, made up in energy, discipline, effective guns, good ironclads, and in good officers, what she lacked in numerical strength. It was due to her energy and enterprise that the Atacama desert had become a source of enormous wealth; it was due to the same enterprise that she began a war against two strong, but somewhat lazy rivals. Perhaps she was aggressive, perhaps she coveted the nitrate territories, but England, animated by the same spirit, has colonized and enriched the world while being herself

enriched. The principle, however, stands better in evolution than in ethics.

The war having been opened between Chile and Bolivia in the Atacama desert, Peru dispatched a force of three thousand men under Colonel Valverde to Iquique. Here the army of the south began to form and General José Buendia was soon sent to take command of it.

In April, the Chileans began to collect their army at Antofagasta, placing it under the command of General Erasmo Escala. On the 5th of the month, Admiral Juan Williams Robelledo established a blockade of Iquique and warned all neutral vessels in the harbor to leave before the 15th. Seven days afterward the Chilean corvette "Magallanes" fell in with the "Union" and "Pilcomayo" near the mouth of the river Loa. An engagement took place which lasted about an hour, when the "Magallanes" succeeded in making her escape. The "Union" was injured and returned to the dock at Callao. Following this action the Chilean vessels visited different ports, destroyed coal-boats, the apparatus for loading guano, and demolished piers, having first ordered off the vessels that were loading. At Mollendo, on the 18th of April, the "Cochrane" and "Chacabuco" sent in a boat to communicate with the authorities; this being fired at, the ships opened a cannonade upon the railway station and customhouse, without, however, doing very serious damage.

On the same day, April 18th, the "Blanco Encalada" and "O'Higgins" bombarded Pisagua. There was a large quantity of coal stored at this place for the use of the railroad. Boats sent in by the Chileans to destroy the launches were fired upon and several of the crews killed. A shell set fire to the town and more than a million dollars worth of property was destroyed. The only persons killed were a woman and a China-

man. As a large part of the property in the town belonged to neutral foreigners, there does not appear to be much to say by way of justification of this reckless bombardment.

After the affair at Pisagua the Chilean squadron returned to Iquique. The troops in the town found it difficult to obtain water, as the blockaders forbade the use of the condensers. The only other recourse was to obtain it from Arica in water-boats and this was a hazardous undertaking. An attempt was made to defy the enemy and to use the condensers, but the smoke from a chimney betrayed the disobedience of the order and caused a number of heavy shells to be fired toward the spot.

CHAPTER II

NAVAL BATTLES—PRAT AND GRAU

During the latter part of April and the first half of May, the belligerents made active preparations for the impending struggle. "The Army of the South," as the Peruvian-Bolivian troops of the Tarapacá region were called, assembled in Tacna, a short distance from the port of Arica. General Prado, the president of Peru, on the 16th, quitted Callao to take the command of the army, and sailed south with the fleet, consisting of the "Huascar," commanded by Miguel Grau, and the "Independencia," Captain Moore; also the "Oroya," "Limiña" and "Chalaco." The "Manco Capac" and "Atahualpa" remained at Callao. The vessels carried several regiments of soldiers, a large quantity of stores, arms and munitions of war. The president was accompanied by a large staff and a bodyguard of young Peruvians from the best families of the capital.

President Prado was landed at Arica and assumed the command of the allied armies, President Daza, of Bolivia, having previously arrived at Tacna with four thousand reinforcements.

Captain Grau received information at Arica that Admiral Robelledo had sailed from Iquique in the "Blanco Encalada" to reconnoitre off Callao, leaving only the small vessels, the "Esmeralda" and "Covadonga," to

maintain the blockade. He at once proceeded to Iquique with the "Huascar" and "Independencia," where on the 21st of May, he began an attack upon the Chilean corvette and ironclad.

The action began at 8 a. m., the "Huascar" being pitted against the wooden corvette "Esmeralda" and the "Independencia" against the "Covadonga" gunboat. The Chilean transport "Lamar," at that time in the port, was successful in getting out of the way. For an hour a brisk cannonading was kept up, when the "Covadonga" attempted to escape toward the south, but was closely followed by the "Independencia." A desultory firing was kept up between the racing ships. Captain Condell of the "Covadonga" led close in along shore in his efforts to escape the pursuing "Independencia," passing shoals and often close upon the breakers. The "Independencia" drew more water than the wooden vessel, and in attempting to follow it, in order that the little craft might be rammed out of the water, as the gunners of the ironclad could not hit it, the "Independencia" ran upon a rock at Punta Gruesco and stuck fast, the helmsman being at the time shot by a "Covadonga" rifleman. Getting astern of her unfortunate antagonist, the "Covadonga" opened a deliberate fire, and kept it up until the appearance of the "Huascar." The "Independencia" became a total wreck and the loss to the Peruvian cause was incalculable, for it left them only one effective ironclad with which to cope with the superior Chilean navy.

Meanwhile the "Huascar" and "Esmeralda," were engaged in a desperate battle. For two hours a cannonading was kept up, when the "Huascar" attempted to ram her adversary, but was unable to do so effectively, as the "Esmeralda" had crept into shallow water near the shore and Captain Grau was afraid to approach for

fear of striking submerged torpedoes. A battery on the shore opened fire and obliged the "Esmeralda" to come out. At the same time a shell from one of the "Huascar's" three hundred-pounders burst in her engine room, killing the engineers and disabling the engine.

As the "Esmeralda" had sustained the fire of her antagonist for over four hours, with little damage save the bursting of the shell in the engine room, Captain Grau determined to ram her. The "Huascar's" engines were reversed too soon and the intended blow was without effect, but as the two vessels came together Captain Prat leaped upon the "Huascar's" deck, sword in hand and followed by only one man, Sergeant Aldea. At the foot of the turret he was pierced by a musket ball, having first himself killed a signal officer. Aldea also died heroically. Lieutenant Uribe then assumed the command of the "Esmeralda."

Grau made a second attempt to ram and struck the "Esmeralda," but inflicted only slight damage. Lieutenant Serrano boarded the "Huascar" with a company of men, but they shared the fate of their heroic commander. A third time the "Huascar" rammed, and this time with better result; the "Esmeralda" was struck squarely on her starboard side and went down with colors flying. From one hundred and twenty to one hundred and fifty of her officers and crew were lost, about fifty or sixty saving themselves by clinging to wreckage until they were picked up by the "Huascar's" boats.

This naval action, though resulting in the loss of the "Independencia" to the Peruvians, raised the blockade of Iquique, and enabled General Prado to throw about four thousand troops into the town.

Captain Grau proceeded south to Antofagasta where he exchanged shots with the "Covadonga," which lay

inside the reef, protected by batteries. A shot from one of the latter did the "Huascar" considerable damage. She then turned north and on the way encountered the "Blanco Encalada" and "Magallanes," both of which gave chase. The "Huascar" made her escape and reached Callao, where Captain Grau was fêted and promoted to the rank of rear-admiral.

Having taken aboard a better crew of seamen, among them several experienced gunners, and having thoroughly overhauled his ship, Grau sailed toward the south and spent the month of July in harassing the Chileans along the coast, being able to keep out of the way of the enemy's ironclads because of the "Huascar's" superior speed. In July he arrived at Arica and there received orders to go south and harass the enemy, but on no account to risk his valuable charge in a battle. Leaving Arica, Grau ran into the bay of Iquique, July 9th, where he had been informed the ships of the blockading squadron were in the habit of standing out to sea at night, being afraid of torpedoes.

Discovering the transport "Cousiña" in the harbor, he enforced his demands for her surrender, and was about to take possession of his prize when the Chilean sloop "Magallanes" (Captain Latorre) hove in sight and steamed toward him. A lively firing began and was kept up for some time, the "Huascar" meanwhile making four unsuccessful attempts to ram. The firing brought the "Cochrane" to the assistance of the "Magallanes," when Grau, following his instructions, ordered the "Huascar" to withdraw, July 10th.

After this action the Chilean squadron remained in the harbor at night, but kept up a sharp lookout for torpedoes. One night a floating object was discovered near the "Cochrane," which was taken for a torpedo. This caused the Chilean commander to bombard the

town; a few of the inhabitants were killed and some damage done, but most of the shells passed over the place.

On the 17th of July, the "Huascar," in company with the "Union," started southward on a cruise. Several Chilean ports were visited, the launches found there destroyed, and two merchantmen captured. Off Antofagasta on July 23rd, the Chilean transport "Rimac," conveying a battalion of cavalry and stores to the town, was captured. The troops and officers were taken to Arica; the "Rimac" was converted into a Peruvian cruiser.

Soon afterward, August 18th, the "Union," commanded by Captain Garcia y Garcia, went south to intercept in the Straits, two vessels from Europe with cargoes of stores for the Chilean government. He reached Punta Arenas, the Chilean settlement on the Straits, just after the first vessel had passed through. The governor of the place assured Captain Garcia that both vessels had passed, when the "Union" set off in hot pursuit. The other vessel was at the time entering the strait, so that both of them escaped, and, arriving at Valparaiso, their cargoes served to equip a new levy of three thousand men.

The action of the Chilean fleet being barren of results, while Captain Grau was making himself feared along the whole coast, caused much discontent in Chile, and several changes were now made among the officers. Galvarino Riveros replaced Juan Williams Robelledo in the "Blanco," as commander of the navy. Captain Simpson was superseded by Captain Latorre, of the "Magallanes," in the command of the "Cochrane;" Don Rafael Sotomayor was appointed minister of war and dispatched to Antofagasta. He ordered the blockade of Iquique to be raised and the two ironclads to pro-

ceed to Valparaiso to undergo such repairs as would enable them to match in speed the redoubtable "Huascar." Other vessels of the navy were also overhauled, and a number of transports hired and purchased.

On the 27th of August, the "Huascar" appeared off the port of Antofagasta, having stopped at Iquique on her way down, where she took aboard two of the Ley torpedoes. In the bay were the "Magallanes" and "Abtao," the latter with disabled machinery. Captain Grau, approaching the Chilean vessels, immediately opened fire, but they were moored so near the shore batteries that he was unable to take them. The "Abtao" was severely damaged and about twenty of her crew killed and wounded. A three hundred pound shot struck the "Huascar's" funnel and killed an officer. The torpedo expert had launched one of his missiles during the night at the "Abtao," but it had not proceded far when it turned and came back toward its starting point. The "Huascar" was only saved by the gallant Lieutenant Diez Canseco jumping overboard and deflecting the torpedo from its course. Thoroughly disgusted with torpedoes of this pattern, Captain Grau had them all buried in a cemetery at Iquique. The Chileans, however, resurrected them. Quitting Antofagasta, the "Huascar" cruised about for some time, visiting Talca, Tocapilla and Mejillones and destroyed many launches and other property, before retiring to Arica.

Admiral Juan Williams Robelledo had, as we have seen, resigned, and Admiral Galvarion Riveros had been appointed in his place to the command of the Chilean fleet. On the first of October, the squadron, consisting of the "Blanco," "Cochrane," "O'Higgins," "Covadonga" and transports "Loa" and "Cousiña," fell in with the "Huascar" and "Union" off Antofagasta and gave

chase. The Peruvian vessels might have effected their escape had not the "O'Higgins," "Cochrane," and "Loa" appeared in the opposite direction steaming directly toward them. The Chilean squadron had separated at Mejillones the day before and put to sea in two divisions, in search of the two Peruvian vessels. Grau was caught between the two divisions.

Captain Grau ordered the "Huascar's" head turned toward the east under a full head of steam, hoping to escape. The "Union" passed the "Huascar" and the admiral ordered her to bear away toward Arica, which she did, though followed closely by the "O'Higgins" and "Loa." She arrived there safely about dark. Seeing that the "Cochrane" would cross his bows, Grau prepared his ship for action, keeping close in toward the land.

At 9:25 o'clock the action was begun off Point Angamos by the "Huascar," at a distance of three thousand yards. The fourth shot struck the Chilean vessel, when she opened fire in return. One of her first shots passed through the "Huascar's" armor and killed and wounded twelve men; at the same time a three hundred-pound shell from the "Huascar" nearly stove in one of the "Cochrane's" plates.

The "Huascar" now attempted to ram her antagonist, but the latter steered in a parallel course and prevented it. Five minutes afterward a shell struck the pilot tower of the "Huascar," and exploding, killed Admiral Grau and a lieutenant. The brave admiral was blown literally to pieces, only one leg being afterward found. Another well-directed shot pierced the armor of the "Huascar's" turret and killed several of the gunners. Inexperienced relief crews being sent to the guns the shots now flew wide of the mark and did little execution, while the cabin was soon filled with

the dead and wounded. Twice the "Cochrane" attempted to ram, but failed. She, however, sent two more shells through the "Huascar's" plating, which did much damage.

The "Blanco" now arrived and at once opened fire upon the Peruvian vessel, in which several commanders had been already killed. During the action Admiral Grau was succeeded in the command by Aguirre, Carbajal, Rodriguez, Palacios and Garezan, one after another shedding his blood upon the "Huascar's" decks. The Chilean riflemen shot down three out of the four men working the gun in the "Huascar's" top; a broadside from the "Blanco" killed all the men at the relieving-tackles; the engines were filled with soot from the shattered smokestack, the steam steering-gear had been disabled.

Once the "Huascar's" colors were shot away and the Chilean vessels ceased firing, thinking their enemy had surrendered. But another flag was hoisted and the unequal contest went on. The "Blanco" and "Cochrane" both followed the Peruvian vessel and poured into her an unceasing fire from their heavy guns, machine-guns, and small arms; the "Huascar" replied occasionally with her left turret gun.

The "Covadonga" arrived upon the scene and fired one gun, but the "Huascar" was already silenced. Attempts were made by her crew to sink her, the commander ordering the engineer to open her valves. But before this was done some of the men on deck waved handkerchiefs and towels as a sign of surrender, and hauled down the flag; then the firing ceased. Lieutenant Simpson of the "Cochrane" and Lieutenant Castillo of the "Blanco" went aboard with other officers and men and took possession of the hard won prize. Thirty-two officers and men lay dead and forty-eight

wounded upon the "Huascar's" decks, out of the crew of one hundred and ninety-three. The action had lasted one hour and thirty minutes.

The survivors of the ill-fated ironclad were kept some time at work putting out the fires and getting the vessel in sailing order, then she was taken into Mejillones Bay. This action off Point Angamos left the Peruvians only the two wooden corvettes afloat, the "Union" and "Pilcomayo," and the latter was captured by the Chilean ironclads in November.

Prat and Grau, friends, as well as opponents in this war, were martyrs each to his country's cause, and their names are justly immortalized in both Chile and Peru.

CHAPTER III

THE WAR IN THE SOUTH—PISAGUA, SAN FRANCISCO, TARAPACA—LOSS OF THE DESERT PROVINCES

The allies had made strenuous efforts to concentrate an army in the south before their communications should be cut off by sea, for along the desert coast of southern Peru and Bolivia it is nearly impossible to move an army very long distances except by way of the Pacific. Here and there along the desert wastes deep gorges have been plowed out by the mountain streams dashing down to the ocean, and in them there are occasional oases and small cultivated tracts of land, where the towns are situated.

The allied army at Arica and other southern points now numbered about 20,000 men. General Prado had gone south from Arica on a tour of inspection to Tarapacá, where General Buendia was in command. General Daza, having brought four thousand Bolivian reinforcements into the field, remained at Arica and Tacna. General Prado took south with him two battalions of the Bolivian troops commanded by Colonel Villamil, and left them at Pisagua. Then he proceeded to Iquique where he remained several days, that port as well as Patillos being now efficiently garrisoned. The force in Tarapacá amounted to about nine thousand men under Buendia, an old soldier, and a rather rash

one; but Colonel Suarez, his chief of staff, was a highly efficient officer. Tarapacá is something over one hundred miles southwest from Arica, fifty from Pisagua and about the same distance inland from Iquique.

The Chileans, now masters of the sea, began to push forward reinforcements until their army in the field soon numbered from 12,000 to 16,000 men, well drilled, ably officered and splendidly equipped. From seven to ten thousand of these troops were embarked at Antofagasta under General Escala, the objective point being the port of Pisagua. The fleet and ten or twelve transports were employed in the expedition, under the command of Commodore Riveros.

On the morning of the 2nd of November, this force appeared off Pisagua, which was defended by rifle-pits, two small batteries, a garrison of three hundred troops and about six hundred Indians, Buendia being in the town at the time and taking the chief command.

The coast rises here to a height of ten or twelve hundred feet, and at the foot of the bluff lies the town of Pisagua. Two paths and a railroad zigzag over the hills, and along them the rifle-pits had been formed; here the Bolivian Indians were stationed under Colonel Granier. Other troops took up positions in the town, commanded by Colonels Villamil and Recabarren, General Buendia himself commanding in chief. The batteries were situated about three miles apart, extending from the mouth of the Tivilíche ravine on the north, to the point of Huayna Pisagua on the south. A force which had been landed at Junin several miles down the coast, was to make a detour and fall upon Pisagua in the rear.

The first act was to bombard the little forts north and south of the town by the "O'Higgins" and "Cochrane;" the one at Huayna Pisagua was soon silenced,

that at Tiviliche was abandoned. About seven hundred men were sent ashore in boats under cover of a lively cannonading from the fleet. This force was checked at the beech by the brisk firing of the Bolivian Indians in the rifle-pits and upon the bluff, but there troops landed and the firing became so hot that the beach was soon covered with the dead, the men-of-war all the time pouring in a tremendous rain of shot and shell. For five hours the defenders held out, General Buendia hourly expecting reinforcements. The Chileans had conducted the landing with much pluck and enterprise, leaving their boats behind them, officers and men vying with each other in deeds of valor.

The town was carried, and step by step, fighting for every inch of ground, the Chileans pushed up the bluff and dislodged the defenders, who fled up the railroad. The Chileans lost two hundred and thirty-five in killed and wounded; the losses of the defenders do not seem to be accurately known, but were probably equal to that of their opponents. The allies retreated up the railroad to La Noria and Peña Grande and in a few days formed a junction with troops from Iquique and other points south. The Chileans soon after gained possession of the railroad for a distance of fifty miles to Agua Santa; the main body of the army occupied the heights of San Francisco, which were intrenched, and Jaspampa, where General Escala established his headquarters. Here they awaited reinforcements.

On the 6th, an advanced body of one hundred and seventy-five cavalrymen under Colonel José Franciso Vergara, in making a reconnoissance at Jeramia near Agua Santa, fell in with a small mounted party of Peruvians, commanded by a young man named José Ventura Sepulveda. Seventy out of the ninety-four Peruvians were sabered and left dead upon the field.

President Prado, hearing of the disaster at Pisagua, ordered his colleague, President Daza, to form a junction with Buendia. President Daza started to obey President Prado, but had advanced from Arica only to the ravine of the Camarones with three thousand of his Bolivians, when he turned back in a cowardly retreat, his force utterly demoralized. There were too many president-generals commanding the allied armies to insure concerted action in carrying out important movements.

General Buendia had gone to Iquique; hearing there of the advance of Daza, and being short of provisions, he assembled his scattered army at Pozo Almonte near the northern terminus of the Iquique railroad. Early in November he began a march across twenty or thirty miles of intervening desert, his army in three divisions commanded respectively by Colonels Davila, Bustamente and Villegras. Villegras commanded the Bolivians, Davila, the advanced division.

Meanwhile the Chileans had augmented their force at San Francisco; six thousand men with thirty-two long range guns were now intrenched on the heights. On November 19th, their advanced guard fell back from Agua Santa, retiring before the approach of Buendia's forces, amounting now to near 10,000 men. On the same day the allies marched some fifteen or twenty miles from Agua Santa and halted at the *oficina* of Porvinir where there was a supply of water. They had made a long march across the arid plains and were suffering terribly from thirst.

They were now close to the heights of San Francisco, upon which the Chilean army was posted; General Buendia established his headquarters at Porvinir, Colonel Suarez rode from rank to rank. It was decided to allow the men to rest after their long march, but

Colonel Espinar in reconnoitering the enemy's position brought on the battle. The Chileans opened a heavy fire of musketry and artillery upon the charging Peruvians, who sought to capture their artillery; they then dashed upon their adversaries with bayonets fixed and drove them back. Colonel Espinar had fallen and the advanced force was without a leader; falling back they caused demoralization in the main army, while a division under Villegras, ascending the ravine from the east, met with no better success.

Villegras fell wounded. The troops retreated in fairly good order to Porvinir. The Chileans took no advantage of the rout. They lost their gallant leader, General Emílio Sotomayor, and two hundred and eight in killed and wounded. The Peruvian-Bolivian loss is not very definitely stated, but their dead was estimated at two hundred and twenty. Colonel Suarez collected the remnants of the army at Tarapacá. The Bolivians retreated toward the highlands of their own country.

Iquique was evácuated by the allies and November 22nd a force of Chileans occupied it. The garrison under Colonel Rios retreated to Tarapacá. On the 29th, President Prado invested Admiral Lizardo Montero with the command and set out for his capital; on the 18th of the following month he turned over the government to the vice president, General La Puerta.

After the battle of San Francisco, the Chilean general dispatched a force of two thousand men with a small body of cavalry and one hundred and fifty pieces of artillery to reconnoitre the enemy at Tarapacá. The force was under the command of Colonels Arteaga and Vergara. Arriving at Tarapacá, the troops were separated into three divisions, one under the command of Ramirez was to come up the ravine, one under Arteaga was to descend from the heights directly upon the town,

one under Santa Cruz was to advance down the ravine in which the place is situated. This division of the force caused its destruction. The Peruvian forces under Buendia and Suarez had left the town and were moving northward in the ravine. Informed of the disposition of their foes, they attacked them from the heights and after an hour of severe fighting routed them completely, capturing a battery of Krupp guns.

The divisions in the ravine were also obliged to fall back after a sharp encounter and the Peruvians were left masters of the field. The Chileans lost six hundred and eighty-seven in killed and wounded; the Peruvians, nineteen officers killed, sixteen wounded, and four hundred and ninety-eight men killed and wounded—heavy losses for the number engaged in the combat.

On the following day the Peruvians continued their march and arrived at Arica on the 18th of December, with three thousand of their number out of ammunition, with few arms, ragged, hungry and thirsty. General Buendia and Colonel Suarez were immediately arrested for the loss of the province.

The Chileans buried their heroic dead at Tarapacá and assumed complete possession of the province, where a small garrison was placed, while the main army was stationed in Pisagua and Iquique. This was soon reinforced, and the available forces in the field numbered seventeen thousand men. Arica, Islay, Ilo and Mollendo were blockaded, thus severing the first named place from its communications with the north, except by the overland way by Arequipa. Of the allied army remaining, Daza had about three thousand men at Tacna and Montero four thousand at Arica, the whole in a very demoralized condition.

These reverses were without doubt the reason for

President Prado's abandonment of the army of the south and his withdrawal to Lima. He sailed for Panama on December 19th; two days afterward a revolution broke out at the Peruvian capital, Colonel Pierola being the leader. The government party was besieged in the palace by General La Cotero; Colonel Nicolas de Pierola, after a fight with the government forces in Lima, went to Callao during the night and next morning took possession of the place. The government surrendered and Pierola became virtual dictator of Peru.

The Bolivians, disgusted with Daza, also planned a successful revolution, which resulted in placing General Narciso Campero in power. Daza retired to Peru. On the 27th of December he had gone to Arica to consult with Montero. While there his troops at Tacna, ashamed of their president, deposed him and elected Colonel Camacho to the command. The next day the revolution in La Paz placed Campero temporarily in supreme power; on the 5th of June following, he was elected constitutional president. Campero was an able statesman.

The Peruvians made an unsuccessful attempt to destroy some of the blockading vessels in the harbor of Arica with torpedoes; the Chileans, quite as active, planned a decent upon the town of Ilo, which is connected with Moquegua by railroad. Five hundred men were landed on December 31st, provisions were seized, and some damage was done to the railroad. After visiting Moquegua the party re-embarked, January 2nd.

During the last days of February, Arica was several times bombarded and unimportant actions took place between the shore batteries and the blockading vessels. Several men of the "Huascar's" crew were killed, but no serious damage was done to the town.

On the 17th of March, Captain Villavicencio sailed

from Callao in the "Union" with stores and munitions of war for the troops in Arica, determined to run the blockade, which he succeeded in doing. Discovering the manœuvre, the "Cochrane," "Huascar," and "Amazonas," gave chase and kept up an artillery practice at long range. One shell killed two and wounded twenty of the "Union's" crew, but the vessel escaped and made her way safely back to Callao.

On the 6th of the following month, the Chilean warships, "Huascar" (which had been repaired and added to the navy), "Blanco," "Angamos," "Pilcomayo" and "Cousiña," commanded by Admiral Riveros, sailed northward, their objective point being Callao. The port was blockaded and an unsuccessful attempt made to capture the "Union" and "Atahualpa," but they slipped in close behind the *darsena*, or mole, and eluded their pursuers. The blockading squadron made the unfortified island of San Lorenzo, just out of the harbor, its headquarters and warned neutral vessels to leave the anchorage within eight days. On the 22nd a bombardment began at long range, but did comparatively little damage, as the shore defences replied from their one hundred and seventy guns. Attempts were made by the Peruvians to destroy the Chilean vessels with torpedo launches, but they were captured and the scheme frustrated. In revenge for these attempts, the Chileans again bombarded the town on the 10th of May, but the batteries on shore replied so effectively that the "Huascar" was considerably damaged.

About this time the Chilean government added to its navy several swift torpedo boats, manufactured in England and the United States. One, the "Janequeo," destroyed the Peruvian steam-launch "Independencia" at the mole in Callao harbor. Lieutenant Galvez, of the "Independencia," threw a one hundred pound case

of powder on the "Janequeo's" deck and exploded it. Both vessels sank, with a loss of eight men of the "Independencia's" crew.

The blockade of Callao, together with that of the neighboring ports of Ancon and Chancay, was maintained for nine months.

CHAPTER IV

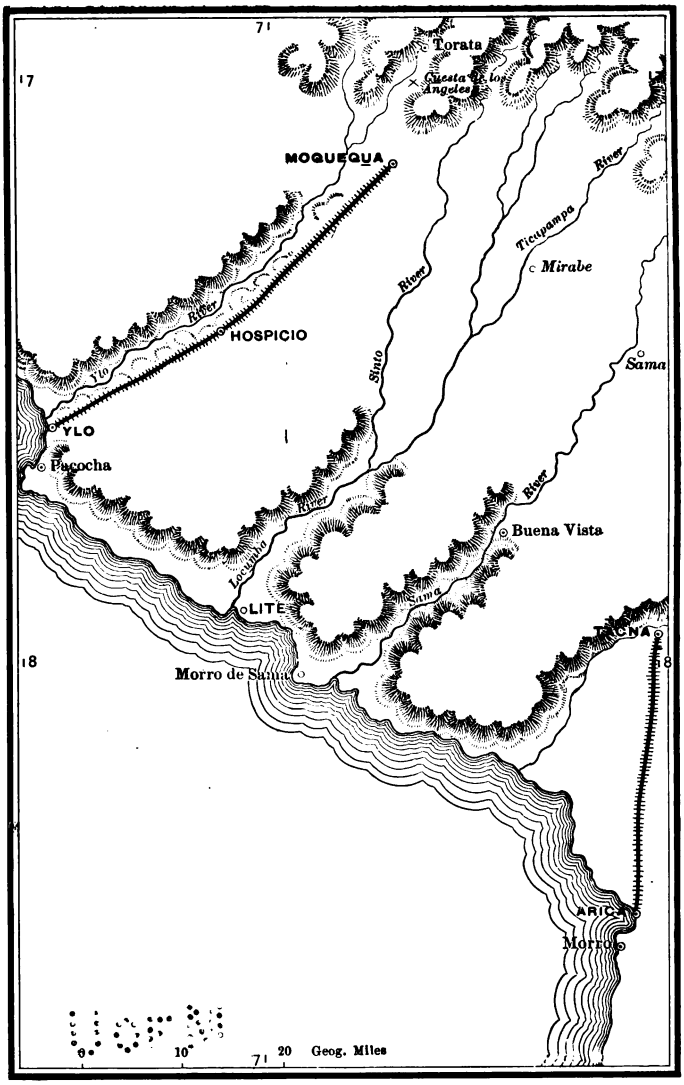
THE OCCUPATION OF MOQUEGUA, TACNA AND ARICA—NAVAL OPERATIONS—THE ADVANCE UPON LIMA—FIRST ATTEMPT TO ARRANGE A TREATY

The Chileans now determined to prosecute the war on Peruvian territory and to destroy the allied armies assembled at Tacna and Moquegua. On the 24th of February, 1880, they embarked twelve thousand men at Pisagua in transports and the next day landed about ten thousand of them at Pacocha, the seaport of Moquegua, sixty miles north of Arica. A day or two afterward an additional force of three thousand men was landed at Vitar, which joined the main army.

After reconnoitering the country and destroying some property at Mollendo during the first week in March, the Chilean army under General Baquedano, who had succeeded General Escala in command, advanced toward Moquegua, which is connected with its ports by railroads.

After a week's toilsome march Moquegua was reached and occupied without resistance. From the heights above the town the Peruvian forces could be seen occupying the strong position of Los Angeles, an historical spot, where, in 1823, General Valdez repulsed the attacks of the patriot forces led by General Alvarado; it was also occupied by Pierola in 1874, in his revolt against the government. At this almost impregnable

[illegible]



BATTLE OF TACNA.

place, which is situated on one of the spurs of Mount Torata, Colonel Gamarra, having abandoned Moquegua, took up his position with about two thousand men. Here were precipitous heights situated in a triangle formed by the river Ilo, a deep ravine on the left, impassable mountains on the right, a ravine and sandy slope in front to be passed before the steep incline could be reached by an attacking force. It was an important position for the allies, as it covered the line of retreat to the north for the main army at Arica.

General Baquedano ordered a thousand men under Colonel Muñoz to make a long detour by way of Tumilca to the rear of the enemy. At daylight on the morning of the 22nd of March, Muñoz attacked in the rear, while at the same time a force began to scale the heights in front of the enemy's position, and two batteries of artillery under Lieutenant Colonel Novoa opened fire. The Peruvians being enfiladed and attacked in front and rear, with a shower of shells, musketry and furious bayonet charges, fell back in some disorder to Ilubaya, leaving twenty-eight killed and a number wounded upon the field. The Chileans immediately occupied Yacango and Torata.

About the time Baquedano's army had advanced from Ilo, (March 12th,) Colonel Silva, commanding a body of Bolivians at Viacha, had revolted against Campero's government. Though the insurrection was easily put down, it was owing to this fact that the large body of Bolivians, consisting of four battalions, had not supported Colonel Gamarra at Los Angeles.

Active preparations were now made by Baquedano to attack the allied armies assembled at Tacna, from 10,000 to 14,000 strong. On the 19th of April, General Campero arrived from Bolivia and assumed the command in chief of the allied armies, the second in com-

mand of the Bolivians being Camacho, while Admiral Montero still commanded the Peruvians. Previously, the Chileans had thoroughly reconnoitered the country and advanced several bodies of troops in the direction of Tacna. Colonel Albarracain surprised a body of twenty-five Chilean cavalry at Locumba and cut them all down but four. On the 17th, Colonel Vergara engaged Albarracain at Sama and killed one hundred and fifty of his men. This cavalry then pushed on close to Tacna, and on the 18th, the fourth division of the Chilean army, which had remained at Pacocha, moved forward. On the 27th, General Baquedano broke camp at Hospicio near Moquegua and accompanied by the war minister, Don Rafael Sotomayor (who died of apoplexy on the way), began his march over the desert toward Tacna, his troops marching in three divisions. On the 20th of May, the army encamped near Buena Vista on the Sama river, sixteen miles northwest of Tacna, the base of supplies being the port of Ite, twenty-five miles distant. Five days afterward the Chilean army moved forward to within six miles of Tacna, and on the day following advanced to within a short distance of the enemy's intrenched position on a line of sand-hills to the northwest of the city, the flanks defended by deep ravines, the front by a steep glacis strongly fortified and commanding a plain over which the Chileans must pass. Admiral Montero commanded the right wing, General Camacho the left; the center was led by Colonel Castro Pinto, President Campero himself being chief in command.

On the morning of the 26th of May, General Baquedano took up a position just beyond the range of the enemy's artillery, and there stationed a reserve under Muñoz. At 9.50 a. m., his Krupp guns opened upon the Peruvians at a distance of four thousand yards and

for an hour did deadly execution. The first and second divisions were moved forward a distance of four miles and deployed in line of battle. Shortly before noon the infantry advanced, led in four divisions by Colonels Amenguel, Amunátegui, Barcelo, and Barbosa. The lines came within four or five hundred yards of the enemy before the latter opened fire upon them. Then in the face of a tremendous hailstorm of bullets, the Chileans advanced on the double and charged, the first attack being upon the Bolivians on the left commanded by Colonel Camacho, which was the weakest point. The left was turned and a heavy enfilading fire opened from the rest of the line. The battle now became general; Campero sought to reinforce the left and for a short time opposed nearly his whole force against the four thousand Chileans who had led the onslaught. For an hour they sustained the attack then began to waver; but the Chilean cavalry made a brilliant charge; the line reformed and resumed its former position. At 12:30 the Chileans were wavering and falling back, at 1 o'clock they were making a spirited advance. Their riflemen carried the intrenched position, their artillery constantly mowing down the ranks of the Aymara and Inca Indians upon the crest of the sand-hills. The allies fell back, retreated through Tacna and pursued their way toward Corocoro. Campero retired to La Paz and Montero with the Peruvians toward the north by way of Torata, which place was soon after occupied by Barbosa with a force of Chileans. The Chilean loss amounted to 2,128 in killed and wounded; the Peruvians lost 2,500 killed and wounded; the Bolivian losses could not be accurately estimated; four hundred prisoners were taken.

An advance was soon made upon Arica. The Chilean cavalry pushed forward and unearthed a number of tor-

pedoes which the Peruvians had planted at the approaches of the railway bridge over the Chacalluta river. On the 2nd of June, four thousand Chileans advanced to Chacalluta near Arica. Colonel Leyra a few days before had attempted to reinforce Arica with two thousand Peruvians from Arequipa, but hearing of the defeat at Tacna had fallen back.

Arica was a strongly fortified place, situated on a sandy plain rising above the beach, on the south defended by a fort on the high Morro hill, around the town a line of forts and trenches, on the north three batteries. In the harbor the "Manco Capac," commanded by Captain Lagomarsino, was anchored near the forts. The defenses were garrisoned by two thousand troops under the command of Colonel Bolognesi; Captain Moore commanded the batteries on the Morro.

Establishing his headquarters at Chacalluta, General Baquedano invested Arica on the land side, posting his artillery so as to cover assaulting parties. In the harbor the squadron, commanded by Captain Latorre, consisting of the "Cochrane," "Magallanes," "Covadonga" and "Loa," stood ready to bombard the town. On the 5th of June, Bolognesi was summoned to surrender. He refused and the next morning the attack began. The Chilean field-batteries opened fire at long range, but were soon silenced by the one hundred-pounders the Peruvians brought to bear upon them. The squadron then opened fire at distances ranging from one thousand to eight thousand yards. The shore batteries and the "Manco Capac" replied vigorously. The "Covadonga" was struck twice by huge projectiles and was so much damaged that it was found necessary to send her to Pisagua for repairs; a shell entered near one of the "Cochrane's" guns and, exploding, wounded twenty-

seven men. The Chilean ships were now withdrawn to await the assault on the following day.

The plan of the assault was for one regiment to attack the northern batteries, three regiments to attack the southern forts, and simultaneously others were to attack the sand-bag defenses along the line. For this purpose four thousand men were selected, and the command assigned to Colonel Pedro Lagos.

At daylight on the 7th of June, half of the Chilean force under Lagos made a vigorous assault upon the sand-bag defenses before the Morro; the defenders fled to the latter place, and the action became general. The three batteries on the beach were carried. The Peruvians fired a mine, or torpedo, and in retaliation the Chileans massacred four hundred and fifty men, when, at 7 a. m., the Peruvian defenses had all been carried, with the exception of the Morro and east forts. The main body of the assaulting force had rushed up the inclined slope to the Morro on the inland side in the face of a lively rifle fire, scaled the low parapet, and after a gallant struggle, defeated the garrison. The other forts had either been captured or abandoned by this time and the town was in the hands of the victorious Chileans. The Chileans lost three hundred and seventy-two men; of the Peruvians, seven hundred were lying dead in pools of blood, "*Se forman pantanos de sangre!*"* many were wounded and six hundred taken prisoners. The "Manco Capac" was blown up to prevent her falling into the hands of Baquedano's victorious army. The crew went aboard the transport "Itata," but subsequently gave themselves up. A torpedo-boat was also blown up by her crew. The victors permitted the Peruvians to transport their wounded in the "Limeña" to Callao, where they were placed in the

*Vicuna Mackenna.

hospitals. The Chileans were now masters of the sea, the entire Bolivian coast and a rich province of Peru.

Soon after the fall of Arica several naval incidents worthy of mention occurred in the neighborhood of Callao, where the blockading squadron still maintained a rigorous blockade. On the afternoon of the 3rd of July, a Huacho packet, or small coasting vessel, was observed to quit the harbor and sail northward. The "Loa," which had arrived from Arica shortly before, gave chase. Three men were seen to leave the coaster and take to the shore, as the "Loa" approached. Captain Peña commanded the warship; he sent Lieutenant Martinez to examine the abandoned vessel, which was found to have on board a cargo of vegetables and poultry. The little craft was towed alongside the Chilean vessel, and the transfer of the cargo had been nearly completed, when a terrific explosion tore open the "Loa's" side at the water-line causing her to instantly fill and sink. Some kind of infernal machine, charged with more than two hundred pounds of dynamite, had been arranged in the bottom under the chickens. Captain Peña, three officers and fifty men, went down in the ill-fated craft; thirty-eight of the crew were saved.

Two months passed, during which both sides were preparing actively for the final struggle. In the last days of August, the "Angamos" engaged the batteries in Callao harbor at a distance of three and four miles. On the last day, September 1st, some damage was done to the "Union." Two days afterward the batteries were again engaged by some of the vessels of the fleet, but with no other result than the sinking of a tug.

On the 13th of the month, another successful attempt was made by the Peruvians to blow up Chilean men-of-war. This time it was the "Covadonga," which had

been sent to maintain the blockade in the port of Chancay, not far from Callao. Observing an empty gig and launch near the mole, the "Covadonga" opened fire and destroyed the launch, and then sent a boat alongside to examine the gig. When this had been satisfactorily done, the little craft was towed to the warship where tackles were hooked on for the purpose of hoisting her up the starboard davits. When the tackles were tightened an explosion took place. The "Covadonga" was blown in and sank immediately. The gig had been arranged to explode in this manner. The captain and some of the crew perished, but about fifty of the men were rescued.

These diabolical acts enraged the Chileans to such an extent that Admiral Riveros bombarded three defenseless towns; not, however, until the Peruvians had refused to accede to his demands and turn over the "Union" and "Rimac," then lying in the harbor protected by the guns of the batteries.

An expedition of three thousand men was landed at Chimbote, Paita and other places about this time, commanded by Colonel Patrick Lynch, the avowed object being to ravage the coast towns. In Paita, he burned the custom-house and other public property, and committed depredation in ten or eleven other coast towns, as well as upon adjoining farms. Near Chimbote a contribution was demanded of nearly $100,000 from a rich sugar planter at Palo Seco, by way of ransom. The president, Pierola, refused to allow the planter, Don Dionisio Derteano, to pay the amount; then Lynch burned the premises and destroyed the property.

After this another attempt was made by the Peruvians to blow up Chilean ironclads, October 9th, by means of a sunken boat filled with powder. This time they were not successful. On the 6th of December, three of

the Chilean torpedo-boats were drawn into an action with a Peruvian armed steamer, the "Arno," in the harbor of Callao. The fleet took part and this drew the fire of the shore batteries. One of the torpedo-boats, the "Fresia," was struck by a shell and sunk, but was soon afterward raised by the Chileans. A few days afterward, four of the blockading vessels engaged the monitor, "Atahualpa," which had moved out about a mile from the mole. During the engagement the big one hundred and eighty-pounder breech-loading gun of the "Angamos," which had, on account of its range, done much valuable service for the Chileans, broke from its connections and fell overboard. The loss of this gun was probably felt more than the loss of the unfortunate lieutenant whom it killed as it went over.

While the Chileans were moving their troops down from Tacna and massing them at Arica, preparatory to embarking them for the north, the United States minister at Santiago, Mr. Osborn, was offering the good services of his government to bring about peace. It was arranged that a conference should take place on board the United States warship "Lackawanna" in the harbor of Arica, representatives from the three governments engaged in the war to be present. Don Aurelio Garcia y Garcia and Don Antonio Arenas represented Peru; Don Mariano Baptista and Don Juan Carrillo, Bolivia; Colonel Vergara, the new Chilean minister of war, Don Eulogio Altamirano and Don Eusebio Lillo, represented Chile. Mr. Osborn, United States minister to Chile, Mr. Christiancy and Mr. Adams, representing the same government in Peru and Bolivia, were present. The meeting took place October 22nd; the Chilean representatives required the province of Tarapacá south of the Camarones, the Bolivian seacoast and a war indemnity of $20,000,000, one-fifth of which

was to be in cash, the return of all Chilean private property taken, as well as the transport "Rimac," the abrogation of the secret treaty of 1873, which was known to have been agreed upon by Peru and Bolivia, the retention of Moquegua, Tacna and Arica until all conditions were complied with, and an obligation not to fortify Arica in the future.

The conditions were not accepted and Chile replied that she must have compensation for her sacrifices, and the provinces which her capital and energy had made valuable. Peru proposed to leave the question to the United States for arbitration; Chile, seeing little to arbitrate while she was conqueror, refused. Bolivia suggested a full war indemnity in lieu of territory; this was refused. Chile asked just what she had conquered, and believed in the well-worn adage that to the victors belong the spoils.

The conference was broken off and the Chilean army, 25,000 strong, prepared to embark for the neighborhood of Lima, in three divisions. On November 18th, one division of nine thousand men under Colonel Lynch landed at Pisco, drove off the garrison stationed there under Colonel Zamudio, and then occupied the town, also the town and valley of Yca; then it marched to Chincha, whence it afterward pushed northward to Curayaco Bay, where the other two divisions under Sotomayor and Lagos were to disembark near Chilca, one hundred and seven miles from Pisco.

Upon the approach of the Chilean forces Pierola turned over the civil government to La Puerta and assumed command of the Peruvian army about the capital. The foreign naval officers obtained permission for representatives from the neutral vessels to join the headquarters of each of the armies. This request being granted, eight representatives were selected from

the British, American, French and Italian squadrons, to visit the headquarters of General Baquedano and General Pierola and report upon the struggle, now near at hand.

CHAPTER V

BATTLES OF CHORRILLOS AND MIRAFLORES—OCCUPATION OF LIMA AND CALLAO—ESTABLISHING A GOVERNMENT

The Peruvian government issued a decree ordering every male resident in Lima capable of bearing arms to join the troops in the field for the protection of the capital. In this manner an army was hastily summoned, in four divisions, of five thousand to six thousand men each, commanded respectively by Colonels Iglesias, Suarez, Davila and Caceres. President Pierola commanded in chief, General Silva was chief of staff. The men were poorly clothed, worse fed and armed with rusty Remingtons and Winchesters. The one hundred guns in the artillery parks and forts, were of Lima manufacture principally, and varied as to patterns. The whole of the Peruvian force in and about the capital has been given at 33,500.

The Chileans had now in this vicinity 21,000 infantry, artillery 1,370, cavalry 1,252; a total of 23,621 men, well-equipped and with sixty-three guns of good pattern. From this it will be seen that there was no great disparity either in numbers or strength in the respective armies.

Being now advised that the Chileans would advance upon the capital from the south, Pierola determined to form lines of defense in that direction. Breastworks

were thrown up in two long semicircular lines; the outer, ten miles from Lima, was about six miles long, extending from the high Morro Solar, near Chorrillos on the coast, to the mountains on the east; the inner line, about six miles out and four miles in length, passed just outside the village of Miraflores. Mines and torpedoes were prepared, but were not of much worth in checking the advance of the enemy over the sand-hills and through the beautiful orchards and clover fields which surrounded Lima. Redoubts upon Mount San Cristobal to the north of the city and upon Mount San Bartolemé to the south and east, with batteries on the small hills south of the city, constituted the nearer defenses.

On the 23rd of December, two divisions of the Peruvian army moved into line at Chorrillos; on the day following the rest of the army went to Miraflores. The divisions at Chorrillos under Colonels Iglesias and Suarez extended their lines from Villa to Monterico Chico, strongly intrenched as described above; the other divisions under Colonels Davila and Caceres, took up positions in the Miraflores line. General Pierola established his headquarters at Chorrillos.

As already stated, the first division of the Chilean army was landed at Pisco and ordered to march northward to form a junction with the main army at Curayaco. General Villagras was at first in command at Pisco, but was subsequently relieved, Lynch being appointed in his place. On the 13th of December, Lynch began his march northward. Along the route he destroyed much property, burning and pillaging several villages, in revenge for being repeatedly annoyed by desultory skirmishes with the enemy. He arrived with his division at Curayaco on the 25th, bringing with him considerable booty.

The main army disembarked at Curayaco from the 22nd to the 25th, and immediately occupied the towns of Lurin and Pachacamac a few miles to the northward. Here headquarters was established and the army went into camp. One brigade was thrown across the river Lurin to guard the bridge and approaches from Chorrillos; Colonel Barbosa pushed on to Manzano in the upper part of the valley and there encountered the cavalry force which had been harassing Lynch on his way north. The commander, Colonel Aróstegui, and upward of two hundred men, were killed or taken prisoners, the remainder making their escape to Lima.

Both armies were now actively engaged in preparing for the final struggle and reconnoitering for positions. January 6th, the Chilean commander-in-chief reconnoitered the Peruvian line at Chorrillos with a considerable force. On the 9th, Barbosa was sent with his cavalry to Até to reconnoitre the enemy's extreme left and report on the feasibility of a flank movement in that direction. A skirmish occurred in which several Chileans were killed. Pierola the same day strengthened the position of his left with Davila's division, for which reason Baquedano decided to abandon the idea of a flank movement and attack in front.

On the afternoon of the 12th, the Chilean army moved by the mountain road of Atocongo toward the Peruvian right; Lynch, however, with two regiments moved by the coast road to attack the Peruvian right near Morro Solar. On the following morning the Chilean army emerged from the mountain road and formed for battle along the whole line, General Sotomayor in the center, Colonel Lagos on the extreme right, the left under Lynch; the reserves under Colonel Martinez were placed back between the center and left.

The Peruvians had Iglesias with five thousand men

to oppose Lynch, Caceres commanded the center, defending Santa Teresa and San Juan, Davila was on the extreme left, Suarez' division formed a reserve.

At the break of day, Lynch's division moved forward and gained a position within four or five hundred yards of Iglesias' position on the right, before he was discovered. This brought on desultory firing which gradually became heavier as the other Chilean divisions approached the Peruvian lines. This was about 5 a. m., and from this time the firing grew more and more brisk. Some of the torpedoes which the Peruvians had placed before their intrenchments exploded, and this so exasperated the Chileans that they subsequently showed little quarter. San Juan was carried in about an hour, the defenders flying for shelter. The Peruvian right was steadily forced back, notwithstanding that the artillery there played constantly upon the advancing Chileans, until it rested upon the Morro Solar. The center was at San Juan, and this having been cut, the Peruvian left wing was driven from its position and compelled to retreat in a rout toward Miraflores. The right, still fighting obstinately at the Morro Solar, was now attacked in front and flank and driven back toward Chorrillos. The Chileans at this juncture let loose their cavalry, which charged the fugitives from the center and left all along the roads to Lima, cutting them down mercilessly.

On the right the fighting was still continued desperately. Colonel Iglesias sent appeal after appeal for reinforcements, but none came. Lynch was supported from the center and the Peruvians made a stand behind the houses and garden-walls of Chorrillos; finally they were forced back and took up a position behind the batteries on the hill. The Chileans opened an artillery fire upon them which at 2 p. m., forced the gal-

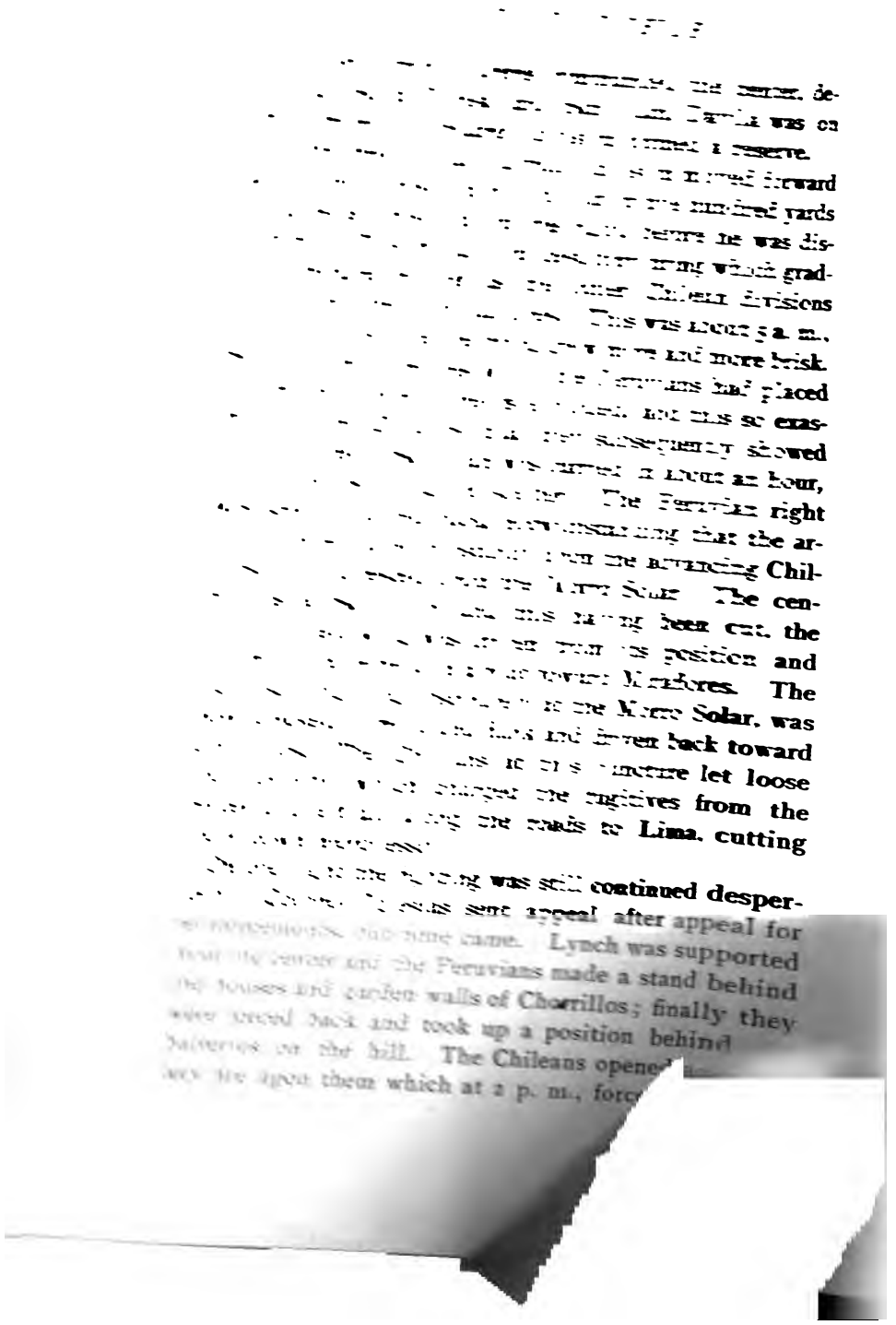
lant Iglesias to surrender; this, too, despite the fact that he had at last been tardily supported by Recabárren and Caceres, who brought about three thousand men to the hill.

The Chilean loss is given at from two thousand to three thousand; the Peruvians lost in killed and wounded over four thousand men, with as many more taken prisoners.

The Chileans occupied Chorrillos and the men soon became utterly demoralized with drink; so much so, that Pierola might have rallied his army and defeated them while engaged in their orgies. For this reason, perhaps, Baquedano may have thought it best not to push forward immediately to the second line of defenses at Miraflores. A vast amount of property was detroyed or plundered by the soldiery, and Chorrillos laid waste.

During the two days following the battle efforts were made by the foreign diplomats in Lima to arrange an armistice, with a view of averting further bloodshed and destruction of property. Pierola had requested this, and two foreign officers went with a flag of truce to General Baquedano and obtained his consent to a conference. An armistice was arranged to extend until midnight of January 15th. But during the afternoon, while making some changes of position, the Chilean third division was brought near the Peruvian lines, and quite close to the place where the Peruvian men-of-war were anchored. Not understanding the exact terms of the armistice, a few shots were fired by the marines; soon the firing became general, to the great surprise of both commanders.

The Chileans and Peruvians both were thus taken by surprise. The former were at the time preparing their



Pern-
as
as it was
any con-
fit to
refused
Peruvian
dis-
September
Chileans.
his office
Ayacucho, and

dinners, and a panic was only averted by the timely arrival of reserves.

At half past two o'clock the battle of Miraflores had thus been inadvertently begun. The Chilean fleet opened fire upon the town of Miraflores and disabled the guns in the fort, which was situated between the town and the sea. The third division advanced and captured the place, the defenders falling back to the Peruvian center. One of the Chilean field-batteries had gained a commanding position at the Peruvian left and opened a destructive enfilading fire; the advantage was pushed by the first division and a strong force of cavalry and artillery, despite the incessant roar of the guns from the heights of San Bartolomé and San Cristoval. Four Peruvian redoubts were carried one after another at the point of the bayonet. By 5:30 o'clock the Peruvian army was fleeing in a wild rout toward the city, leaving over two thousand dead upon the field. The Chilean loss was about the same.

Miraflores was burned; the Peruvian army was dispersed in all directions. Pierola with his chiefs retired to a little town in the mountains; all the Peruvian artillery and munitions of war fell into the hands of the victorious Chileans.

On the day following, the municipal Alcalde of Lima, Torico, formally surrendered the capital, and on the 17th, the Chilean army took possession. Riots occurred and General La Cotero, Prado's late minister of war, undertook a revolution to put himself in Pierola's place, but he was taken and imprisoned. The mob looted and burned the Chinese quarters; liquor stores, as well as small shops, were rifled. Lima was for a few days a city without a government, or even a police force.

Callao was also for a while given over to mob rule,

but the resident foreigners banded themselves together and soon made a successful stand against the rioters. The "Union" and "Altahualpa" in the harbor, together with several school-ships and transports, were destroyed to prevent them falling into the hands of the victors.

General Saavedra was appointed temporary military governor of Lima to receive its formal surrender, and Captain Lynch was appointed to the same office in Callao, which town he occupied with his division; he soon afterward became military governor at Lima. General Baquedano returned to Chile with all but ten thousand of his troops. Admiral Riveros withdrew with a part of the fleet, leaving Latorre in command of the vessels which remained.

In time President Pierola established his headquarters at Ayacucho, the interior cities being for a time beyond the reach of the Chileans. Caceres brought together the remnants of the army. The Chileans contented themselves with the occupation of the capital and with levying contributions. They refused to treat with Pierola and a provisional government was organized at Lima, Francisco Garcia Calderon, an eminent Peruvian lawyer, being selected by a meeting of leading citizens as provisional president and Admiral Montero as vice president. Chile gave countenance to this questionable government, hence it was unpopular, as it was thought that Calderon would agree to almost any conditions in a treaty that the Chileans might see fit to impose. The old congress being called together refused to permit Calderon to grant any cession of Peruvian territory in a treaty of peace; it was therefore dismissed, August 23rd, 1881. On the 28th of September Calderon's government was abolished by the Chileans. Pierola, too, had on the 28th of July resigned his office into the hands of a national assembly at Ayacucho, and

subsequently refused to hold the office of provisional president to which the assembly had then elected him. The latter office he resigned, November 28th. This left Admiral Montero as vice president in charge of the government. In August of the following year, he proceeded to Arequipa and formed a ministry. Colonel Iglesias still held command in the north and Caceres in the central departments; Suarez was assigned the command of the troops in the south, stationed at Arequipa. During the year the organizing of new forces went on, the Peruvians obstinately refusing to accede to Chile's demands for the conquered nitrate territory and a war indemnity.

In September, 1882, Montero went to La Paz and there held a conference with President Campero; it was decided that the allies should hold out for better terms. Predatory raids and insignificant skirmishes were kept up, hardly worthy of mention. In January, 1882, the Chileans occupied the valleys of Tarma and Xauxa and established garrisons in several of the towns. In July following several of these garrisons were attacked by Caceres and some of them cut to pieces. Colonel Canto, the Chilean officer in command in the interior, then retreated from the valleys.

A similar effort to occupy interior points was made in the north. A skirmish took place near Caxamarca in which the Chileans were at first repulsed, but receiving reinforcements, they in turn compelled the enemy to fly the field. After inflicting some damage by depredations the Chileans withdrew to the coasts, in September, 1882. A resolute attack upon the Chilean garrison at San Bartolemé, a place about fifty miles from Lima, was repulsed on the 22nd of July. The Chileans then withdrew nearer to Lima, destroying several villages along the line of their retreat.

During Pinto's administration the war with Peru had united all parties in patriotic support of the government. All classes loyally supported the cause of the war; congress was in accord with the president and voted supplies and authorized such emissions of paper money as were from time to time found to be necessary. Several important laws were passed, such as the abolition of the tobacco monopoly and a law which declared judges separated from administration and party influences and made the judiciary somewhat more independent of both.

The public interior debt had reached the sum of $30,000,000, but the receipts from the guano and nitrate fields enabled the government to meet its obligations, and, though the paper money raised prices and rents, the country recovered from its economical prostration and a period of abundance followed the crisis of 1878.

CHAPTER VI

THE ADMINISTRATION OF PRESIDENT SANTA MARIA

The war with Peru, having been decided and practically settled in favor of the Chileans by the battles of Chorrillos and Miraflores, it is time to turn our attention to political changes at Santiago, where party feeling at this time was running high. On the 18th of September, 1881, Don Domingo Santa Maria succeeded Don Anibal Pinto as president of Chile. Santa Maria was a pronounced liberal and had long been a conspicuous figure in Chilean politics, having been twice banished for taking an active part in revolutions. In 1852, he had retired to Lima and in 1858, to Europe, a political exile from his own country. He had been minister of finance in 1863, under President Perez, who had formed a ministry of moderate liberals and conservatives, had signed the defensive treaty with Peru against Spain in 1866, and, as minister of foreign affairs during the last year of Pinto's administration, had conducted the negotiations with Lavalle pending the outbreak of the war.

The reaction toward the liberal party had set in during the administration of President Errázuriz in 1871. He had formed a conservative ministry, but the attempts to bring about reforms, particularly the abolition of ecclesiastical tribunals, had estranged the president

with the moderate liberals from the old conservative party. This evolution once begun continued through the administration of Pinto. The conservatives were kept out of office, and in time the power and influence of the administration was exerted in favor of liberals.* The conservatives had become demoralized, out of line, "*fuera de linea*," systematically removed from all public offices, possessed not a single influential official, and hanging over them was the shadow of political ostracism.† This was the condition of the parties at the close of the year 1880, as described by one of the foremost conservatives. But the men of the old régime were not disposed to submit tamely to the new order, and constant dissensions followed. From the time that the nation had become free from the Freire agitations and the liberals had been put down in the battle of Lircay, 1831, until 1871, presidents had been able to succeed themselves and hold two terms of office each. Prieto, Bulnes, Montt and Perez had each held two terms, and during those years Chile had had a stable government, strong enough to put down all liberal insurrections, although the policy of Prieto, Bulnes and Montt, was, because of this very centralized power, illiberal and retrograde. Under the new order, no president could hope to do more than name his successor, and an attempt to do this by Balmaceda, as we shall see, was vigorously opposed. It was opposed when Pinto favored Santa Maria.

A strong effort was made to prevent the nomination of Santa Maria; the liberal party, which was made up of a radical group, the moderate liberals and other

*"Sistemáticamente alejados de todos los puestos publicos, no gozaban de influencia oficial ninguna, i pesaba sobre ellos la sombra de una especie de ostracismo político que, si no era persecucion manifiesta, tenia todos los caracteres de odiosidad profunda," etc. C. WALKER MARTINEZ.

†"La herencia de Pinto debia necesariamente servir a las ambiciones liberales," etc. MARTINEZ.

factions, was again divided in sentiment. Some were with Pinto in his support of Santa Maria, others were for General Baquedano, the hero of the war. Two meetings were held, one at Santiago and the other at Valparaiso, on January 2nd, the one at the capital to form the basis for a liberal convention, the one at Valparaiso for the same object, but in favor of other men than those who inspired the movement at the capital. The meeting at Santiago wished to hold a convention at Santiago composed of distinguished persons, lawyers, deputies, doctors, senators, municipal officers and university students; in the meeting at Valparaiso much was said of democracy, of the popular elements, local representation and national interests. Secret influences and interests moved different persons toward one or the other of the groups, and ambitious leaders in each faction created discord. In the Santiago meeting the resistance of the radicals was most characteristic and the convention went to pieces, loudly blaming the Valparaiso gathering for the work. Thus stood matters when news arrived of the surrender of Lima.

Political agitation, in the face of the glorious news, was momentarily suspended, as if by a spell, and all parties united in manifestations of enthusiastic patriotism. Still, in the midst of the jubilation, Santa Maria's partisans did not forget to work. Baquedano's name was suddenly presented by the opposition and his candidacy became formidable;* but during the evening and the following morning the rumor was circulated that Santa Maria was the official candidate. He was *amigo intimo de Pinto*, and the government influence was actively exerted in behalf of the minister.

But public feeling ran high, and called for a candi-

*"La candidatura de Baquedano surjió; i surjio como Minerva armada de la cabeza a los piés, con grande prestijio, con popularidad enorme."—MARTINEZ.

date apart from official influence. At this juncture the conservative party espoused the candidacy of Baquedano, not having a suitable name to present as its official candidate, and sought in this way to fall in with the popular movement. The conservative leaders denounced official interference in the nominations and elections, and sought to bring about a reunion of their party with the Montt-Varistas, the latter being a branch of the ancient conservative party, opposed to radical reforms and in favor of aristocratic government, but at this time without very well-defined political maxims. They, the Montt-Varistas, knew the government influence to be strong and, therefore, decided in favor of the official candidate. Santa Maria was nominated.

But dissensions were rife and on the 10th of June General Baquedano withdrew his name; this gave the death-blow to the movement which had been started against the government. The latter carried the elections, and the opposition sullenly acquiesced, heaping opprobrium upon the president elect.*

Santa Maria selected as his cabinet the following names: Minister of the interior, Don José Francisco Vergara; foreign relations, Don José Manuel Balmaceda; justice, culture and public instruction, Don Eujenio Vergara; finance, Don Luis Aldunate; war and navy, Don Cárlos Castellon. The ministry was not entirely satisfactory to the opposition, but still did not incite resistance, and the new government began its administration with fair prospects of success, and with hopeful expectations of bringing about several contemplated reforms.

Meanwhile the war in the north had been practically decided by the battles of Chorrillos and Miraflores,

*"?Era me orador ilustre? No. ?Un interjérrimo magistrado? No. ?Un escritor notable? No. ?Un Sabio? No. ?Un caracter, un héroe, un solado, siquiera? No." C. WALKER MARTINEZ.

but, as we have already noted, skirmishes were still kept up in the interior, and both Peru and Bolivia held out nearly three years, for better terms than Chile was willing to grant. During the last year, 1883, there were several sharp engagements between the Chileans and a force which General Caceres had long been able to maintain in the interior. In May, there were several skirmishes, in two of which Caceres was defeated, (Balconcillo and Pampas de Sicaya), General Canto commanding the Chileans. On May the 22d, the Peruvian leader was again defeated at Garma by General Garcia.

The indefatigable Caceres again rallied a force and met the Chileans on July 10th, at Huamachuco. Colonel Alejandro Gorostiaga commanded about one thousand six hundred Chilean troops, and with them defeated Caceres at the head of over four thousand. The Peruvians lost nine hundred killed and as many more wounded; the Chileans lost fifty-six killed, one hundred and four wounded, also four officers. The Peruvian general, Silva, was killed; eleven pieces of artillery and eight hundred stands of rifles were captured. The battle lasted from 6 a. m. to 2 p. m.

When Lynch, the Chilean military governor, received news of the battle, he invited President Iglesias to come to Lima and take charge of the government there, which had been opposed by Caceres. At the same time he published a decree calling on all officers formerly serving under Caceres to come in and give themselves up, or be treated as spies.

The Indians of the interior, incited by men more unscrupulous than patriotic, still maintained an obstinate resistance. On August 15th, the Chilean commander chastised three thousand of them for pillaging, killing and wounding eight hundred of their number.

About the same time a mutiny broke out among the Peruvian troops at Chancay which had to be quelled.

During the months of August and September active efforts were made to hasten peace measures, and the troops in several districts of Peru recognized Iglesias as lawful president. On September 18th, three thousand opposition troops (Monteneros) were defeated at Huancayo, two hundred of them being killed.

On the 2nd of October, 1883, eight hundred and seventy Peruvian officers availed themselves of Lynch's invitation to come in, and submitted to the Chilean authorities. Puno was occupied, and on the 9th Casma declared for peace. On the 20th, the treaty of peace was signed between Chile and Peru. On the 24th General Iglesias was recognized in Peru as president *regenerador.* On the 29th, Arequipa, which had so long held out, surrendered, and Montero fled to Bolivia, where, however, he was not very enthusiastically received, and soon after went on to Buenos Ayres and afterward to Europe. He resigned whatever supposititious authority he possessed to Caceres. On November 9th, the Chilean army of occupation had been concentrated at Arequipa, and the Bolivian army, or what remained of it, at Oruro. But on this day the Bolivian envoy, Guijarro, quitted Tacna and went to confer with the Chilean envoy, Lillo, with reference to peace. On December 11th, the treaty between Bolivia and Chile was signed. The Indians of the interior, however, led by Caceres, who spoke their language, kept up skirmishes and devastation until the close of the year.

By the treaty Chile obtained from Bolivia the latter's seacoast, including the port of Cobija, twenty per cent of Bolivian port customs, privileges for constructing railroads into the interior, and other concessions.

By the terms of the treaty between Peru and Chile

signed at Ancon, October 20th, 1883, Peru ceded to her antagonist the territory of Tarapacá to the Camerones, forever and unconditionally; the territories of Tacna and Arica were to remain subject to Chilean authority for a period of ten years, at the close of which term the vote of the people of those provinces should decide whether they should return to Peru or remain Chilean. In either case the country to which they should afterward be definitely annexed, engaged to pay to the other an idemnity of $10,000,000. Chile solemnly engaged to carry out certain agreements relating to the guano and nitrate of soda deposits, such as to pay over to creditors of Peru fifty per cent of the net proceeds derived from the deposits, until the fertilizer was exhausted or the debt paid. New deposits discovered in the territory permanently annexed were to belong to the Chileans, and the island of Lobos was to continue under the administration of Chile until a contract for one thousand tons of guano previously made by them had been completed, Chile meanwhile agreeing to pay Peru five per cent of the proceeds derived from the sales of the guano.

The treaty was to be ratified at Lima within one hundred and eighty days of its date, Chile maintaining an army of occupation in Peru until the ratification was completed, at an expense of $300,000 a month to the Peruvians. This monthly idemnity, however, was subsequently modified. The final treaty was signed April 4th, 1884.

The expense of the war to Chile had been enormous, a heavy burden for so small a nation. It was estimated at $60,000,000 by the middle of the year 1881, which was within $15,000,000 (nearly) of the whole national debt on January 1st, 1880. But the national credit had

been maintained, and guano bondholders had no cause to complain of Chile's engagements.

On July 23d, 1881, Chile obtained two hundred and fifteen thousand seven hundred and twenty-five square kilometres of land in the south by treaty with the Argentine Republic. This matter had been long pending and had several times nearly caused a rupture of the friendly relations existing between those republics. Chile claimed to Cape Horn; the Argentines disputed this and claimed the whole of Patagonia. Perhaps the Argentines were right, but they had acquiesced in Chile's possession of the territory and claim to it for many years, and were not, therefore, now in a position consistently to oppose it.

The dissensions which had preceded Santa Maria's nomination and election to the presidency did not greatly abate after his inauguration. One of the reforms the liberals brought forward was that of separating the church from the state. We have seen how bitterly the clerical party opposed the passing of a law in President Errázuriz's time, imposing penalties on priests who incited to disobedience of the laws. It is not, therefore, surprising that they should bring every influence to bear against separation. In 1884, the question was mooted in congress and gave rise to fiery debates. The government and a large majority of the house were in favor of a gradual separation; the radical group urged the expediency of bringing about the separation by a single stroke. The discussions in ecclesiastical and political circles grew warm, and continued unabated through Santa Maria's administration.

As we have seen, the death of Archbishop Valdivieso in 1878, had left a vacancy which the government desired to fill and, therefore, designated for the place the prebendary. Don Francisco de Paula Taforó. This

nomination was fiercely assailed by the church party and the Pope refused to ratify it until the matter had been investigated. The Bishop of Himeria was sent out as an apostolic delegate and after hearing his report, the Pope again refused to confirm Taforó. The government then handed the delegate his passports, and he indignantly declared that civil authorities should not administer ecclesiastical patronage. This disavowel of the prerogatives of the state in matters ecclesiastical gave increased force to the discussions of church matters and resulted finally in the passage and approval of the cemetery and matrimonial laws and a law which organized a civil registry.

In 1883, the civil marriage law had been passed, and this was from the start as stubbornly resisted by the clericals as the question of separation. The elections of March, 1885, of senators and representatives was a crushing defeat of the opposition, and gave the liberals increased majorities; but the manner in which the elections had been carried by government influence caused great dissatisfaction, although there were wholesale frauds and insolent intimidations practiced by both parties.

The organized opposition of the clericals to the civil marriage law produced turbulence throughout the country. The government refused to allow a clerical marriage any force in law, and the church refused to allow any force in religion to a civil marriage. Women took sides with the church, the men with the government, so that there were few marriages. There was need of reform in this matter, for twenty-three per cent of all children born were illegitimate. The church affixed conditions to marriage sacraments to which men would not submit. The law was intended to curtail the church fees in this respect and to remedy the discord by pro-

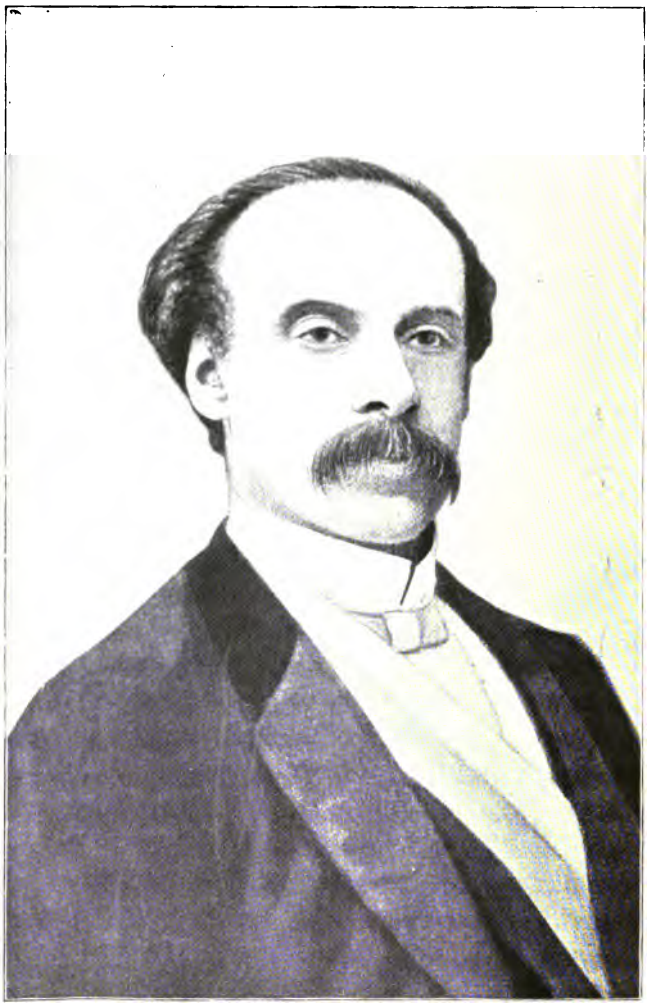
hibiting the clergy from performing marriage ceremonies unless certificates of civil marriage were first obtained.

The clergy refused to marry any one previously married by the civil law, and the main political issue now became the repeal of the law of 1883. The ultramontane archbishop excommunicated the president and his cabinet; also all members of congress who had voted for the obnoxious law. He further threatened that a similar penalty should be visited upon every communicant who obeyed the statute and had a civil marriage performed. This ridiculous opposition to a most salutary law was carried even further, and in the March elections the clergy bought votes with absolution and religious privileges.

We begin to see the first lightning flashes preceding the storm. It is related that, on the 24th of January, 1886, President Santa Maria received through the mail at his residence in Santiago, a package containing an infernal machine. He was suspicious of it, and upon carefully untying the strings, found that it contained a clock-work machine attached to a hammer in such a manner as to explode a charge of dynamite. To this pass had politics come.

Increase in the public revenues enabled the administration to initiate and carry forward many important public works. Large sums were voted to construct railways and other public works, and for purposes of education and colonization. The Araucanian territories were occupied as far as the site of the ancient Villarica and active colonization was begun. A law was passed pensioning the infirm and crippled soldiers of the war and their orphans. Public offices were reorganized, and a better system of promotions and payment of civil employés and military officers was arranged.

Certain articles of the constitution were amended, removing many of the barriers which had hitherto stood in the way of a true federal, republican and constitutional form of government. A new election law was passed, which it was hoped would give more freedom and purity to the ballot.



JOSE MANUEL BALMACEDA.

PART V. THE CAMPAIGN

CHAPTER I

RESIDENT SALVAGED [illegible]

The conservative opposition [illegible] more pronounced during Santa Maria's administration and the elections had come to be [illegible] by [illegible] lence, fraud, oppression and [illegible] tions of 18[illegible] two men had been [illegible] wounded in those of 1885, [illegible] one hundred [illegible] six were killed [illegible] of the year [illegible] six were killed [illegible] dred and sixty [illegible] and three hundred [illegible] two wounded. [illegible] consider the small voting population, only one [illegible] subsidiary [illegible] who can read [illegible] registered and qualified high tax payers [illegible] that the elections had [illegible] at the [illegible] civil [illegible], so high did [illegible]

The Santa Maria government [illegible] toward the election of Don José [illegible] The [illegible] at first to [illegible] Francisco Vergara, but [illegible] this [illegible] four sections of the liberal party [illegible] ascendency outweighing the Montt [illegible] and conservatives; and the official [illegible]

José Manuel Balmaceda

PART V—THE CIVIL WAR OF 1891

CHAPTER I

PRESIDENT BALMACEDA—MATERIAL PROGRESS

The conservative opposition had grown more and more pronounced during Santa Maria's administration, and the elections had come to be marked by turbulence, fraud, oppression and bloodshed. In the elections of 1882, two men had been killed and seven wounded; in those of 1885, seventeen were killed and one hundred and sixty-five wounded; in the elections of the year 1886, forty-six were killed, and one hundred and sixty wounded, making a total of sixty killed and three hundred and thirty-two wounded. When we consider the small voting population, only one in fifty, suffrage being limited to those who can read and are registered and qualified high tax-payers, it will be seen that the elections had somewhat the appearance of civil revolts, so high did party feeling run.

The Santa Maria government threw all its influence toward the election of Don José Manuel Balmaceda. The opposition sought at first to unite upon Don José Francisco Vergara, but failed in this. The three or four sections of the liberal party were vastly in the ascendency, outnumbering the Montt-Varistas, clericals and conservatives; and the official candidate met with

no organized resistance. Balmaceda was elected and duly installed on September 18th, 1886. His cabinet contained as minister of the interior, Don José F. Vergara; foreign affairs, Don Francisco Freire; Varas, Edwards and Aturez filled the other departments. In the following year a new cabinet was formed, the old ministers resigning on account of the president's lavish expenditures in pushing public works. On this question four ministries resigned during the next four years.

Under Balmaceda numerous reforms were proposed; one project was to prohibit senators and deputies from having interests in public contracts, another, that neither the president nor any minister should give an office to a near relation unless he was qualified in every respect to hold it, and still another, that the president should be elected by congress, not by popular vote. All these questions caused exciting debates.

This was a time when there was much talk of progress, of advancement in public interests. In the year following Balmaceda's election the senate voted a subsidy to complete the gap of one hundred and forty miles of railroad connecting the Chilean system with that of the Argentine Republic by way of the Uspallata pass. The Arauco company in London was granted the right of completing a grant made by Chile in 1884, for the building of a railroad from Concepcion to Rios de Curanclahue and for the undertaking of certain public works in the province of Arauco and other parts of Chile. In the summer of 1887, a telephone line was constructed between Valparaiso and Santiago, and Coquimbo was lighted with electric lights. The state devoted $3,000,000 a year to free public instruction; 1,500 primary schools were established with over one hundred thousand pupils. During the year 1887, the government paid out $650,000 to hospitals, lazarettos,

vaccination offices, fire departments, etc. The police received a subsidy of $471,900. In the year 1888, there was set aside for all these purposes the sum of $1,196,140.

In December, 1887, there were 1,096 kilometers of government railroad in operation, and 1,369 kilometers projected for the following year at a cost of nearly seventeen millions of dollars (£3,517,000). Private companies operated 1,558 kilometers.

Yet despite these lavish expenditures for public improvements of all kinds, the government made an excellent showing in its annual budgets and firmly maintained the credit of the state. In 1889, the revenue collected by the government amounted to $50,183,938; expenses, $46,135,501; foreign debt, $39,748,000; home debt, $23,834,484. On the first of January of the year 1889, the government had an available fund of savings of about $25,000,000. This, following upon a costly war with Peru, was indeed a flattering showing.

In the years 1889 and 1890, there were abolitions of certain duties, such as the import duties on machines and tools for agriculturists, for mining, for different trades and industries. New railroads were contracted for at an estimated cost of $4,000,000; new buildings for elementary and normal schools were erected in all parts of the country; a new line of steamers to run between Valparaiso and Panama was subsidized, the monopoly so long held by the Pacific Steam Navigation Company being thus subjected to competition.

These vast material and intellectual improvements, which not even the ravages of the cholera scourge of 1887 and 1888, could retard, were not brought about without unceasing debates with the conservatives, who saw the money go into railroads and schoolhouses, which, they argued, should be used to pay national

debts and redeem the paper currency. This sort of liberalism was even too advanced for many liberals; the party, made up of three or four factions, had now enjoyed power long enough to create dissensions within its ranks. Violent political demonstrations became the order of the day, a very notable one occurring on the 20th of May, 1890; and in July, there were labor disturbances. When it became known that the president's choice for a successor was Señor San Fuentes, all parties, save the out and out Balmacedists, the *Liberales del Gobierno*, opposed the candidate; for Señor San Fuentes was as cordially detested by some sections of the liberal party as he was beloved by others.

The constant thunder of the clericals, conservatives and Montt-Varistas began to tell: dissensions had at last been created in the liberal ranks. They had been wont to compare Santa Maria and Balmaceda with the worst of the Roman tyrants, until factions of the liberals took up the cry.* The government interference in elections, so bitterly opposed by the conservatives in Santa Maria's canvass, was now taken up by liberals themselves. It was not democratic, it was imperial, and in the matter of San Fuentes, it was found that the country would no longer tolerate it.† The leaven was working now, and it needed but little usurpation of power on the part of the president to make the opposition cry of "Cæsar" take hold upon disaffected liberals, who joined the conservatives and clericals in significant warnings to the government to beware, lest there rise another Brutus.

*"Como Caligula, Neron, Domiciano, Comodo, Caracalla, Eliogabalo, que todos fueron malos," etc.—C. WALKER MARTINEZ.

†"Pasa en Chile con los sucesores de nuestros presidentes lo que pasaba en Roma con los herederos del Imperio. No los elejia el pueblo, salvo los casos escepcionales de las revoluciones, sino unicamente el emperador asociandolos a su gobierno con el nombre el Casares."—MARTINEZ.

CHAPTER II

THE REVOLT

From 1817, when the Spanish yoke was thrown off, until 1833, Chile was governed by dictators, sometimes well, sometimes ill, but always by autocratic power. In the latter year a constitution was promulgated, under which the ship of state sailed in comparatively tranquil seas for more than half a century; this parchment, as amended in 1874, and other times, is the organic law of Chile to-day. Constitutions are supposed to be the most rigid expressions of law and will, but like creeds they are still somewhat elastic. If they are not amended to keep pace with the popular will and national advancement, certain parts must perforce become practically dead letter, or severely strained in the intrepretation. Such had long been the case with the Chilean constitution. Framed in a time of dictators, it had given almost dictatorial powers to the president, which time had greatly modified in practice if not by positive amendments.

The Chilean constitution is somewhat like that of the United States, yet different in important particulars. The president is chosen by electors nominated by the provinces, three electors being allowed to each representative. His term of office is for five years, and he can not now be twice elected consecutively; formerly he could be. He is bound to convoke congress in regu-

lar session from June 1st to September the 1st, but he can at any time prorogue it for a term of fifty days; he can summon it in special session whenever he may please; he appoints and removes the six ministers, the intendentes of provinces, governors of towns, diplomatic agents and five out of the eleven members of the council of state; he is commander-in-chief of the army and navy, or practically so; he appoints the judges of both the higher and lower courts upon recommendation of the council of state; he approves, promulgates and takes part in the making of laws, issues decrees, regulations and instructions which he may deem advantageous for the due execution of laws.

It will thus be seen that the powers so delegated to the president amount in fact to making him almost an autocrat, should he choose to be dictatorial. In the few instances where he must act in conjunction with the council of state, he can wield an influence almost dictatorial for he has the appointment of five out of eleven members of that body, the other six being appointed in the proportion of three from each branch of congress. His cabinet is entirely of his own appointment. The seven members from each branch appointed by congress as an advisory committee, called *Comision Conservadora*, whose functions are to see that there is due observance of the constitution while congress is not in session, tender advice to the president, and suggest the expediency of extra sessions, is in fact merely an advisory committee, with no power which a president not in sympathy with congress is legally bound to obey.

It will be seen, therefore, that the chances were that at some time a president might be chosen who would fall out with congress, or, rather, with the Chilean oligarchy, which in fact governed Chile and held the

dictatorial powers of the president under control, and then the only check congress would have upon his almost unlimited power, would be the money check. They could refuse to vote him supplies. This is what happened in the case of Balmaceda in the first part of the year 1890. As before noted, he had been returned in 1886, by the liberal party, composed of at least four elements but loosely united. These may be designated as Liberals del Gobierno, who were out and out Balmacedists; Nacionales, those who were opposed to making a wide distribution of the offices as unfair to them, who had been the old liberal party; Sueltos, who were of all shades of political belief; Radicales, who were the extreme liberals and came at last to view Balmaceda's administration as tending toward a conservative reaction. The conservatives were split into three divisions: The Montt-Varistas, aristocrats believing in aristocratic government; Clericales, who believed in a priestly influence in government; Conservadores, who were the least extreme conservatives.

Balmaceda, as we have seen, had been elected by the liberals, and for two years ruled not unsatisfactorily; but his pertinacious adherence to the strict letter of the constitution as against the parliamentary tolerance practiced by his predecessors, his manner of distributing the spoils, his zeal in erecting public buildings, pushing public works and building schoolhouses, necessitating lavish expenditures, eventually caused a split of his former supporters and all but the Liberals del Gobierno, interested in office, were finally arrayed against him, together with the three factions of the conservatives.

Thus stood matters in January, 1890. Four cabinets had gone to pieces over the question of the erection of costly public works instead of providing for the re-

demption of the paper currency; nine foreign ministers had succeeded each other in rapid succession; Balmaceda adhered to his policy and continued to choose new parliamentary-selected cabinets, for, notwithstanding the power granted him by the constitution, the unwritten parliamentary law which had grown up was, that the ministers should be in harmony with congress.

It now became the general impression in congress that the president was scheming to have Señor San Fuentes succeed him, as his presidential term was far spent. It was alleged by his opponents that he wished to enrich himself by promoting a scheme to form a syndicate to purchase the Tarapacá nitrate beds; hence the first step was to elect a successor. It had been the custom for presidents to name their successors, and to use all the party machinery to accomplish that result. It would have been strange if Balmaceda had not done as his predecessors, whatever truth there may or may not have been in the nitrate story. However, he disclaimed any intention of supporting San Fuentes, as also did the latter of having any designs on the presidential chair. Congress doubted the intentions of both, perhaps with good reason, and when San Fuentes was made prime minister by the president, a vote of censure was passed. The president insisted that his ministers should remain. This was against the precedents, but not, apparently, against the constitution. Congress, therefore, refused to pass the appropriation bill until a ministry should be appointed in harmony with its views. With funds cut off, the government could not long carry on its expensive works, or even exist, so that Balmaceda yielded and formed a new ministry with Judge Belisario Prato of the supreme court as prime minister. Congress was satisfied, and

voted temporary supplies. Argentina had just deposed a dictator; perhaps that fact weighed somewhat with Balmaceda when he made this concession to congress.

Congress and the new ministry now began to seek the removal of objectionable intendentes and other government officers, for the purpose of handicapping the president in the forthcoming elections, particularly if he were scheming for the return of San Fuentes. The president refused to remove anybody, save for an indictable and proven offence.

It was an extraordinary session called by the president for the express purpose of passing an appropriation bill—the annual supply bill. He maintained that it had no constitutional authority to go outside and take up the matter of the removal of officers, and the consideration of Australian electoral ballot bills, and municipal bills, which were intended to carry the election against him. Congress would not vote the supply bill until the objectionable officers were removed. The president refused, the ministry again resigned. Balmaceda appointed a new ministry in sympathy with his views and closed the session, October 17th, 1890.

The constitutional committee now sought to exercise some of its senile advisory powers, and advised that another extraordinary session be called. The president and his ministers hesitated about taking the course suggested by the congressional constitutional committee. According to precedent they should have obeyed the behest; according to the constitution, they were not obliged to do so.

While they were deliberating, the committee arrogated to itself the responsibility of calling a session of its own. This congress when assembled could do no more than consider and denounce, and this it did in a lively manner. It became apparent that no supplies

would be voted by another extraordinary session, but rather that some sort of a law would more than likely be passed for the deposition of the alleged dictator; therefore, the president called no session, and disregarded protests and representations from citizens, corporations and the press.

But the government could not keep the state machinery oiled very long without funds. The temporary supplies would be of no avail after September 31st. Congress was daily receiving the support of popular sympathy, particularly in Valparaiso and Santiago, and had a strong following in the army and navy, despite the alleged active efforts of Balmaceda to win over the support of the officers, and to replace the obdurate ones with his own partisans. Summary action, and that very soon, was necessary if the president maintained his power and persisted in his dictatorial policy.

The president issued a manifesto January 1st, 1891, declaring it his intention to adhere to his constitutional powers and functions, to stand by the strict letter of the constitution whether or not some of its provisions were to be considered as constituting it, in many respects, dead letter. With its unfairness and effete provisions he had nothing to do; nor had he anything to do with the new theories of parliamentary government until such theories were embodied in positive law. He might be bound ordinarily to heed the advice of the constitutional committee, but why call another extra session which would only pass votes of censure upon him and would not vote supplies? There would soon be elections, then the people might decide; in the meantime, he would perform his duty according to his oath and his constitutional rights. Such was the argument.

The acts of the president had been declared illegal

by the supreme court. He ignored the court, which was no doubt in sympathy with the opposition. Probably from the time he had dissolved congress on October 5th, the president had been preparing his final coup d'état. It is reasonable to suppose that he was not idle, and there is no doubt much truth in the charge that he increased the police force everywhere, obliged the officers of the army to pledge support to him and, in case of their refusal, dismissed or imprisoned them, broke up public assemblies, and it is likely may have been indirectly responsible for some citizens being shot down by the police.

Some of the officers of the army who had been imprisoned for refusing to pledge their support, appealed to the supreme court, and the court decided that they should be set at liberty. The court also decided that the army and navy had no legal existence after December 31st, inasmuch as no congress had then passed the annual law granting supplies and enumerating the strength of the land and naval forces for the ensuing year. Probably the court was right, but Señor Balmaceda was now dictator and refused to obey the supreme court, which was in sympathy with the party opposed to him. Congress, which had a very questionable legal existence, deposed the president, or declared him deposed, and empowered Jorge Montt of the navy to assume command provisionally; when a junta was formed aboard ship, consisting of Señor Montt, Waldo Silva, vice president of the senate, and Barros Luco, president of the chamber of deputies.

On January 7th, following the publication of the president's letter, civil war began. The commanders of the "Blanco Encalada," "Cochrane" and "Huascar," the only ironclads in the navy, declared at once for congress; the wooden vessels followed their lead. The

army adhered to the cause of Balmaceda, whose rôle was now practically that of a dictator. The congress made haste to get aboard warships, and a state of siege was proclaimed.

Congress had doubtless expected a revolt of the army; but in that respect it had had overweening confidence. The army, through loyalty, through jealousy of the fleet, through increased pay and promotion, stood by the cause of the president; and as there were some six thousand troops and strong fortifications in Valparaiso there was nothing better for the revolutionary leaders and the fleet to do than to proceed north to Iquique, and undertake there to cut off and convert to the use of the congressional party the main sinews of war; to wit, the $20,000,000 or $30,000,000 annual revenues from the nitrate fields.

The congressional fleet was composed of two ironclads, the "Blanco Encalada" and "Almirante Cochrane;" of one monitor, "Huascar;" of the cruiser, "Esmeralda;" the corvette, "O'Higgins;" the gunboat, "Magallanes," and the corvette, "Abtao," the latter being at this time on a voyage of instruction for midshipman.

On January 6th, at night, the "Blanco," "Esmeralda" and "O'Higgins" quit Valparaiso harbor and went to Quintero, twenty miles north, to join the "Cochrane" and "Magallanes." The "Huascar" was left in Valparaiso to undergo repairs. On the 7th, Balmaceda undertook to restore the armament, but Captain Montt manned boats and succeeded in towing her out of the harbor. She was repaired and did good service afterward under Captain José Santa Cruz, taking, for one thing, the town of Taltal. The "O'Higgins," with the transport "Amazonas," took the whole province of Coquimbo, having landed sixty men; the "Cachapoal"

went north and took possession of most of the ports, without opposition.

It was thought advisable by the congressional leaders not to proceed too rashly against Iquique, as the place might offer decided resistance to the fleet, which would have at the outset a demoralizing effect upon the revolutionary cause. Therefore, the first serious move was made against Pisagua, forty miles north of Iquique, and an important nitrate port. After a short bombardment, the town yielded. Though a primitive place where goods are carried from the shore to lighters on old Indian balsas paddled by boatmen with double-ended paddles, it was still of great importance to the congressionalists, because of its nitrate trade.

Some twenty-five or thirty miles inland from Pisagua, on the railroad running east and then south to Iquique through the nitrate regions, is the town of Zapiga. Here a detachment of congressional troops, badly disciplined and poorly armed, was opposed to a body of government troops, by whom they were routed. The latter then advanced and retook Pisagua after a hotly contested fight. The congressional fleet subjected the port to a terrific bombardment, inflicting great damage and suffering upon the town and inhabitants. They recaptured the place.

At San Francisco, a village below Zapiga on the railroad, a body of government troops pushing forward to Pisagua under Colonel Robles, was met by the revolutionists, and after a desperate encounter defeated. Two-thirds of the Balmacedist troops were left dead upon the field, both sides fighting with fierce desperation.

With the shattered remnant of his little army Colonel Robles joined the garrison from Iquique, which had been sent forward to his support at San Francisco, and

again attacked the enemy at Huaraz, the revolutionists, in the meantime, taking advantage of the absence of the garrison to establish themselves in Iquique. At Huaraz the government forces were successful; the enemy was sent flying toward Iquique, with such of the troops as escaped the slaughter. Colonel Soto pursued and carried Iquique by assault, with a detachment of government troops. Colonel Robles should have followed with reinforcements, making sure of this important point, but that he failed to do, with subsequent disastrous results. There were over five thousand government troops at different points within from one to four days' march of Iquique, with not more than two thousand revolutionists to oppose them, yet Soto was left with a handful of men to defend the town against a furious bombardment by the enemy's fleet.

Colonel Soto pounded his field-pieces against the ironclads during the day, February 17th, until his force was reduced to forty men. Rear Admiral Hotham was in the harbor with the British man-of-war, "Warspite." Seeing the havoc made of English property in the town, he proposed an armistice to arrange the matter. Colonel Soto, despairing of receiving reinforcements, agreed to this, and on the next day a conference took place on board the "Warspite;" there the arrangement agreed upon was, that Iquique should be surrendered. A detachment sent by Colonel Robles arrived late enough to be taken in at the surrender. Two million rounds of ammunition fell into the hands of the revolutionists.

The revolutionists determined now to hold Iquique at all hazards. Hold it they must or the congressional stake would soon be lost, for Robles, Gana, Arrate and Camus had five thousand government troops in the vicinity. Therefore, all the men in Iquique able to bear

arms, as well as those from the surrounding nitrate works, were brought into the service. And from the coast towns the congressional fleet brought in as many recruits as could be obtained. In this way an army of about three thousand men was raised.

The revolutionists doubtless expected that the government detachments, commanded at different points by Robles, Gana, Arrate and Camus, would unite and fall upon Iquique. This, however, was not done. There was bad management. Colonel Robles was brave enough, and commanded in chief, but he was seventy years old and a poor strategist. He halted at Sebastopol, about twenty-five miles southeast of Iquique, and from there sent word to the junior officers to rejoin him. But the Atacama desert, which for so many centuries destroyed the Inca armies and many times turned back invaders, could not well be traversed by the other detachments, without water. Besides, Colonels Gana, Arrate and Camus, acting each upon his own judgment, had sent off portions of their troops to protect coast towns.

Colonel Robles moved forward to Pozo al Monte. Here he received reinforcements from Colonel Arrate's detachment, and without waiting for the other detachments to send what men they could, rashly determined to move forward and attack the enemy, who was now advancing. Robles underrated both the valor and the strength of the enemy, who numbered 2,600 men, with some cavalry, three field-batteries, and several gatling guns. The government troops for a time seemed likely to prevail. Robles, though wounded himself, ordered a general advance. But a flank movement, performed by a body of cavalry accompanied by some infantry, was ordered by Colonel Canto, who commanded the congressional troops, probably in anticipation of the

charge made by Robles, and this was successful. Colonel Robles was mortally wounded while leading the charge; the government troops were cut to pieces. The gallant old colonel, while dying of his wounds, was riddled by bullets and pierced by bayonets.

Balmaceda now found himself in the trying position of sustaining a demoralized cause. After Robles' defeat, the other government colonels retreated across the Andes out of Chile and did not return until winter; 2,500 of the government troops at Antofagasta ran away to Argentina; the troops at Tacna fled to Peru. There was now no government force of any consequence left in the north, and the impassable desert prevented troops from crossing overland to Iquique from the south. Transports and a navy were necessary, and Balmaceda had neither to speak of. The "Imperial," which had been doing good service in reinforcing and provisioning the northern garrisons, and which afterward fitted out as a cruiser, acted a conspicuous part in the war, would not hold a thousand troops. The torpedo-boats, "Lynch" and "Condell," had been ordered around from Buenos Ayres; this was the extent of the government's navy. Opposed to it, the revolutionists had several formidable ironclads.

CHAPTER III

BALMACEDA'S POSITION—NAVAL OPERATIONS

The president's manifesto on January 1st, had started a revolution but poorly prepared to cope with him. Seldom has an insurrection in its inception seemed so unpromising. The insurgents had no army, no muskets, no cannon, no munitions of war. The army had not revolted as was expected. A few muskets were captured at Quintero, but even counting those, the congressionalists could only number four hundred, all told.

But what was at the outset a drawback to the oppositionists, proved in the end a benefit. Repeating rifles and smokeless powder were soon procured, and before the close of the contest 12,000 men had been equipped with the most modern weapons of warfare. With a repeating rifle, one congressional soldier became a fair match for three government soldiers armed only with the old-fashioned breechloaders.

Again the contest was not so unequal at the outset as might at first be supposed. Chile is a maritime country, her towns nearly all being on the seaboard; thus the possession of a well equipped fleet by the congressionalists, gave them a decided initial advantage. It is probably true, too, that the army was not altogether whole hearted in its loyalty to Balmaceda. Cer-

tain it is, that a large number of officers joined the fleet and went north to Iquique with the junta, where they fought on the opposition side. The congressionalists were from the start better officered. Colonel Canto was a strategist, with whom Robles was unfit and unable to cope. Then before the southern campaign began, the congressionalists had secured the services of Colonel Körner, a Prussian tactician, and there was no Balmacedist officer his equal in the science of war. Men may fight like demons, as was the case with Balmaceda's troops, but their blood may be shed to little purpose if they are led by inferior officers. The Chilean soldier is a fighter with the spirit of the Araucanian Indian, but somebody needs to plan for him; valor will not take the place of strategy.

Their successes in the north soon gave the opposition the almost undisputed possession of four provinces; and the provinces, too, having the wealth, containing the resources of the nation. Though a barren country where rain falls but seldom, the nitrate desert of Tarapacá and the surrounding country, taken from Peru in the Chilean-Peruvian war, is a region of enormous wealth; and the revenue derived from it by the state is greater than all the import duties. The royalty of $1.60 (Chilean) levied on each hundred pounds, produced a revenue in 1890, of $20,900,000. The desert region of Tarapacá, Antofagasta and Atacama, extending nearly four hundred miles from north to south, is a vast chemical laboratory whose nitrate of soda deposits (caliches) furnish the best known fertilizer in the world. Here enormous fortunes have been made, and are still being made, largely by English capitalists. Here an army of men is employed, the Tarapacá caliches alone in 1890 employing 13,000 workmen. The northern ports of Iquique, Pisagua, Coleta, Buena, Junin, Tocopilla,

Antofagasta, Taltal and Puerto Olivia, have been built up by the immense industry, Iquique being now the seventh city in Chile.

Thus it will be seen, that though the wealth of Old Chile was in the south, including the cities of Santiago, Valparaiso, Concepcion and the large towns, and though Balmaceda had the government machinery and army at his disposal, yet the possession of the four northern provinces by the revolutionists gave them no inconsiderable advantage. There they organized a fairly well-ordered government, and, with abundant revenues procured Manlicher rifles, drilled troops and assumed all the outward appearance of seceding states. Bolivia even went so far as to recognize them as belligerents. The "Itata" being detained, did not reach them with her smuggled cargo from California, but the "Maypo" got through on the 3rd of July, to Iquique, carrying several thousand rifles, a large amount of ammunition, four Krupp field-batteries and twenty-two cannons. The northern army was thus far better equipped than that of the south, and in far better morale, though it seemed likely, at the lively rate at which recruiting was going on, that President Balmaceda would be able to crush them by sheer weight of numbers, his army at different points soon numbering altogether some forty thousand men. If the government succeeded in getting away from France the new cruisers "Errázuriz" and "Pinto," built there for Chile but held until the French supreme court could decide whether they should be consigned to the Chilean government, with the small fleet Balmaceda would then have, the revolutionists might, it was thought, be cooped up in Iquique and their revolt be summarily crushed. The cruisers, however, were always reported on the way but never came. They were in time released by the French

court but were unable to obtain crews in European ports, so that they were detained first at one place and then at another.

The fact that they might come, however, may have spurred on the revolutionists to their final determination to attack Balmaceda on his own ground, and not wait for him to attack them in the north.

By March, public feeling in the south had changed somewhat, and in Santiago and Valparaiso there was not the same general outspoken sympathy for the revolutionary cause as at first. In the rural districts of the south, the sympathy was generally with Balmaceda. Interest began at this time to be taken in the approaching elections. The old congress would have no existence after May 31st. Senators and deputies must be elected. Soon, too, a new president must be elected, June 25th. President Balmaceda, it was thought, would probably carry the elections for his choice as a successor, he being Don Claudio Vicuña, a country gentleman of vast wealth, and popular enough. This caused some trimming to the wind by many oppositionists in the south, but in the north enthusiasm increased for them and recruiting went on actively.

The impartial historian can not uphold all the administrative and political acts of Balmaceda, but when all is said, he was rather an Andrew Johnson than a Robespierre. He said: "Congress by the express terms of that constitution, has no more right to dictate to me what ministers I shall choose than it has to advise what food I shall eat, or what clothes I shall wear." Technically correct; but if a parliamentary precedent had grown up beside the constitution by which the ministry was formed after the English plan, and not upon the American plan, courtesy should have led the president to bow to that precedent. The Chilean con-

stitution had not hitherto been followed to the letter, because the government of Chile had ever been, in its workings, rather oligarchical than democratic. It had been king and barons, rather than president and people. Balmaceda was the most aggressively liberal of all the presidents, elected because of the fact that President Santa Maria had thrown his influence for him. For many years after the fall of Freire, the conservative aristocracy, had controlled the government. Presidents had usually, but not always, yielded to the sentiment of congress, because congresses were generally with them, and were also aristocratic. Hence the alleged *lex non scripta;* but the government had been parliamentary by sufferance, not constitutionally so. When President Balmaceda found himself opposed, not only by the conservatives, but by three factions of his own party, he should have bowed to the conclusive fact of majorities. True, we can well see that this opposition was more material than patriotic. It was at bottom a revolt of interests. Many of the old aristocratic families were in financial straits; the nation was heavily in debt. That Balmaceda should be building expensive schoolhouses, enraged them. When it appeared that another liberal might be elected, it was but natural that they should begin the most strenuous opposition. The clergy hated Balmaceda; he was accused of free thought and had trimmed down ecclesiastical revenues, particularly in the establishment of civil marriages. Tradesmen in Santiago and Valparaiso went with their wealthy patrons. Many people espoused the cause of congress through the resentment men naturally feel against a one-man power. The foreign elements in Chile were against the president. He had hinted at curtailments of grants to foreign corporations; he lamented the fact, that thoughChilean blood

had purchased the Tarapacá fields, their wealth was fast passing away into foreign hands.

And so on all sides the opposition of interests began and grew. It was each faction for its own interest, and a unity of political purpose among them in favor of their interests. Looking at the situation dispassionately, one is constrained to think that President Balmaceda was not without patriotism. But if he was not a Lopez, he was at least dictatorial in spirit, and the age of dictators has passed, even in South America.

If all the inhuman acts attributed to Balmaceda were not sanctioned or committed by him, yet some are a lasting stain on his name; as, for instance, the causing of the opposition youths to be shot at Las Cañas just after the disembarkation of the revolutionary army at Quintero in the final denouement of the struggle. These youths may have been dynamiters, prepared to blow up bridges and cut railway and telegraph lines between Santiago and the south to prevent the southern troops from coming north, but the shooting of them while asleep, particularly the sending of ten of them back to the hacienda to be shot, was barbarous beyond all the necessities of modern warfare.

But then we should not forget that this treatment of the young revolutionists, if historically correct, was no worse than the outrage committed by oppositionists after the last battle; no worse than the shooting down of a boatload of refugees trying to escape the fury of the mob.*

*No doubt it was somewhat as a writer in Blackwood's magazine for January, 1891, says. "The country was overrun with spies, private correspondence was not respected, freedom of speech was forbidden, the press was almost suppressed, and no one suspected of being unfavorable to the government was in safety. Imprisonment, floggings, tortures, and inspections of houses at all hours of the day or night, were of frequent occurrence." There was a sort of reign of terror in Chile, and some allowance must be made for the prevailing turbulence. Santiago and Valparaiso were filled with spies and plotters. There appear to have been inhuman acts perpetrated on both sides. The oppositionists disclaimed the barbarities practiced in the bomb-throwings; perhaps President Balmaceda might have disclaimed personal knowledge of many atrocities on his side.

The vessels from France did not arrive, and it became necessary for President Balmaceda to make some demonstration against the enemy to hold popular sentiment and sympathy in his favor. There was danger in delay. As he could not send troops north for want of transports, a naval demonstration was decided upon. The government navy, as we have seen, consisting as it did of the cruiser "Imperial" and two torpedo-catchers, was no match for the enemy's ironclads. But the "Imperial" was a swift boat, able to keep out of the way of all antagonists save the "Esmeralda;" the torpedo-boats might blow the ironclads out of the water if they caught them at night in some of the northern harbors. It was determined to try what could be accomplished.

On April 18th, the three vessels left Valparaiso. The "Imperial" was commanded by Captain Garin, the "Condell" by Captain Moraga, the "Lynch," by Captain Fuentes. The first objective point was Quintero Bay, twenty miles from Valparaiso, where two days were spent in putting the crews through the torpedo practice. Orders were then received by the little fleet to go north and sink the oppositionist ship, "Aconcagua," and two ironclads, which were supposed to be making their way to Caldera Bay. Further orders were to capture or sink any vessels found in Chilean waters with arms or nitrate aboard. Proceeding north, two or three merchant vessels were hailed and overhauled by the "Imperial," but no contraband nitrate or war supplies were found. The "Imperial" carried coal for the torpedo boats and was to stand off at a safe distance from Caldera until after the attack by the "Condell" and "Lynch." Failing to receive intelligence of them in forty-eight hours, the "Imperial" was to proceed to a northern rendezvous previously agreed upon.

The forty-eight hours elapsed, and nothing being

heard from the other vessels, the "Imperial" went on her way north. The "Condell" and "Lynch" had found the enemy's flagship, "Blanco Encalada," accompanied by a smaller boat, in the harbor. Stealing upon her from opposite sides, they torpedoed her and sank her in less than three minutes.

Coming out of the harbor, the "Lynch" and "Condell" met the transport "Aconcagua," upon which they immediately opened fire. The latter fought desperately for an hour and a half when she ceased firing, which was accepted as a signal of surrender. At the moment of surrender a warship, supposed by the "Lynch" and "Condell" to be the "Esmeralda," was sighted. She was apparently steering to cut off their retreat from the harbor. She was discovered to be the British man-of-war, "Warspite;" but by the time this discovery had been made the "Aconcagua" had escaped and crept under the guns of the forts in the harbor, where she could not be taken by the plucky torpedo-boats. Throughout the engagement the forts had fired constantly, but their shots had fallen wide of the mark. The loss on the "Blanco Encalada" was two hundred and forty-five. One man was killed and ten wounded on the torpedo-boats. The losses on the "Aconcagua" were considerable, as she was crowded with troops.

The "Condell" and "Lynch" were crippled, principally by the damage caused by the discharge of their own heavy guns, and were obliged to put back to Valparaiso for repairs. Learning of this, Captain Garin returned to Valparaiso with the "Imperial," May 7th.

The return of the government fleet to Valparaiso seems to have been hailed with applause. Crowds gathered upon the wharves and the adjacent hills, bands played, voices rent the air and flags waved everywhere. Doubtless the oppositionists in Valparaiso at this time

kept under cover. The impression produced for the government cause was favorable; the demoralizing effect upon the revolutionary fleet amounted almost to a panic. Henceforth, the Iquique warships were kept well out of the harbors at night, being afraid of another descent of the torpedo-catchers, and the harbor of that place was protected by chains and sunken torpedoes.

This expedition, having in the main proven successful, President Balmaceda determined to send his little fleet north again, hoping that a few more warships might be sunk. It appeared that the revolutionists were being supplied by foreign vessels, weighing anchor at the southern ports and clearing nominally for Callao, or other points, but calling at Iquique and northern places with coal, provisions and supplies. This must be checked if possible; before that could be done effectually, the enemy's fleet must be destroyed. With the few vessels at his disposal the president could not hope to maintain an effective blockade of the northern ports, but he must make some show of doing so to rationally insist upon his right to search vessels for contraband goods and re-exact duties on nitrate cargoes. Therefore, on the 10th of May, the "Imperial" and "Condell" were sent north again, the "Lynch," not having undergone sufficient repairs, being left behind at Valparaiso. The first place touched at was Coquimbo, where about thirteen hundred troops were landed. At this time Coquimbo and La Serena were held by a force of 11,000 government troops commanded by Colonels Carvalho and Errázuriz.

On May 14th, the "Condell" ran into Iquique harbor in the night, but finding only a few sailing vessels there withdrew. On the night of the 16th, another reconnoitre was made, but resulted in nothing further than firing a torpedo at a disabled supply ship. The

next day there was some important manœuvering with the "Cochrane," then a run to the vicinity of Pisagua, where the "Huascar" and "Magallanes" were stationed. The three vessels fired a few random shots at the torpedo-boat, which went on to Pacocho, where lay the "O'Higgins." The story is told that Captain Moraga did not torpedo the "O'Higgins" that night as he had contemplated, for the reason that his engineer's brother was aboard it. Be that as it may, the "O'Higgins" was not attacked.

On the 21st, the "Condell" joined the "Imperial" and the two vessels anchored at Taltal. Two field-pieces ashore opened fire upon them, but a shell or two scattered the gunners. The Intendencia, or intendent's quarters, was demolished by the firing which followed from the boats; then a lively landing by about sixty men from the "Imperial" and "Condell" caused the troops on shore to flee, not, however, before they had wounded several men in the boats.

This was all that came of the second cruise, as the two vessels returned to Valparaiso on the 24th.

The government was disappointed that the two little torpedo-catchers had not destroyed some of the enemy's fleet, and in a few days ordered another cruise to the north to make demonstrations against ports held by the insurgents. Pisagua was bombarded and considerable damage done. The forts, as well as the "Huascar" lying the harbor, replied as best they could, but with little effect. The "Imperial" sustained some damage, but none aboard were seriously injured. Iquique was also bombarded, and a few shots were exchanged with the forts at Antofagasta.

Sometime before this, three of the crew of the government torpedo-launch, "Aldea," had been bribed by the oppositionists to take the launch out to sea and

turn it over to a warship, which was to meet it there. The warship was late, the "Lynch" overhauled the launch and the three bribe-takers were court-martialed and shot.

CHAPTER IV

TRIUMPH OF THE REVOLUTION—AFFAIR OF THE BALTIMORE SAILORS

By the middle of June, 1891, the government army numbered 41,000 infantry, 4,000 cavalry and two hundred field-pieces. The army of the opposition numbered anywhere from eight thousand to twelve thousand men. The disparity of numbers caused the president to be over-sanguine; that the northern army would come south and attack him was an unlikely event which he scouted, hence his troops were scattered; 14,000 of them were being kept in the north at Coquimbo, away from direct communication with Santiago, other large bodies were stationed in the south. This was bad generalship, and in the end proved disastrous. Still, the president knew not at what point his enemies might strike, he knew not what emissaries might be set to work, so he sought to guard his whole territory.

The legal existence of the old congress expired on the 31st of May. Elections resulted as had been expected, in the return of members for the new congress in sympathy with Balmaceda. Conservatives and liberals not in sympathy with the president refrained from voting, so that the elections were a foregone conclusion.

On June the 1st, the newly elected congress met.

President Balmaceda delivered an address, defending his action in taking into his hands the reins of government, and giving a hopeful outlook for the future. Congress immediately passed a bill legalizing the president's acts, and then began the discussion of a reformation of the constitution, a discussion which was kept up until Montt and Canto had sent the members flying.

On the 25th of June, electors from the provinces were chosen favorable to the candidacy of Don Claudio Vicuña, Balmaceda's choice for his successor, and on July 25th he was duly elected, but not fully installed before Balmaceda's downfall. Señor Vicuña was a wealthy gentleman of an old and distinguished family, as old in fact as the conquest, and does not appear to have been in any respect an objectionable man, notwithstanding the fact that he has been charged with cruelties almost equalling Balmaceda's.*

The close of the struggle drew on. The province of Aconcagua raised two regiments for the oppositionists, and clamored for rifles. To supply them, the northern army having determined to go south before the government vessels could be got away from foreign ports and before Balmaceda could farther strengthen himself and install his successor, Vicuña, in office, landed at

*As for instance, that he wanted to fire a Hotchkiss gun into a crowd assembled at the door of the Intendencia within which he was established in Valparaiso at the time of the August fight, and that he was only detained from so doing by the German consul. One can hardly credit some of these stories, particularly as to the coloring given them, when they end with such words as "political criminals," "abominable cruelties," and capped with an unrighteous wish that such political refugees as Vicuña, Godoi and Banados Espinosa, might be caught and shot. Señor Vicuña explains the incident by saying that he made his way through the mob, revolver in hand, when he fled for refuge after the battle of Placilla.

The story of Señor Vacuña's alleged atrocity is offset by one from the other side, wherein a Balmaceda sympathizer remarks: "You see to what cowardly extremes the Chilean revolutionists resort". The story is this, and is better history than the above: "Certain capitalists of Santiago, whose names are something more than suspected, entered into relations with a half-breed Englishman of Valparaiso, one Ricardo Cumming, and offered, or sent him $300,000 in order that by means of treachery and dynamite he might bring about the destruction of the 'Imperial,' the 'Lynch' and the 'Condell.' This miserable fanatic Cumming got hold of some Austrians and Italians, gave them some money, and finally offered them $30,000 for each vessel blown up with dynamite. These persons acting in concert with one Sepulveda, who was engaged as a steward in the 'Imperial,' managed to get aboard and to stow away behind the bolster on Sepulveda's bunk an infernal

Caldera. There a thorough organization of their forces was made; their presence there also obliged the president to send reinforcements to his contingent in Coquimbo, thus reducing his forces around the capital.

When preparations had been completed, the opposition army embarked on transports and the war vessels for Quintero, about twenty or thirty miles north of Valparaiso, where disembarkation began on the 20th of August.

The government felt secure in its position until the insurgent army was disembarked. For several days opposition agents had been at work in Valparaiso; many oppositionists there were armed and awaiting the approach of the northern troops to join themselves with them. To let these partisans know that the final hour for the struggle had arrived, the "Esmeralda" on the 18th, fired eight shots at Valparaiso. On the 30th, the senate would formally ratify Claudio Vicuña's election; henceforward he would be legal president; it was therefore politic to have the decisive battle before that time, to overthrow the dictator before he was succeeded by Señor Vicuña, though against him not much could be urged, save that he was a partisan of Balmaceda.

Telegraph and telephone lines to Santiago were cut, and so well planned was the oppositionist movements that the fact of their landing at Quintero, which was

---

machine, containing several pounds weight of dynamite, with time-fuse and every thing ready to set it off in the ship's hold. With equal success they contrived to get similar machines on board the 'Condell' and the 'Lynch,' supplemented by quantities of dynamite neatly stowed away in large loaves of fresh bread from which they had removed the crumb. Bread thus prepared is, as it seems, known as Greek bread. Fortunately, however, for the republic and the vessels, one of the Italians bribed into this plot betrayed his accomplices to the authorities, who discovered the infernal machine, the dynamite loaves, and other appliances half an hour before the time agreed upon for the explosions."

For this offense Cumming, an Austrian named Politico and Sepulveda, were tried, convicted and shot. The guilty quartermaster of the "Imperial" hanged himself in his cabin. The British minister and several members of the diplomatic body interceded for Cumming, but Balmaceda insisted on having him shot with Politico and Sepulveda, wherefore the thing became a political scandal.

The story becomes interesting as a portentious warning of what may be expected in modern warfare

San-
inex-
vern-
iove,
w of
uese
v up
s we
igil-

sted
cav-
s of
ose
ca,
was
ne-
ith
si-
en
to
ed
ell
gi-
ile
ies
nt
eir
ir-
of
id
on

g,
h

PLAN .

Showing movements of a

in closing battles

Compiled from varic

at four o'clock in the morning, was not known in Santiago until eight. Necessarily, so sudden and unexpected a descent, created consternation among government officials. There had been rumors of such a move, but these were treated at Santiago, as a nephew of Señor Vicuña at the time expressed it, as "Portuguese yarns." Repeated attempts had been made to blow up bridges on the railways leading to the south, but, as we have seen, the manœuvers were frustrated by the vigilance of the government.

The opposition army landed at Quintero, consisted of eight thousand six hundred infantry, six hundred cavalry, eight hundred naval brigade men, three batteries of field-artillery and a battery of Gatling guns. To oppose them, Balmaceda's general in Valparaiso, Alzerreca, with a force about equal to that of the insurgents, was ordered forward to Colmo, or Concon, to check the enemy's advance until General Barbosa could join him with the troops from the south. Alzerreca took up a position on the hills, placing the river Aconcagua between him and the enemy. Colonel Canto made a feint to cross the river above Alzerreca's position, and allowed the latter to capture a few field-pieces. His troops fell back, seeing which the government's advanced regiments were moved forward to cross the river. While this was going on, Canto transferred artillery on launches under cover of the hills to the rear of the government army. Then the opposition troops opened fire on their opponents in front, while the artillery poured in a murderous fire from behind. They were near the mouth of the river, where the "Esmeralda" and "Magallanes" had crept in, and they now opened a terrible cross fire upon them.

The battle began at eleven o'clock in the morning, the armies having come within artillery range of each

other at nine o'clock. The cannonading on both sides was heavy. An advanced line of the government forces sustained the furious fire from the enemy's vessels for fully two hours, and were left by the blundering Balmacedist officers unsupported. Finding them unable to keep up an effective fire, Colonel Canto ordered an advance against them. Under cover of the fire from the ships and their own artillery, the oppositionists dashed through the river and began a charge. Reinforcements were hurried forward on the government side, and for an hour the conflict raged, until Alzerreca's advanced guard was literally cut to pieces, forced to abandon their guns which were then turned against them, and to fall back. Colonel Canto profited by their discomfiture and pressed forward with his men, the ships and his own artillery in the rear still keeping up their rapid firing. For two hours longer the battle raged, then Balmaceda's army broke and fled.

The struggle had been terrible for the numbers engaged. Of the eight thousand infantry and nine hundred and fifty cavalry constituting the government forces, between two thousand and three thousand were killed and wounded. Of the 7th regiment eight hundred and thirty-four were killed, nine hundred of the Traiguen regiment, five hundred and twenty of the Temuco regiment, five hundred and fifty of the San Fernando regiment, and others in similar proportions. The revolutionists lost about a thousand men, less than half of whom were killed.

In this battle of Concon it will be seen that the oppositionists outnumbered the government troops, besides possessing the advantage of being armed with Manlicher rifles.* The regiments at the river were

*The reports of the battle are somewhat conflicting. One trustworthy account has the government troops led by both generals, Alzerreca and Barbosa, between whom, at the time, there existed ill-feelings. Another equally credible account

mowed down like grass before the scythe. The shells from the warships did terrible execution, one shell from the "Esmeralda" being reported as having killed two hundred men. One regiment was wholly destroyed by volleys from the Manlicher rifles at not twenty yards distance.

President Balmaceda made strenuous efforts to recover from the disaster. The southern troops could not be hurried forward, as railway communications had been destroyed by the successful dynamiters. About six thousand troops at Santiago were sent forward toward Valparaiso; the president himself remained in Santiago to await the arrival of the southern reserves.

Canto continued to advance toward Valparaiso; two days later he attacked Vina del Mar, five miles east of the former city. This was a watering place, having a race track and almost surrounded by hills. A strongly fortified place, called Fort Callao, was attacked, the "Esmeralda" and "Cochrane" assisting with their guns. The place was well-nigh impregnable and could not be readily taken, so that the attacking forces were obliged to retire.

This repulse prevented a direct march upon Valparaiso, which port General Barbosa's army was protecting, being strongly posted on the surrounding hills all the way from Vina del Mar. Canto and Körner fell back to Salto, fifteen miles from Vina del Mar, where there was a railway bridge over a wide chasm on the direct line from Santiago to Valparaiso. This was destroyed, thus cutting off the president's chances to hurry forward the southern reserves as soon as they

has Barbosa join Alzerreca after the battle, with reinforcements from the south which swelled the government army to 14,000 men. It seems likely that Alzerreca commanded the advanced guard, consisting of two regiments of infantry and some artillery and that Barbosa's men were behind, as the lines extended over a distance of four miles. Certain it was, that reinforcements were very slow in reaching the front.

should arrive. The government made an attempt to prevent the destruction of the bridge by dispatching an armed ironclad train, but this novel defense proved a failure.

It was necessary for the oppositionists, in order to reach Valparaiso, to make a detour of some sixty miles, approaching it from the south. This they attempted to do, but found the government troops occupying a strong position on the heights reaching to and overlooking Pacilla, seven miles from Valparaiso. Here they halted on the 27th. Their army was now increased to 12,000 by reinforcements, mostly impressments, and desertions from Balmaceda's army; it was also greatly strengthened by eighteen field-pieces, captured at Concon. The government force seems to have numbered at this point about nine thousand men, President Balmaceda not being able to get through seven thousand men he had raised at Santiago, with three field-batteries, owing to the destruction of the railway bridge at Salto. The oppositionists knew, however, that it would only be a matter of a day or two before the president would get reinforcements through, and so determined to attack at once. General Barbosa and Alzerreca appear to have disagreed as to the advisability of fighting with their inferior force and poor equipments, but the dispute seems to have been settled in favor of giving battle. It was certainly bad generalship to attack twelve thousand well-equipped men with nine thousand, when there were strong detachments north and south that, by a little delay, could have been got within supporting distance.

Canto had really outflanked Barbosa, who was trying to defend Valparaiso, and was about three miles distant from him when he drew up his forces on the Las Cadenas farm near Placilla. The northern troops were

THE PLAZA VICTORIA, VALPARAISO.

filled with hopeful enthusiasm, had taken all their provisions with them from their ships, and felt that they must win, for they could not return. Barbosa held a strong position on the heights overlooking Placilla, his artillery in the center, his infantry posted on the slopes below the artillery and also back on the high ground. Other artillery protected his right, and cavalry were in reserve. The latter part of his force, however, appears to have had opposition leanings. They neglected their duty, and just before the battle, four hundred of them went over to the northern army.

Owing to the hilly nature of the country the opposition troops, without being seen, had been able to get into position, having started from the Las Cadenas farm before daylight, the whole army excepting one brigade. Early in the morning, as the latter was advancing across the plain, Balmaceda's troops opened an artillery fire upon it. The brigade advanced rapidly and got into position. The oppositionist's right and left wings then advanced and opened fire, which brought on the battle. Step by step Canto's troops advanced up the hill toward Barbosa's artillery, his right wing all the time engaging Barbosa's left, which, after an hour and a half's severe fighting, was in such danger that the artillery in the center was turned about to force back the enemy's right. Körner, however, made a detour and turned the government's left, the opposition centre and left pressed forward, shaking the whole line in front of them; their cavalry clambered up the hills, assailing the wavering infantry on all sides, until an utter rout of the Balmaceda army began.

The battle had lasted three hours; upward of one thousand men had been killed on the government side and fifteen hundred wounded; and four hundred killed

and one thousand wounded on the congressional side. By five o'clock the northern army was in undisputed possession of Valparaiso, and their ships were floating in Valparaiso harbor.

The squadron of government cavalry which had gone over to the opposition before the battle, had made a charge upon the artillery behind which were Generals Barbosa and Alzerreca. Barbosa fell fighting; Alzerreca is said to have been shot while kneeling and begging for mercy. Other accounts state that he died as a soldier should.

Balmacedist leaders in Valparaiso hastened aboard foreign ships in the harbor. The Americans had been about the only foreigners evincing much sympathy for the Balmaceda side. The United States government had prohibited the dispatch of munitions of war from American ports to Iquique, and had chased the "Itata." Naturally, then, a rush was made for the "Baltimore." Captain Fuentes and crew from the "Lynch" were among those who sought an asylum on the vessel. One account from an opposition source states that the "Lynch" opened fire on the town after the battle, and that hundreds of civilians and soldiers returned the fire, and rained such a shower of bullets upon the ship that she was obliged to pull down her flag and surrender, the officers jumping overboard and taking refuge on foreign ships. Another account, which appears to be better authenticated, says: "The congressional troops no sooner saw the execrated 'devil's ship' than they opened a murderous rifle fire upon those on deck. The unfortunate crew realized that they were doomed men, and in desperation replied with the gatling guns. So hot was the fire from shore, however, that nothing on deck could live. Five tried to escape in a boat, but were riddled almost immediately. Two poor wretch-

es swam for their lives, but foolishly climbing upon a mooring buoy, were shot. Finally all were killed except two, who hid in a stokehole, and contrived to swim ashore at night."*

Don Claudio Vicuña, Godoi, Julio Espiñosa, Alfredo Ovalle, and Admiral Viel, escaped from Valparaiso and found refuge on board the German cruiser "Sophie." The editor of the Valparaiso Balmacedist paper was not able to make his escape in time to avoid being shot without a trial.

Then followed a scene in the streets of Valparaiso that would make Bacchus blush and put Nero to shame. The rabble turned itself loose and sacked the town without restraint. Incendiarism and ruthless murders followed. Drunken, debauched men and women danced in the streets and were shot at by other drunken men, in wanton sport. By daylight half a thousand corpses were weltering in blood about the streets. Shops and houses were plundered and firemen shot at while trying to extinguish flames.

The wild scenes which followed at Santiago also beggar description, though there the mob confined its energies chiefly to acts of vandalism. The houses of President Balmaceda and Don Claudio Vicuña were sacked, as were houses of other Balmacedists throughout the city. From house to house the mob went, following a leader mounted on a horse, wearing a poncho and broad-brimmed hat, and ringing a bell. Houses of oppositionists were not generally molested, but those of Balmacedists were looted, furniture and household utensils being carried through the streets, while oppo-

*These two accounts very well illustrate how the "atrocities" vary much according to the government or opposition leaning of the reporter. Certainly the latter of the above reports is more reasonable to believe, since it is hardly probable that the crew of the "Lynch" would have invited destruction after their cause had been lost in the battle. More than that, Captain Fuentes and his officers, it would seem, had at this time made their escape to the "Baltimore."

sition ladies in balconies shouted, "Tell me whose house that is from!" A broken statue of Balmaceda was kicked through the streets, opprobrium heaped upon it at every bound. Beggars possessed themselves of works of art, dirty women wheeled away chairs and sofas, wagonloads of stolen goods were driven to hiding-places, shouts rent the air, and red ribbons, the badge of the oppositionists, fluttered everywhere.

On the 18th of Sept., while the nation was celebrating an Independence day, Balmaceda's legal term as president expired; that night he shot himself while in bed, leaving a letter to the Argentine minister, Uriburu, in whose house he had taken refuge, explaining that he deemed his presence there a danger to all the inmates, and hoping that his death might secure better terms for his late followers.* He was secretly buried to prevent outrages by the mob upon his remains. Thus passed from earth this man whom his enemies called a "tyrant" and his friends "a good-natured gentleman." He is described as being about fifty years of age, six feet in height, of spare build, a broad, sloping forehead, a good-humored eye, and wearing usually in his face a half-playful, half-cynical smile.

The oppositionists met with no farther opposition from the outlying government garrisons. The "Condell" and "Imperial" surrendered at Callao and were taken back to Valparaiso by the transport "Gurmao." A week had not elapsed before affairs in Chile were as quiet as in *ante bellum* days. The junta which had carried on the revolutionary cause so long, at once

*Though knowing of his defeat, Balmaceda on the 28th of Aug. gave a dinner-party in honor of his wife's Saint's day. It shows well the man's courage. At about ten o'clock he sought and obtained an asylum at the Argentine legation, handing over Santiago to the care of General Baquedano. Here he remained, protected by Señor Uriburu, the Argentine minister, until the 18th of September. He was supposed to have made his escape, and one story was circulated and given general credence that he had been shot by his muleteer while crossing the Andes.

took charge of the government and fixed October 18th, as election day, and November the 18th, for the time of meeting of electors to select a new president. The notes issued by President Balmaceda to the amount of $27,000,000, were legalized. A tribunal of justice began a searching investigation of Balmacedist officials, and whenever they were shown to have used public moneys for their own use, confiscations were ordered.

The junta del gobierno ruled the country not unsatisfactorily until November, when Captain Jorge Montt, son of Manuel Montt, president of Chile from 1851 to 1861, was chosen president, and from head of the junta became the head of the republic.

Señor Claudio Vicuña, the constitutional president of Chile, who came within one day of taking his seat, escaped to the United States, and then went to Paris. In an interview at the latter place in November, he said: "After every one of these popular revolutions, a scapegoat must succumb to allay the passions aroused, and Balmaceda's blood must have sufficed for the vengeance of those who opposed him, if, indeed, they had vengeance at heart." This is a philosophical view of the situation from the man who was execrated next to Balmaceda, and who lost a million piastres in the riots.

At the close of the civil struggle in Chile, feeling against the United States government in certain quarters was quite pronounced. Under Balmaceda's government, prompt and energetic steps were always taken to see that the persons and property of citizens of the United States were protected. Cordial feelings existed between the governments, and it is reasonable to suppose that the United States minister in Chile, and United States citizens generally, felt no prejudice against Balmaceda. People of the United States were

disinterested spectators of the civil strife, and had no quarrel with Balmaceda. It appeared to them a fight between the ins and the outs in Chilean politics, in which the ins, as a duly and lawfully established constitutional government, were entitled to be considered as such until they were known to be out. They had little national concern and still less direct individual interest in the internal dissensions of the people of a sister republic in the south.

Primarily, the new government in Chile felt this to be the real cause of estrangement. The fact that the United States government gave no recognition to the congressional party in Chile until it had established itself, that it seized the swift "Itata" for a violation of neutrality laws, a certain cable incident, a story that Admiral Brown of the United States navy conveyed information to Valparaiso of the landing of the congressional forces at Quintero (which is denied, but which may have been at the time pretty generally believed in Chile), Minister Egan's and the "Baltimore's" protection of refugees, all these things naturally increased the feeling against the United States government. And it is quite natural that the antipathy should have been openly exhibited. With such riotous proceedings as are heretofore recorded as taking place in Santiago and Valparaiso subsequent to Balmaceda's downfall, proceedings which no authority could restrain, it is not surprising that American sailors should have been attacked by a mob in the streets of Valparaiso. That is precisely what happened on the evening of October 16th, when Captain Schley of the "Baltimore" gave shore leave to one hundred and seventeen petty officers and sailors of his ship. They spent the afternoon sauntering through the streets of Valparaiso. A Chilean sailor spat in the face of an American sailor and

the latter knocked him down. This was John W. Talbot, who was accompanied only by a fellow sailor named Charles W. Riggin. They were beset by a crowd of Chilean citizens and sailors. These were principally sailors who had recently been discharged from the transports, and longshoremen and not sailors from the Chilean fleet. The Americans were chased into a street car, then driven out of it and Riggin was beaten until he lay half dead in the street. This was within three minutes walk of the police station and the Intendencia; but the police were half an hour reaching the spot. Arriving, one of them appears to have shot the already expiring Riggin, at least, such is the testimony of two men who claim to have been eyewitnesses of the brutal act.

The uprising was quite general in several places at about the same time; there had been significant, ominous threatenings before; no doubt the thing had been planned by the mob, as the "Baltimore" crew had been on the streets from 1:30 p. m., to 6:30 p. m., and there had been time enough for conferences in the grogshops. Eighteen of the "Baltimore" sailors were stabbed and beaten, one receiving as many as eighteen knife wounds. Only one Chilean was hurt. Six of the sailors were severely wounded; the others received only slight bruises and cuts.

Thirty-six of the United States sailors were arrested, for "the deplorable condition of affairs,"* and discharged. Some leaders of the Chileans were arrested, a trial was protracted through nearly three months, and some convictions obtained.

In the long diplomatic correspondence which followed between the two governments, Señor Matta, Chilean minister of foreign affairs, complicated the rela-

* Judge of Crimes Foster.

tions still more by sending out communications to the effect that there was untruth and insincerity in the reports of the United States naval officers and in the official communications.

On the 21st of January, 1892, President Harrison communicated to the government of Chile the conclusions of the United States government in the form of an ultimatum, substantially as follows: The assault was an attack upon the United States navy, having its origin and motive in a feeling of hostility to the government of the United States; the public authorities at Valparaiso failed in their duty, and the evidence led to the conclusion that Riggin was killed by the police and soldiers; the United States government asked suitable apologies and some adequate reparation for the injury done it.

Receiving no reply to this before the 25th, President Harrison that day transmitted the correspondence and all the information connected with the affair to the United States congress, in a special message. While it was being read, Chile's reply came, and was gladly welcomed by the peace loving republic of the north; for the affair was deplored first and last. The reply recited that the government of Chile had no data authorizing it to think that the affair in Valparaiso on October the 16th, was due to any dislike of the uniform of the United States, but regretting, and condemning the occurrence, and offering that the matter should be presented to the United States supreme court, for adjudication as to whether there were any ground for reparation, and if so, in what manner it should be made; or if not to the United States supreme court, then to a tribunal of arbitration. The Matta letter was deplored, a desire for cordial relations between the governments expressed, and the suggestion previously

made that Mr. Egan's recall would be acceptable to the Chilean government, was withdrawn.

This reply was satisfactory to the United States government, and the only question remaining for settlement not covered by Chile's reply was the amount of indemnity to be paid to the injured Baltimore sailors. This was settled by Chile placing at the disposal of Mr. Egan $75,000 in gold and asking him to cause it to be distributed among the families of the two United States seamen who lost their lives, and to the Baltimore sailors who were wounded.

On the 7th of August, 1892, a treaty was agreed upon between the United States and Chile, by the terms of which a commission appointed conjointly by the two republics, shall pass upon all claims made on the part of corporations, companies or private individuals of either government upon the government of the other.

PART VI—CHILE OF TO-DAY

CHAPTER I

THE PEOPLE OF CHILE

The Chileans have been called the "English" and the "Yankees" of the South, and they themselves take some pride in the saying, "*Somos los Ingléses del Sur.*" For many years Chile has been understood by the outside world to have a stable government, good credit and progressive enterprise. Compared with other Spanish-American republics Chile has been remarkably free from internal wars, and has settled her party differences usually with much prudence and wisdom. We have only to look into the internal affairs of neighboring republics to be convinced of this.

The Spanish ancestors of the present Chilean inhabitants were hardy pioneers, Basques and Biscayans, the most rugged and indomitable of Spanish races. The Indians of Chile were the most warlike and persevering of all the American races. From these two sources came, by intermarriage, the present virile, progressive race. And it is one race, for save in the extreme south, an Indian is seldom seen in Chile. The mountainous country and the temperate, invigorating climate, give physical and mental vigor, and the peo-

ple are not characterized by that lassitude which we observe in the Spanish inhabitants of warmer climates.

Physical energy leads to sturdy independence of character and self-confidence, as well as frugality and industry. It gives better morals, better laws, better patriotism; it leads to daring and to deeds of valor. An energetic people, brave and cheerful, they are also hospitable and kind; but they fight for their rights and give not a hair's breadth in compromises. They are aggressive, too, and use force, as men of the mountains do everywhere; for from time immemorial, hill-dwellers have been in a manner freebooters, taking all they might be able to carry off, but generous even to foes. That Chile has an eye on Peru and Bolivia and desires a larger slice of the Argentine Republic, is quite probable. She has assisted all of them in time past to obtain and keep their independence; a ward of Peru in the beginning, she became the strong child in the end. The Chileans hold themselves in high esteem, and take great pride in being Chileans. They admire true greatness and worth in foreigners. They put O'Higgins, Mackenna, Miller, Cochrane and Lynch with their own heroes. But the Chilean is sufficiently national in feeling to look upon himself as somewhat better than foreigners. Whatever is French, however, commends itself to him; the educated Chilean will certainly speak French, and copies French models closely. The bookstalls, and there are many of them in the capital, are filled with French books, and the leading dailies publish nearly always a feuilleton translated from Ohnet, Maupassant, or other popular Parisian writers.

Still, while the Chileans admire most the French, they have great respect for the English as a commercial people, though they criticise them as lacking in amiability. Steamships, railways, mines and commer-

cial houses are in the hands of the English, the latter sharing mercantile interests with the Germans. The Chileans have high respect for these attainments, for their own character is averse to commercial pursuits. English has been gradually coming into favor with the liberals during the past ten years, until now it holds a place nearly on a level with French in the popular estimation, and the young men and maidens consider it essential to understand both languages, if they would be considered educated. To be educated in South America and Mexico, is certainly to speak more than one language.

There are advanced thinkers and scholars in Chile; intellect is held in high esteem. There are "dyed in the wool" conservatives, who look askance at popular education as inconsistent with the rule of clericals and aristocrats; but steadily year by year liberal sentiments have grown. When we speak of liberal sentiments, however, let it be understood that Chile is Catholic and wishes to remain Catholic; she has no desire to become Protestant. The higher classes are very well educated and delight in politics and arguments; they denounce opponents and eulogize progress; they will submit only within certain limits to being fettered in thought or action. The Chilean liberals believe in popular education and in the advancement of the masses; they believe in everything modern. They make history for the country; they make big debts, big improvements and (for Chile) big wars. Political contentions make a nation safe, enlightened, strong. In the numerous social clubs of Santiago politics form the never ending theme of conversation.

The season in the capital is gay, though the older families there form an aristocratic coterie which is rather exclusive. Every Chilean of wealth feels in duty bound

to live in the capital during the season and to own a house there. His house, however, is not often open to entertainment and his family circle is close, extending not much beyond relatives and near friends. But in the *tertulia* and public receptions social intercourse, dancing and ordinary social functions are maintained. In the afternoon, society drives in the Cousiño park, in the evening it promenades in the Alameda, or goes to the pleasant little theatre on the Santa Lucia hill, if it be summer, or to the large commodious theatre of the city if it be winter; a theatre of which Santiago may well be proud, for it is the third in the world in respect to its size, and cost $400,000. On the great plaza of summer evenings a military band plays while the gay promenaders walk round and round, or stand and sit about under the trees, the young men in silk hats and black coats staring at the pretty girls dressed becomingly in the latest French fashions.

Though educated in the belles-lettres sense, the Chilean young lady can not be said to possess liberty of action such as English and American young ladies enjoy. Woman certainly occupies an inferior position, due mainly to national customs from which she has not yet been able to emancipate herself. The young lady is chaperoned and hampered by an etiquette which deprives her of the opportunity of becoming acquainted with young men, of studying their character, of forming friendships with them. To be courted by one save under the eye of parents or guardians, would be considered an impropriety. But these severe restraints are beginning to relax somewhat. Woman's right to labor is certainly encouraged and respected, since no where else in the world than Chile is she found as a street car conductor.

The Chilean woman is a churchgoer and is very

punctual in her devotions. She keeps up the church and saves it from utter decay, for the men seldom go. With her figure closely enveloped in her black shawl or *manta*, which she wears hood-fashion over her head and allows to fall loosely over her dress, she goes tripping to church in the early morning. She carries in her hand her prayer-book and a yard of carpet, or fancy woolwork, upon which she kneels on the stone floor of the pewless cathedral. No matter what her station in life or wealth, the Chilean lady puts off her bonnet, dons the *manta* and kneels in the centre of the church with her worshipping sisters, however poor or despised they may be. The *manta* puts them upon a level, and does away with all rivalries in dress during church hours. Though the men do not often go to church, and are disposed to oppose the clergy in a political way, still the church has a firm hold upon the people of Chile. The educated Chilean has no war with the Catholic church, to him it is the divinely appointed institution; but he is in favor of progressive Catholicism. If he does not go to mass himself, his wife and daughters must go, and on special occasions, such, for instance, as the procession of Corpus Christi, he will condescend to take part. If he opposes the priest in legislative halls, he yet reverences his time-honored religion, and for a Chilean to be other than Catholic would mean for him to be out of caste.

Santiago is somewhat cosmopolitan, although the urban foreign population is chiefly domiciled in Valparaiso. There is a large foreign population, some ninety or one hundred thousand altogether in the country, of whom five or six thousand are English and about the same number each of Germans and French. Valparaiso is essentially an English city, so far as commercial interests are concerned. English is spoken

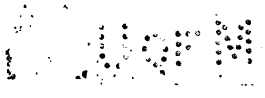
Mod

A Private Residence in Santiago.

everywhere equally [illegible]
English name [illegible] the sol[illegible]
list of German and [illegible]
lish hotels, English pro[illegible]
newspaper. In the [illegible]
enterprises, the Chilean [illegible]
capital and enterprise have [illegible]
in the south, the Tarapa[illegible]
the mines through [illegible] Chile [illegible]
the railroads, or many of [illegible]
projected the [illegible] and [illegible]
The government [illegible]
loans. Chilean [illegible]
great merchant, [illegible]
the world. [illegible]
Antofagasta and [illegible]
south, English and [illegible]
Talcahuano, Concepcion [illegible]

In the south there are [illegible]
Valdivia and Puerto [illegible]
cities. Spanish is spoken [illegible]
second generation, [illegible]
The Germans in Chile [illegible]
tional characteristics [illegible]
though the children [illegible] Spanish they [illegible]
easily, to speak the [illegible] of the mothers [illegible]
third generation so that [illegible] Ger-
man is spoken as much as Spanish [illegible]
settlers and the [illegible]
of southern Chile, although [illegible]
of the Chileans are shrewd [illegible] The [illegible]
haciendas, vineyards and [illegible]
Chileans who, however, [illegible]
sears.

The peon or [illegible] is the laborer [illegible]



everywhere equally with other languages, shops have English names, the solid commercial houses are English or German, and there are English churches, English hotels, English professional men, and an English newspaper. In the management of the great business enterprises, the Chilean yields to foreigners. English capital and enterprise have developed the coal mines in the south, the Tarapacá nitrate works in the north, the mines throughout Chile; English capital has built the railroads, or many of them, English engineers have projected the lines, and English employés run them. The government railroads were built from English loans; England is the civilizer, the taskmaster, the great merchant, the miser, the banker, the usurer of the world. Tarapacá is essentially an English district, Antofagasta and Taltal English towns, while in the south, English and German energy are predominant in Talcahuano, Concepcion and other towns.

In the south there are large German settlements; Valdivia and Puerto Montt are essentially German cities. Spanish is spoken with German, at least by the second generation, but it is a very corrupt Spanish. The Germans in Chile, as elsewhere, retain their national characteristics longer than other foreigners, and though the children learn Spanish, they continue, generally, to speak the language of their fathers even to the third generation, so that in such towns as Cañete, German is spoken as much as Spanish. But they are thrifty settlers and the solid business men and agriculturists of southern Chile, although, be it understood, many of the Chileans are shrewd business men. The great haciendas, vineyards and mines, are usually owned by Chileans, who, however, generally employ foreign overseers.

The peon or *roto* is the laborer of Chile and his class

constitutes a large part of the population. He is the real son of the soil, the true Chilean. He is a great miner, but rather roving in his disposition. He is industrious, ignorant, and has few wants. He is by instinct intelligent, but he is superstitious. He is the filthiest of mortals in his house; he lives upon his garlic dish of *cazuela*, watermelons and liquor. He has a large family invariably, despite the fact that his children die like summer insects, because of filth. He is a strong man, because only a healthy child is able to survive. If he has a simple mud-plastered hovel and a few fagots upon which to cook his *cazuela*, he is contented and happy. He is faithful to his home, although he is seldom married to his wife. He chooses a helpmate in early life by simply agreeing to live with her, and he usually keeps his promise.

His pleasure is drink and his amusement is riding. He lives niggardly and works constantly for several weeks, hoarding his pittance for a grand carousal. He dresses in the simplest fashion, a shirt, a pair of trowsers, a slouch hat and a poncho constituting his garb. His wife wears a calico gown with a long train, which is usually bedraggled as to skirt. It is seldom that he can read, but he has natural genius for imitating and learns to do any kind of work with little instruction. He has wonderful strength and endurance. No European is capable of such physical endurance. He is a specially good miner and can scramble up a notched pole with a hundred pounds of ore upon his back. As a stevedore in the harbor, he disdains the use of modern appliances and with sheer physical strength lifts and carries upon his back enormous weights. Four of them will think it no task to shoulder a pianoforte and go trotting through the street with it.

The peons are docile enough in disposition and

when treated fairly are easily controlled or influenced. They are imitative and what one does they all do, even in the matter of getting drunk. They take care of their old and are kind to each other, save while intoxicated, when they are apt to fight to the death. They have much Indian blood in their veins and exhibit many ancestral traits; they hold wakes over dead children and attempt to cure disease with bits of paper, leaves, or such trifles, pasted upon different parts of the face. The holding of wakes over children is, however, a barbarous custom that is gradually dying out among them. It consists in decking out the little one in its finery, encircling its head with a wreath of flowers, painting its face and putting strings of beads around its neck, in which condition it is placed upon a table and kept for weeks while drunken festivities are participated in by the parents and friends. As infant mortality is great, the number of wakes in a year must make the custom a troublesome one. Only the strongest children live, so that the peons have become a hardy race by the survival of the fittest.

But education is beginning to take hold upon this people and their condition in time will be greatly ameliorated. Large numbers of them are yearly emigrating to other South American states, particularly to Argentina, in search of better remunerated work. His lot is a hard one, but he loves his adobe hut, and, drunken as he is, the peon has some fine qualities of head and heart, which may yet make a good citizen of him. He is the surviving progeny of a once proud race of Indians and the valiant Spanish *conquistadores*, and he has a historical past behind his degraded present condition. His ancestors were heroes, if he himself is little better than a serf.

The Indian population of Chile is inconsiderable as

compared with that of other South American states. It is usually estimated at about 50,000. The Araucanians still live in the country south of the Biobio, adhering to many of their primitive habits, and dwelling together in villages. The laws of Chile have respect for their rights as proprietors and their lands can only be purchased through the chiefs, who hold a sort of paramount patriarchal title, and then by subsequent settlements with the individual proprietors. The Indian claims being extinguished, a good title to the land may be obtained through the proper officers. This proprietary right to their lands, held through the centuries by their invincible valor, has been a potent means of keeping this nation of Indians together and preventing admixture with Spanish blood.

The Araucanian Indians are intelligent looking, well made fellows of about medium height. They have the usual straight hair and eyes peculiar to the Indian races. They are of light copper color, walk upright and look you full in the eye. They dress in the poncho for an outer garment, fasten a blanket around the waist which hangs down below the knees like a short skirt, and tie a red handkerchief around their heads. They have no beards and wear the hair cut just below the ears. The women wear the poncho folded like a shawl, and a dress of blue cloth. They coil their jet black tresses around their heads, ornamenting the braids with strings of beads. They wear large silver earrings, often two or three pairs at the same time, and necklaces of beads or of leather studded with silver ornaments. They go barefoot and pin their ponchos with silver ornaments. The women do the weaving and make the clothes, both for themselves and the men.

Their huts are usually orderly and clean, a thing which can hardly be said of the homes of the peons.

The master of the house may have several wives, and these with their children dwell together in apparent peace. The manner of taking a wife is similar to a custom which prevails in many barbarous countries; the youth goes to the home of the prospective bride, and having settled with the father for her, forcibly carries her off. At least he and his friends appear to use force, but they are in reality suffered to take the maiden away with only a slight show of resistance. The pair then retire to the forest, and, after dwelling there together for a few days, go to the husband's hut, where they live afterward as husband and wife. The women have the same custom which prevailed among the ancient Incas, of going alone to the forest streams at the time of childbirth. When born, the child is washed in the river, wrapped carefully in its clothes and bound to a board, to which it remains fastened until it is time for it to learn to walk.

The religion of the Araucanian is simple, like that of all Indians; it is, in fact, little more than a belief in immortality and in the spirits of good and evil. He believes in a Great Spirit and an Evil Spirit. The Evil Spirit must be often appeased; in every calamity, reverses, bad weather, or bad crops, a meeting must be called under some mystical tree and an offended Deity be appeased with howlings and liquor drinking. Wakes are held over the dead, the body being often kept some time suspended over a fire in the hut. The deceased at burial is supplied with food, clothing, weapons, a favorite horse or canoe, and other necessary accoutrements for the long journey to the happy regions beyond the seas. The Evil Spirit is kept out of the grave by the friends surrounding it with crossed lances, while the body is being interred.

This simple religion has no creed; the wise old

woman, the *Machi*, prophetess, seer of the tribe, alone pretends to have supernatural gifts and is the village doctor. Sickness is caused by a visitation of the Evil Spirit and he must be exorcised, when the patient will recover. This task the old woman performs with divers dismal wails and incantations and the burning of branches of the sacred *canelo* tree, whose leaves have great medicinal virtue in cases of fever. The prophetess of the tribe, when her remedies fail and her patient dies, must point out the person whose evil eye caused the death. That person is then slain by the relatives of the deceased if he can be found. This is the most barbarous custom connected with the Indian religion, but it is hardly worse than burning witches.

As a rule the Araucanians are courteous in their manners and honorable in all their engagements. They are brave in battle, but not cruel. They cultivate the soil, and are permanently attached to their lands. They are obedient to their own toquis, laws and customs, and kind to each other and to their animals. An Araucanian's horse loves him and follows him like a pet. They are a hospitable people and not treacherous. They received the Spaniards hospitably when they first visited their country and only rose against them when they found that they had come as invaders. It is said that whoever receives the toqui's hand in friendship may travel with impunity throughout the Indian territories. So long as the traveler comports himself as he should, he will be in no more danger than if he were traveling among his own countrymen.

Though he is a superstitious individual, the Araucanian is yet an imaginative and not altogether uncongenial person. He is a natural diplomatist and talks a long time before he comes to the point. On more than one occasion in his great palavers with the Span-

iards he proved himself a shrewd politician. But he is as much a believer in omens as Romulus. Let the little bird of ill-omen chirp on his left side while he is on a journey and he will turn back.

Considerable efforts have been made by the Romish church to convert these Indians, and with some success. A few churches and monasteries have been at different times established within their territories, with church schools for the instruction of the young Indians. Every year quite a number of boys are turned from their barbarous ways of life, and, after a short training, are induced to hire themselves out as laborers and to live among the Chileans, with whom they in time identify themselves. Others of the boys run away and return to their former free life.

The Chilean government, like the United States, has had its troublesome Indian question. Led by renegades, self-styled French kings, horse thieves and banditti, the Indians have constantly harassed the frontier settlements. So sure as Chile became involved in war, the Araucanians stood ready to attack in the rear, as was the case during the late war with Peru when they attacked villages, burned houses, stole cattle and pillaged haciendas. But constant wars and constant drunkenness is at last solving the question, the Indians will become extinct or absorbed into the general population of Chile. They have been able to withstand Spanish arms, but they are not able to withstand the kind of firewater the Germans of southern Chile manufacture for them. Men, women and children drink and roll in beastly drunkenness. Smallpox and other diseases of civilized nations, have at different times well-nigh swept them from the face of the earth, and year by year lessen their numbers. Railroads are being pushed into their territory and the shriek of the iron horse is

ever a sound of doom to the red man. There was a time when the Chilean government forbade the purchase of their lands, thinking that they might in time become a province of civilized Indians. But this prohibition is now removed and the Indians are left free moral agents to do as they please with their property. The result is that firewater, accompanied by a few dollars, buys their lands and this will in time destroy their autonomy as a nation. Sooner or later, despite all humanitarian laws and sentiment, the weak is subverted by the strong, either directly or indirectly. Such is the history of civilization, and civilization is fast pushing its wheat fields into the Araucanian territories, and the old towns which Valdivia founded, but which lay in ruins ever after, are springing into new and energetic life on the Chilean frontiers. Angol is now a busy place of considerable population, Cañete is a growing town, Valdivia has over 23,000 inhabitants, Arauco 27,000, while other cities, such as Traiguen, Temuco, and Puerto Montt, have been making rapid advancement and bringing the improvements and progressive ways of the modern world into these ancient territories and among this ancient people. The Indians live now in a state of semi-independence, recognizing in the Chilean government a sort of protectorate. They are congregated principally in the provinces of Malleco, Imperial and Cautin, and in scattered bands throughout the country south of the Biobio river.

In the extreme south of Chile are various small nomad tribes of Patagonian Indians. The Yaghan and Fuegian Indians are savage and miserable beings, wandering about the islands at the Straits of Magellan, a few families of them usually together, armed with bows and arrows, clothed in old rags and blankets and subsisting on mussels and such food as they are enabled

to pick up. On the mainland, the Indians sell skins and furs, puma, huanaco, and silver fox skins and ostrich feathers, to traders at Punta Arenas. Dwelling as they do in these cold, inhospitable, barren and rainy regions, they are the most miserable of earth's inhabitants, not even excepting the Esquimaux. They are related to the Indians of the Chiloé Archipelago, but are far below them in intelligence and in their habits and manner of living.

Including the Indians, southern Chile has but a scanty population. Punta Arenas on the Straits of Magellan is a town of one thousand inhabitants, where the European steamers touch. The business of the place is carried on principally by English and Germans. The town is the centre of a considerable extent of sheep-raising country and a market for various settlements on the islands of Tierra del Fuego, Southern Patagonia and the Falkland Islands. Sheep farming is the principal industry of this southern country and there are several large ranches. Gold dust is found in considerable quantities in the streams and the shepherds frequently bring in enough of it to buy what they want in town. There are also silver and coal mines, but they have not, as yet, been worked with success.

For the most part, this country is given up to seals, otters, seafowl and savages. The whole vast extent of the Territory of Magellan contains about two thousand people, of whom one half are foreigners.

CHAPTER II

EXTENT AND RESOURCES

Chile is a long narrow strip of country stretching a distance of 2,600 miles along the Pacific coast of South America; its breadth varies from forty to one hundred miles, its area is estimated approximately at about 294,000 square miles. This great country, extending from latitude 17° 47′ S. southward to Cape Horn, has for its eastern boundary the center of the almost insurmountable Andes, and for its western boundary the Pacific, along the shores of which runs the range of the Cordillera de la Costa. Before the recent acquisitions of territory from Peru and Bolivia, Chile was protected on its northern boundary by the almost impassable Atacama desert, three hundred miles in length, so that the natural position of the republic was one of great security and strength. Beside the mainland and extensive islands along the coast south of Puerto Montt, Chile owns the island of Juan Fernandez and claims Easter Island.

Between the Andes and Cordillera ranges runs a long valley, extending from the Quillota river south to Chiloé Island, a fertile valley in which are situated the principal cities and where are found the best cultivated districts. To the northward of this valley there are fertile districts, such as those of Coquimbo and Acon-

cagua, but the chief wealth of northern Chile is to be found in the rich mines of the mountains and nitrate deposits of the Tarapacá and Atacama regions. The mineral district proper consists of the provinces of Tacna, Tarapacá, Antofagasta and Atacama; between the parallels of 27° and 32°, the country is both a mining and an agricultural region. The central provinces, Santiago, O'Higgins, Colchagua, Curico, Talca, Linares, Maule, Nuble, Concepcion, Biobio, Arauco, Malleco, Cautin, Valdivia and Llanquihue, constitute a rich agricultural zone. From Puerto Montt to Cape Horn, there is a vast stretch of forest, mountain and island territory, valuable for fisheries and timber.

It will thus be seen that Chile enjoys every variety of climate, from the desert heat of Atacama to the snow and ice of Cape Horn, and is thus enabled to grow the fruits and grains of all zones and enjoy the products of all climates. The term which some Chileans use in speaking of their country, "*pobre Chile*," (poor Chile,) is scarcely applicable, as nature has lavished many bounties upon this tract of the inhabitable earth. Once there extended a chain of lakes up the great central valley, like those which are now seen in the islands from Chiloé south, and these old beds have a very fertile alluvial soil, while the climate, tempered by the winds from the Pacific, is as mild and salubrious as that of California or Italy.

The Chilean winter begins in June. The rainy season further inland commences earlier than this, usually in April, and continues until the last of August. Summer begins in December, spring the last of September, and from spring until autumn there is throughout Chile constant fine weather. In the southern portions, however, and the timbered islands, the rainfall is heavy in summer. In the northern provinces, from Coquimbo

north, rain seldom falls; in the central provinces it sometimes rains three or four days in succession and then follows two or three weeks of pleasant weather. In the south it will often rain for nine or ten days in succession, but the storms are not accompanied with high winds or hail, and thunder is seldom heard. Snow falls only in the Andes, which are rendered nearly impassable by it from April to November. Occasionally there is a light fall in the country bordering upon the mountains, and in the interior provinces there are August frosts with chilly nights. Heavy dews fall during the spring, summer and autumn, and to a certain extent, supply the want of rain. Fogs are not infrequent on the coast; the north winds bring rain, the south winds clear sky; there are seldom tornadoes.

There are one hundred and twenty-five rivers in Chile, nearly half of which flow directly into the sea. They form a vast natural system of irrigation, bringing the melting snows of the mountains down into the valleys. Eight or ten of them are navigable for some distance, as the Maule and the Biobio, the latter being over two miles in breadth. As Chile is merely the western slope of the Andes these rivers are all short and rapid, the waters shallow and broad, the banks low, the beds rocky. This fact, with the general topography of the country, renders irrigation a simple matter.

Not only is Chile abundantly supplied with rivers, there are also many lakes, such as Bucalemu, Caguil, Borjeruca which are brackish; Ridaguel, Aculeu, Taguatagua, Laquen or Villarica, Nahuelguapi, and many others, beautiful fresh-water lakes, some of which, as Villarica and Nahuelguapi, are from seventy to eighty miles in circumference. In the southern provinces there are many small fresh-water lakes.

In the southern part of Chile immense crops of wheat

are grown; this region has long been the Sicily of the southern Pacific coast. On the great farms, many of which in the vicinity of Angol have an extent of from 5,000 to 20,000 acres, the crop is grown year after year with almost unvarying success, together with smaller crops of barley, maize, beans, grass, alfalfa and potatoes. The alfalfa is baled and shipped principally to the nitrate districts of the north. Immense quantities of it are grown in the Aconcagua valley, where the fields are irrigated from the Aconcagua river. The farms are surrounded with hedges and rows of poplars and weeping willows, while the orchards and vineyards are instarred with roses, jasmine, and innumerable wild flowers. Between the Aconcagua and Maule rivers lie the fertile lands in Chile.

Throughout Chile, more particularly near the capital, the grape thrives, and wine-making is an important industry. *Chicha* in Chile is made from grapes and is as much the popular beverage as *pulque* is in Mexico. Grapes were early introduced by the Spaniards and in recent years French vines have been planted in nearly all of the great vineyards from Huasco to Valdivia. Among the largest of the successful vineyards may be mentioned the Urmeneta near Valparaiso, the Ochagavia, the Totoral near Concepcion, Subercaseaux Bordeaux, Panguehue, La Trinidad and Macul. The vineyards are irrigated and cultivated in a somewhat primitive manner, oxen being used for the plowing, but there is invariably a French expert as manager and the wines made are of a very superior quality. The industry is not restricted in any manner, either in the production or the sale.

From Santiago south to Concepcion the country is a succession of rich farms and occasional sandy wastes, the latter being barren simply because of a lack of means

of irrigation, for there are here no dews and no rivers except during the winter. The soil is usually deep and fertile, and wherever water can be conducted upon it, fine crops are grown. Some of the rivers, notably the Maypo, are veritable Niles and bring down vast quantities of alluvial deposits every season. The farms are usually separated by broad ditches and are carefully tilled, although the methods are primitive. The irrigating canals are constructed at considerable expense and each *hacendado* is usually a shareholder of the corporation stock. The canals are divided into so many outlets (*regadores*) and each farmer subscribes for as many as he may need of the sluices; from them water is drawn off into the network of ditches covering his fields. It is an expensive process, but highly efficient.

Farther south, around the old Araucanian cities, are the vast wheatfields which we have already noted. Here rains are abundant, and over the low undulating hills the yellow grain waves in billowy oceans. Here also range large herds of cattle. Angol is a great wheat centre; so also is Traiguen. A railroad has been pushed down through this country to Traiguen, and is headed for Osorno, where there are extensive tracts of valuable timber. Tanning bark (*lingue*) is here quite an important article of commerce. In Valdivia, tanneries have long been established.

It has been frequently recorded by travelers in these southern forests that all the trees lean toward the north. This is caused by the prevailing south winds. From the same cause, the timber on the hills is scanty and scrubby, that in sheltered spots most luxuriant. It is a wet, windy country, but the climate is temperate, the mean temperature being about 56° Fahr. This part of Chile is being peopled almost wholly by European immigrants, chiefly Germans, who avail them-

selves of the inducements held out by the government in the shape of a free forty-acre farm for the head of the family and twenty-five acres additional for each ten-year-old boy, with free transportation and a pension of $15 a month the first year in addition. But the immigrant's life is a hard one at best; trying to reclaim these primeval forests he finds himself beset with many difficulties he never dreamed of when he left his fatherland. There is certainly room for him, for Chile is larger than any European country save Russia, and is inhabited by a population only a little greater than that of Paris. The government holds out glowing inducements, but as is usually the case with immigration pamphlets, the bright side only is depicted. The poor colonist soon finds that there is a column of losses to set over against the column of prospective gains; but this the home seeker finds wherever he may go.

It would seem that there is room in Chile for the business man, the merchant, the miner, the capitalist, the banker. English and German capital and enterprise receive splendid returns. Particularly in the matter of railroads and public works of all kinds is this true, and in banking. The monetary system and credit of the country are satisfactory, Chile's credit being not far behind that of France, and political agitations are not now more violent than in other republics.

The absence of coal mines was, until recently, a great drawback to the material development of the country; but now this want is in part supplied by the opening up of the mines at Lota and other places in the south. The Lota mines have an annual output of 200,000 tons, other mines aggregate about the same, so that the annual output is not far from 400,000 tons. There is still imported from England and Australia, from 250,000 to 300,000 tons annually. The Chilean

coal is not of first quality and when discovered, less than forty years ago, was considered unsuitable for steamers and locomotives, as it is quite as much lignite as coal. For years the railways of the country used imported coal. A shrewd engineer discovered a simple contrivance for the grates which made it possible for the Lota coal to be used and now it is in use altogether.

The coal formations are found along the coast from the river Biobio to Cañete, and belong to the tertiary deposits, which lie upon the granite rocks of the Cordillera de la Costa. The formation dips toward the Pacific, but in many places has been upheaved and tilted in an opposite direction. The seams which outcrop in the rocks and are reached by means of shafts, are three in number and have an average thickness of from three to six feet. The depths at which they are worked vary from three hundred to eight hundred feet.

It was known as early as 1825, that coal existed in southern Chile, and in 1835, Mr. Wheelright, the projector of the Pacific Steam Navigation Company, undertook to mine it, but with no success. No further attempts were made before 1855, when Don Matias Cousiño began to work the Lota deposits near Coronel on the Arauco Bay. These mines now produce from eight hundred to one thousand tons daily, which is taken out principally from under the sea, and gives employment to some two thousand miners. The men are well treated, work twelve hours a day, and receive from eighty cents to two dollars. The mines are well ventilated, good machinery is used, a hospital is attached to them and several schools are in successful operation. The company owns four steamers and several ships which ply along the coast, carrying coal north to Pacific ports and bringing back copper ore for the Lota smelting works. The profits of the company exceed one

million dollars a year. There are seven smelting furnaces, employing from six hundred to one thousand men and turning out one thousand tons of copper a month.

There are glass and brick works established at Lota, also machine shops. The two towns, Upper and Lower Lota, have together a population of 14,000. Other extensive coal mines in Chile are the Schwager at Coronel, Rojas at the same place, the Errázuriz at Lebu, and the Arauco Company's mines.

But the true source of Chile's wealth and excellent credit is to be found in the nitrate works of the north. The vast deserts between Copiapo and the Camerones, once considered only a worthless waste, have been called a great natural chemical laboratory, for here various kinds of salts have been precipitated in immense quantities. Not only is this region rich in salts, but here are also some of the best paying mines on the coast. The value of the fertilizing product from the nitrate of soda deposits, called in the natural state *calicheras*, is too well known to need mention here. The *calicheras* are situated in the desert just below the surface, in the old dried up lake beds. It is on the sides, or rings, of these that the richest deposits are found. The deposits are detected by small natural holes, caused probably by the action of water at some period of the formation, and by fissures in the surface. The *salitreras* are situated at intervals on the east slope of the coast Cordillera along the edge of the pampa which lies between the Cordillera and the Andes, and at an elevation of from three thousand to four thousand feet above the sea level. They vary in richness; the *calicheras* near Antofagasta contain from fifteen to twenty per cent of nitrates, these of Tarapacá as much as seventy per cent.

The *calicheras* lie near the surface, from one to ten feet below, and to reach them small excavations are made. Blasting powder is put under the raw nitrate and the ground thus broken up for a considerable distance, then the *caliche* is separated from rock and rubbish as much as possible and loaded into sheet iron mule carts, in which it is transported to the crushing mills. It is then bruised between rollers, dissolved and deposited in tanks and crystallized in vats, from which it is drawn off much as salt would be, and sacked for transportation.

Beside the nitrate of soda there are the accessory salts found in it, potassium, magnesium, gypsum, and iodine. *Caliche* itself is crystalline in structure, soluble in water, and has a slightly saline taste. The origin of the deposits is somewhat in doubt, but appears to have been the result of decomposition of seaweeds at a time when this part of the continent was under the ocean. With the upheaval of the land salt water lakes were formed, and, with the evaporation of the water, nitric acid was generated by the decomposition of the seaweeds and this, acting upon shells and limestone, formed nitrate of calcium, and nitrate of calcium uniting further with sulphate of soda, left also by the evaporating sea water, gives the result, nitrate of soda and sulphate of calcium. [The beds have been preserved in their present condition for ages, because of the fact that rain seldom falls on this part of the coast. Moisture would dissolve and destroy the product.]

The export of nitrate of soda amounts annually to more than twenty million Spanish quintals, of one hundred pounds each, and this is valued at thirty millions of dollars. The state receives from this export over twenty millions of dollars annually, an amount exceeding all the general import duties, and in the

Tarapacá fields alone over thirteen thousand men find employment.

Beside the nitrate works, there are in the north valuable silver mines, and south of the silver mines the copper regions, in the vicinity of Coquimbo. We have then, coal in the south, copper in the north, silver still farther north and then nitrate of soda and guano. The rich copper mines at Coquimbo, yielding from thirty to sixty per cent of pure metal from the ore, were not discovered until after the revolution, though Coquimbo (or rather La Serena) is one of the oldest cities in Chile. There for many years a most wasteful process was adopted, and it was not until 1840, that reverberatory furnaces were introduced and primitive methods of extracting the metal abandoned. The mountains about Coquimbo are filled with the ore; at Ovalle the surface stones are green with copper. Though the importance of the copper industry is not now what it was in former years, still the product amounted in 1888, to 31,241 tons. There is scarcely a limit to the number of tons the output might be made to reach, as the deposits of copper throughout these regions are practically inexhaustible.

The production of silver has been great, the mines being exceedingly rich. There has been a slight falling off in the output recently, but still the industry is an important one. The first railway built in the country was in 1852 from Copiapó to the rich silver district of Chañaral. Before the road gave better facilities for transportation, the poorer ores, just as with copper, were thrown aside. With an outlet by rail the inhabitants set about working up the discarded ores, even pulling down houses and walls which had been constructed of the refuse from the mines in order to sell it for export. With the building of railroads from the

port towns to the mines, a new impetus was given the industry, and the ports of Antofagasta, Chañaral, Caldera, Taltal, and other northern places, exported annually minerals and metals to the value of several millions of dollars.

The rich mines of Caracoles, discovered in 1870, are ten thousand feet above the sea, situated on the slope of the Andes. There are over four thousand of the mines registered. The most valuable product is a chloride of silver and mercury, which contains over sixty per cent of silver, and two of mercury. These mines together with the nitrate of soda deposits in this district, have made the port of Antofagasta an important place.

To the north of Antofagasta are the great nitrate and guano fields, the principal ports for shipment being Iquique, Pisagua, Taltal, Caleta Buena, Junin, Tocopilla, and Puerto Olivia. Thus it will be seen that this long, rocky, rainless coast line, extending along the Pacific for a distance of seven hundred miles, is one of the richest districts in the world. The whole country is a vast mine of minerals. Perhaps the Tamarugal Pampa, which contains the nitrate deposits, will not always be the source of wealth that it is at present, but at least for some years to come the villages and *oficinas* will thrive, the ports will present a lively appearance and nitrate kings and the Chilean government will grow rich.

Each *oficina*, or mining camp, in these boundless deserts must be furnished with distilled or transported water. Nothing is grown, save in the oasis of Pica and in a few places where pits are dug down to moisture, or in some of the great gorges. The workmen live in corrugated iron huts around each *oficina*, and with their women and children constitute a little village

of from one thousand to three thousand population. There is a general store at each *oficina*, belonging to the company, and this, it is safe to say, realizes enormous profits on everything sold. It has been estimated that the workmen spend sixty per cent of their earnings in the store and drink and gamble with the forty per cent. The moral and material condition of the laborers is degraded rather than benefited by the very wealth which they dig from the earth, for little of it remains in the country to improve and beautify it.

CHAPTER III

NATURAL HISTORY

Chile may be divided, physically, and for convenience of reference, into the maritime country, or that portion of the country bordering upon the Pacific, and the midland country, or that portion in the interior.

Transversely, it may be divided into four great regions, viz: the rainless, desert zone of the north, the mineral region, extending from Peru to Copiapo and comprising the provinces of Tacna, Tarapacá, Antofagasta and northern Atacama; the semi-desert zone, comprising the southern part of Atacama and the provinces of Coquimbo and Aconcagua; the agricultural zone, with a considerable amount of rainfall, comprising the provinces from Valparaiso to Puerto Montt at the southern end of old Chile; and the timber and fisheries zone, extending from Puerto Montt southward to Cape Horn.

The maritime country is traversed south of the thirty-first parallel by three principal chains of low mountains, all running parallel with the Andes. These constitute the Cordillera ranges, and between them are numerous fertile valleys watered by mountain streams. The central ranges terminate abruptly in the vicinity of Puerto Montt; the western range follows the coast line. The midland country is, generally speaking, a

plain, from which arise here and there considerable hills. Beyond the plain country the lofty Andes pierce the clouds with great volcanic peaks rising to a height of over twenty thousand feet, the highest being opposite the center of Chile on each side of the Uspallata Pass between Mendoza and San Rosa. Here the great volcanic peaks of Tupangato and Aconcagua rise to a height of over twenty-two thousand feet above the sea level. Numerous other peaks tower to a height of from fifteen thousand to eighteen thousand feet. In the mountains on the Chilean side are the sources of the many rivers which cut their way through the fertile plains and the Cordilleras to the Pacific; between the lofty snow-capped peaks are numerous valley pastures where herds are kept.

North of 31° the Cordillera ranges become less regular; they scatter into spurs as they approach the desert regions and are covered with sandy wastes. The Atacama desert is a plateau with a height varying from four thousand to ten thousand feet. The country along the coast bears evidence of recent upheavals, similar, though on a larger scale, to the elevation of several leagues of coast region at Valparaiso in 1882, when an uplift of about six feet occurred. Going inland there are found five terraces, indicating as many uplifts of the land at different periods, the terraces ranging in height from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and eighty feet. In the vicinity of Coquimbo the terraces extend back some distance into the country, forming little plains upon which the cities of Coquimbo and La Serena are built. Seashells are found in different places at elevations of from five hundred to one thousand three hundred feet, so that present changes of surface are mild compared with those of other ages. Chile is, in fact, a new creation, geologically speaking,

as these terraces, the numerous volcanoes, the earthquakes and the prevalence of mineral springs throughout the country, would go to show. About seventy-five miles southeast of Chillan hot springs are found almost at the snow line of the Chillan volcano. There are numerous other mineral springs celebrated for their medicinal qualities.

Though so lofty, the Chilean Andes are traversed by several passes. Eleven have been examined, but only two or three of them are ever used. The principal pass connecting Chile with Argentina is that of the Uspallata between San Rosa and Mendoza. It is over it that the transandine railroad runs.

In the southern Andes numerous lakes abound, some of them being of considerable extent, as that of Llanquihue at the foot of the mountains near Puerto Montt. It is thirty miles long and twenty-two wide. North of Llanquihue are several other large lakes, Ranco and Villarica being the largest. This chain of lakes, extending from Puerto Montt to the head waters of the river Tolten, constitutes, in fact, a continuation of the Gulf of Ancud, as the Chiloé Archipelago is in reality a continuation of the mainland. There are two quite large lakes still farther north in the province of Concepcion, which lie high up in the Andes. Guilletue covers about fifty square miles; La Laja, a short distance below Guilletue, has a beautiful waterfall at its outlet. The only lakes north of these are small bodies of water formed in the craters of extinct volcanoes high up in the Andes. Some of them, however, have an extent of two or three miles.

Nearly all the rivers of Chile have sand bars at their mouths, which effectually impede navigation. The Biobio has a length of two hundred and twenty miles and receives three large affluents, the Laja, Duqueco and

Bergara. Above the bar it is navigable for a distance of one hundred miles; a steamer plies upon it between Concepcion and Nacimiento. The Maule is one hundred and fifty miles long and is navigable a distance of seventy miles. The Valdivia has a length of one hundred miles, of which fifty are navigable. The Imperial is navigable only thirty out of its one hundred and fifty miles. The Tolten has a length of sixty miles and is navigable. The Bueno is navigable twenty miles out of one hundred and ten. Going farther north the streams have considerable size, but are not navigable, as they are shallow and the water they bring down from the mountains is used for purposes of irrigation. Such are are the rivers Maypo, Rapel, Coquimbo, Huasco, Copiapo, Itata, Aconcagua, Mataquito, Limari and others—quite large streams at certain seasons of the year, but shallow in summer. The Copiapo often becomes a sandy bed during the dry season. Further north the river beds are deep gorges, for the most part destitute of water.

Earthquakes are of frequent occurrence, but are usually so light that but little damage is done by them. Scarcely a year passes that there are not rumblings or shocks somewhere, but the destructive earthquakes happen rarely. They appear to be most severe in the south and are, indeed, seldom destructive in the northern provinces. In the period of two centuries and a half following the settlement of Chile by the Spaniards, there occurred five great earthquakes. This would be an average of two for each century. The first was early in the sixteenth century and destroyed some villages in the south; the second was in 1647, and partially destroyed Santiago; the third in 1657, nearly demolished the capital; the fourth was on June 18th, 1730, when Concepcion was considerably shaken up,

its walls and many of its buildings thrown down; and the fifth, on May the 26th, 1751, completely destroyed the latter city with a great tidal wave and threw down all the villages between the thirty-fourth and fortieth parallels of latitude. But, as is usual with Chilean earthquakes, there were sufficient warnings of it by preceding slight shocks to enable the inhabitants to find places of shelter and safety. There was also an earthquake in 1737, on the Island of Chiloé.

Concepcion was rebuilt on a new site in the valley of Mocha after the earthquake of 1730. In 1835, the city was again destroyed by a great earthquake and tidal wave. The wave swept up Talcahuano Bay, destroying shipping in the harbor, and then, leaping over the land, inundated the country for miles, destroying everything in its path. Concepcion was left in ruins, each row of houses being a line of debris. Talcahuano was also a heap of ruins, hardly one brick or stone being left above another. Besides these two cities, seventy villages of southern Chile were to a greater or less extent destroyed. Other earthquakes have occurred, but with the exception of this terrible visitation of 1835, comparatively little damage has been done during this century. One occurred on August 13th, 1868, another on March 25th, 1871. The latter destroyed considerable property in Santiago and Valparaiso. Another on July 1st, 1873, caused some damage.

There are few good harbors connected with the Chilean ports, but there are a number of an inferior sort, some fifty-five in all, but only a few which could be utilized for anchorage purposes. Valparaiso is the most important port, but not the best. Its harbor is protected, save when northerly winds are blowing, for on that side it is exposed and damage to shipping sometimes happens. The best harbor is that of Taicahuano;

it is well-protected, with a good depth of water and room for any number of vessels which may anchor there. Coquimbo has a good safe harbor, well-sheltered on the west, south and east. Valdivia has an excellent, though rather small harbor. Other ports are Caldera, Huasco, Constitucion, Tomé, Coronel, Ancud and San Carlos. The nitrate and mining districts have made a number of important ports in the north, such as Iquique, Antofagasta, Pisagua and other small places. Many new ports along the whole coast line have attained some degree of importance since the middle of the century, which were not opened before.

In the north the harbors are open to the sea and blocked with dangerous reefs, so that ships must anchor some distance out. At Iquique there are several small moles, but these being insufficient, vessels are loaded and unloaded by carriers who wade through the surf with great burdens upon their backs, or with lighters which ply back and forth from the moles. Along this whole northern coast line towering cliffs rise with almost perpendicular escarpments from the seashore. They are dark, barren, forbidding and frown with beetling brows over the ocean. At the places where the gorges, or old river beds, run down to the water's edge, little valleys spread out and upon them the towns are built. The cliffs rise from 1,500 to 2,000 feet above the water and increase toward the interior to 3,000 and 4,000 feet, and then to 8,000 and 10,000 feet as the Andes are approached.

Chile lays claim to numerous islands, the most important of which are Chiloé and the islands south of it forming the archipelago of that name. There are more than a hundred of them, about half of which are well settled and possess excellent harbors. There are numerous islands south of this archipelago which Chile

now claims, also Mocha, Santa Maria and Quiriquina, lying close to the coast between Chiloé and Concepcion Bay. Chiloé is a veritable garden, possessing a humid atmosphere, a soil exceedingly fertile, a temperature at all times like spring, where snow or frost is seldom known. Fine crops of wheat, barley, potatoes and other grains and vegetables are raised. There are fine herds of domestic animals, and the waters are filled with fish, shellfish and fur-bearing animals.

Farther south the islands are for the most part mountainous and the climate wet, cold and disagreeable. Guaitecas, Guaianeco, Magellanes and Tierra del Fuego are given up to seals, whales, wild fowl and Fuegian Indians. The Indians roam at will over the west coast and the islands of Chonos and Guaianeco, a most miserable lot of human beings. Smyth's Channel is as picturesque as the Hudson. It is a narrow passage between the islands and the mainland, extending three hundred and thirty-eight miles from the Gulf of Penos to the Straits of Magellan, and averaging about two miles in width. Peaks, rocks and glaciers constitute a rugged picture upon each side, while further in the background the mountains rise from three to six thousand feet in height. In some portions of the channel a vessel can scarcely pass through between the cliffs and around the tortuous curves, so that navigation by night is unsafe. For this reason only one line of steamers follows this route, other lines preferring to encounter the storm-swept ocean without, rather than to pass up this sheltered channel. The Straits of Magellan are wide and through them all the steamers pass; sailing vessels must still round the terrible Cape Horn, where the mighty Andes rise up in Mt. Sarmiento 7,000 feet into the clouds and then fall prostrate be-

neath the towering on-rushing waves, before which even mountains may not stand.

The Island of Juan Fernandez, rendered famous by the imagination of De Foe, belongs to Chile, together with its outlying companions, several in number. These islands were first discovered by Juan Fernandez in 1563, and colonized, but the colonists soon abandoned them. They became a favorite resort for the South Sea pirates, a headquarters for buccaneers. Ulloa visited them in 1741, Lord Anson remained there three months with a scurvy-afflicted crew; about the middle of the last century Don Domingo Rozas, of Chile, sent colonists to settle there. Political exiles were frequently banished there during the early part of this century; later, several well organized efforts have been made by the Chilean government to colonize these islands with a better class of citizens. Chile also claims Easter Island.

Chile is singularly free from ferocious animals and poisonous reptiles. There are eleven species of reptiles, five saurians, four ophidians, one frog and one toad. The serpents are perfectly harmless. In the timbered districts of the south there is plenty of game for the sportsman, but not of the savage kind. Pumas (Chile lions) are occasionally met with in the Andes and on the heights the huanaco is found. A small silver fox abounds in the south. But there are no tigers (or jaguars), no wolves, such as infest other neighboring states. The plateaux and plains stretching from the Andes to the Cordillera are almost destitute of game. Perhaps the towering Andes on one side and the Atacama desert on the other, have prevented the passage of animals into this favored land, or, it may be that the Indians, whom the Spaniards found settled

in the country as agriculturists, long ago destroyed the wild beasts.

There are seven species of *cheiroptera*, mostly bats, twelve species of *carnivora*, embracing four felines, three foxes, one weasel, two polecats, the nutria and otter, six species of *phocidæ*, one marsupial (*didelphys elegans*), twelve genera and twenty-five species of rodents (twelve being mice), the chinchilla and its cogeners and a species of rabbit, two species of edentata (*dasypus* and *pichiciego*, the latter rare and peculiar to Chile), three ruminants, the huanaco, and two deer, (the *pudu* and *huemul*). Four species of the *cetacea* abound, two dolphins, the sperm whale and right whale. Perhaps the most interesting of the mammals are the *phocidæ*. The *phoca lupina*, closely resembles the common seal, the difference being principally in its size and color. The *phoca elephantica* (*lame* or sea-elephant), is frequently twenty feet in length. It has short tusks and a sort of trunk on its nose, which, with its size, gives it some resemblance to the elephant. The sea-hog and sealion are so called because of faint resemblance to those animals.

The forests are usually quiet, though there are many kinds of birds. The *chuca* is an interesting species, being the Indian bird of ill-omen. If his merry note rings out to the right of the traveler, he is cheered on his way; if, however, the shrill cry is on the left, he turns back and avoids danger. There are many species of the *raptores*—condors, vultures, hawks and owls—and of the *incessores*. Parrots with beautiful plumage and pigeons flit through the forests. The families of *grallatores* and *natatores* are represented by numerous species.

The *choros* is a peculiar kind of oyster, and is used by the inhabitants for food. Those in Talcahuano Bay

have a good flavor. There are innumerable crustaceans and mollusks in the south; there are three species of perch, one kingfish, three siluridæ, shads and lampreys.

The forests of southern Chile have a certain sombre beauty peculiar to themselves, the foliage being of great variety and exquisite coloring. The trees grow to a considerable height and are intertwined with parasitic vines and creepers. One of these parasites is called "angel's hair" and hangs from the trees like threads of lace. There is an undergrowth of ferns, bamboos, shrubs and canes, the latter attaining a height sufficient to interlace treetops and form roofs of green over the forest avenues. On the mountains grows the stately pine. One species of this is indigenous to southern Chile, the *Pehuen*, or *Araucania imbricata*. It grows to a height of one hundred feet or more and bears a fruit greatly appreciated by the Pehuenche Indians, who derive their name from it.

There are many kinds of sweet-scented and beautiful flowering plants and rosebushes, particularly along the rivers. Mint, nettles, plaintains, trefoils and mallows, grow as well in Chile as anywhere else; so also lupins, loveapples, celery, cresses, mustard, and fennel. Tropical plants, such as sugar cane, pineapples, bananas, sweet potatoes, jalaps and mechoacan, grow well enough in the northern states. There are also many wild plants peculiar to Chile. Maize and the cereals all grow in this climate. The Indians cultivated Indian corn before the arrival of the Spaniards, also species of rye and barley. The potato seems to have found in Chile its native soil; two species of it grow wild, with over thirty varieties. There are several varieties of the *quinua*, and two principal species of the gourd. The Indians cultivated a dozen different kinds of beans before the country was discovered by Europeans, and it is

still a staple product with them. Strawberries grow wild; there are two kinds of the madi and many species of the pimento. There are species of leeks, and one specie of wild basil which exudes a saline substance often used as salt.

There are a number of plants, excellent for dyeing purposes. A species of madder called *relbun* is extensively used; also a species of agrimony (giving a yellow), the *cullé* (furnishing a violet), and other varieties. Probably no country has a greater number of medicinal plants; over two hundred have been discovered having properties more or less valuable. Grasses and sedges are abundant and there are a great number of reeds and rushes. Hay is not needed in the country, as cattle graze throughout the year; but in the southern provinces fodder of different kinds is baled for shipment to the nitrate regions.

Willows, wild cherries, wild oranges, white or winter cinnamon, carob, maqui, mulberries and tamarinds grow in different parts of the country. The *cactus Coquimbanus* has thorns eight inches long and these are used by the women for knitting needles. The white cinnamon, *canello*, called by the natives "boighe," grows to a height of fifty feet and is considered by the aborigines as a sacred tree. They ascribe to it great healing properties, carry branches of it in their religious ceremonies, and wave it when they conclude treaties of peace.

The *palma Chilensis* is a species of cocoanut which grows in some of the northern provinces and is highly esteemed; the date grows in the province of Copiapo. Melons thrive everywhere, and millions of them are consumed by the peons and Indians. All kinds of fruits grow, apples, peaches, quinces, pears, cherries, oranges, lemons, citrons, olives, and others.

CHAPTER IV

RAILROADS, ARMY AND NAVY—EDUCATIONAL MATTERS

The government of Chile, like the government of a few other countries, considers the building and operating of railroads as a legitimate function of legislative and executive concern. An important item of the national expenditure has been for the extension of the railway system. To this purpose have the nitrate royalties been largely applied. Chile was the first country in South America to build railroads; the work was begun in 1850.

The state at present owns and operates the line between Santiago and Valparaiso, with the important branch of Los Andes, which is on the great South American trans-continental line from Buenos Ayres to Santiago and Valparaiso. The state also owns and operates the line from Santiago to Talcahuano, and its branches to Palmilla, Los Angeles, Traiguen and Collipulli. These lines have a combined length of 1,068 kilometers, or less than seven hundred miles, and were worth in 1888, something near fifty millions of dollars and gave a clear profit of over a million and a half, exactly 3.11 per cent upon the capital. They carried over three millions of passengers, a remarkable showing, when we take into consideration the fact that

Chile's population does not greatly exceed three millions; but they are a restless, moving, traveling, as well as aggressive people.

The state also owns the line from Chañaral to Animas and Salados, being about forty miles in length, or, more correctly, sixty-five and one-fourth kilometers.

There is a large amount of private capital invested in railways; in all, private corporations own about sixteen hundred kilometers, besides the Arauco company's line from Concepcion to Curanilahue, sixty-six kilometers in length, and several short lines in the coal districts of the south. There are something like twelve or thirteen lines projected, or being now constructed by private capital, in the nitrate and mineral provinces, and the state is interested in contracts for the building of other lines, all originally to have been completed in from two to five years from November, 1888. When the lines are fully completed and in operation, about one thousand kilometers more will be added to the railway system.

The transandine railway from Buenos Ayres to Valparaiso, about eight hundred and fifty miles in length, is owned by several companies. The Buenos Ayres and Pacific railway owns to Villa Mercedes, four hundred and thirty miles from Buenos Ayres; the Argentine Great Western owns from Villa Mercedes to Mendoza, two hundred and twenty miles; Clark's English Transandine Company controls the line from Mendoza to Los Andes on the Chilean side, a distance of one hundred and ten miles (about) to the frontier, and a further distance of forty miles to Los Andes, which is owned by a different company; thence it is fifty-four miles by the government line to Valparaiso. In all, five companies own the line from ocean to ocean, and there

are three different gauges of the track, causing two transfers of passengers and freight en route.*

This project of spanning the Andes with a railroad is one of the gigantic feats of modern engineering. The Uspallata Pass is, in round numbers, 1,300 feet high, and the road overcomes an elevation of nearly 10,000 feet in crossing it. On the Chilean side the grade is exceedingly steep, and to ascend it the Abt system of cogged locomotive wheels and racks, bolted to the sleepers of the track, are used to overcome the gradients for a distance of ten or twelve miles. There are several immense bridges and four or five tunnels on the route, the longest tunnel being 5,540 yards in length.

Other transandine lines have been projected. The *Ferrocarril Interoceanico* will run from Buenos Ayres to Talcahuano and will have a length of fourteen hundred and twelve kilometers, or about eight hundred and fifty miles. It will cross the Andes over the Antuco Pass at a height of nearly seven thousand feet above sea level, and join the Chilean state lines at Yumbel. So far, work upon this line has just been begun on the Chilean side. Another route, called the Transandine Railway of the North(*Ferrocarril Transandino del Norte*), exists on paper and has had a concession granted it by the Chilean government for a line to run from Copiapo into Argentina; this important road may be built in time. All the roads are equipped with the best modern rolling stock, of American manufacture.

Thus in time we may expect that the vast regions traversed by these new and projected lines will be opened to agriculture and commerce, though years must first elapse, since every rail, tie, timber and brick must

*At the time of this writing there is a small gap in the mountains between Mendoza and Los Andes not completed. Financial difficulties may cause a delay in the work.

be conveyed into the mountains on muleback, and the waterfalls must be made to generate electric power, and electricity to turn machinery to drive the great drills through the long tunnels.

The private lines of railways in operation in Chile just before the late civil war were as follows; Iquique to Pisagua and branches, three hundred kilometers; Mejillones to Cerro Gordo, twenty-nine kilometers; Arica to Tacna, sixty-three kilometers; Antofagasta to Huan Chaca and branch, four hundred and forty kilometers; Taltal and Cochiyugal, eighty-two kilometers; Caldera and Copiapo and branches to Chañarcillo, San Antonio and Puquios, two hundred and forty-two kilometers; between the two Carrizals and Cerro Blanco mine, eighty-one kilometers; Coquimbo to La Serena and to Ovalle and Panulcillo, one hundred and thirty-eight kilometers; La Serena to Vicuña, seventy-eight kilometers; Tongoi to Tamaya, fifty-five kilometers; Laraquete to Moquegua, forty kilometers. Other lines are nearing completion.

In the year 1890, there were thirteen thousand seven hundred and thirty miles of telegraph lines, of which eight thousand miles were owned by the state. There were four hundred and eleven telegraph offices, of which three hundred and four belonged to the state. Over these government lines six hundred and three thousand six hundred and twenty-eight messages were sent, beside those sent over the private wires. There were at that same time five hundred and six postoffices, the mails carrying from seventeen to twenty millions of letters annually.

Next to the railways, an important item in the annual budget is the support of the army and navy. Large and costly buildings have been erected in the capital for purposes of military schools and government bar-

racks. There are the Escuela Militar, Academia de Guerra, an institute of military engineers, which sends out officers to travel in Europe to gain knowledge of military matters, a military club, and a military journal subsidized by the state. The army on a peace footing consists of five thousand eight hundred and eighty-five men, distributed as follows: two regiments of artillery, one battalion of sappers and miners, eight battalions of infantry, three regiments of cavalry and one battalion of coast artillery of five hundred men. There are in active service nine hundred and forty-three officers, twelve generals, twenty-nine colonels, seventy-six lieutenant-colonels and eight hundred and twenty-six inferior officers.

The National Guard (*Guardia Nacional Sedentaria*), consists of 8,970 artillerymen, and 42,120 infantry. This force can be called upon in the event of war.

The Chilean navy is the pride of the government and people. It consists now of a monitor, four ironclads, three corvettes, two gunboats and several transports, dispatch and sailing vessels. The ironclads, "Almirante Cochrane" and "Blanco Encalada," which figured prominently in the late war with Peru, were built at Hull in 1875. They each had 3,500 tons displacement, 2,900 horsepower and nine inch armor. The "Cochrane" had four eighteen-ton and two, seven and one-half-ton guns; the "Blanco Encalada," which was sunk by a torpedo-catcher in the late war, had six twelve and one-half-ton guns carried in a central battery.* The ironclad "Huascar," captured from the Peruvians, was built in 1865; displacement 2,000 tons, horsepower 1,050, armor four and one-half inches, armed with two turret and two forty-pounder guns. The protected

*The contract has been let for raising this vessel and putting it again into service.

cruiser, "Esmeralda," was launched in June, 1883, at the Armstrong works; displacement 2,810 tons, armor one inch, horsepower 6,500, eight heavy guns, beside machine guns. The "Arturo Prat," recently built in France, is the finest ironclad in the Chilean fleet; it is of 6,902 tons and steams seventeen knots an hour; two cruisers of 2,080 tons each have recently been added to the navy, as well as two torpedo-boats.

In 1890, there were two hundred and fifty-one officers connected with the navy, five rear admirals, fifty-nine captains, twenty-seven lieutenants, and one hundred and sixty inferior officers. There were one thousand six hundred and nine sailors, and ninety cadets in the naval college at Valparaiso. Beside this very efficient college at Valparaiso, there is a naval club and periodical in Santiago, and a hydrographic office. There is no navy yard; in the event of a ship needing docking and repairs, the want of a dry dock is a great inconvenience, as the ship must be sent to Europe.

Chile's commercial fleet on the first of January, 1890, consisted of one hundred and fifty-two vessels of one hundred tons and more each; beside there were other vessels with a total tonnage of 102,391 tons, of which twenty-nine were steamers. English, French and German lines of steamers ply between Valparaiso and Europe by way of the Straits of Magellan. The Pacific Steam Navigation Company runs a line of fine steamers between Chilean ports and Peru and Panama. Mr. Wheelwright, an American citizen, was the first to introduce steam navigation into Chilean waters. In 1835, he entered into an arrangement with the government to put on two small steamers, but it was not until 1840, that he started the "Chile" and "Peru" on regular trips between Panama and South American Pacific ports. That was the nucleus of the Pacific Steam Nav-

igation Company, which has since been maintained by English capital. In 1847, two additional vessels were added to the line, and in 1860, weekly trips were made between Valparaiso and Callao. In 1853 and 1858, the southern Chilean ports, Valdivia and Puerto Montt, were brought into communication with Valparaiso, the government agreeing to pay the company an annual subsidy of $40,000 for that service. The company has enjoyed large subsidies from both the English and the Chilean governments, and was long enabled to buy off all attempted rivals and maintain its profitable monopoly. Happily for Chile there are now two lines.

The annual arrivals and clearances of vessels from Chilean ports is nearly ten millions of tons each. Probably three-tenths of the number and tonnage are British bottoms, four-tenths Chilean and three-tenths of other nationalities.

Education has been for some years a matter of government concern, as well as of political strife in Chile. It is free and at the cost of the state. The common people are still slow in availing themselves of the advantages of Señor Balmaceda's schoolhouses, but every year marks advances. In the cities many adults are attending the night schools, and on the whole, new interest is being awakened in the practical benefits of education. Education has long been the political watchword of the liberal party.

The capital is the great educational center. The National University at Santiago has a yearly attendance of from ten to fifteen hundred students. This and the National Institute provide collegiate and professional courses. The latter numbers as many students as the university. There is the School of Medicine, which gives a very thorough and practical course. Law, mathematics, medicine and the fine arts are all taught,

There are twenty-five provincial lyceums, with a yearly attendance of from three thousand to four thousand students. A normal school for the preparation of teachers, an institute for the deaf and dumb, an agricultural department and other special schools, have been long established. There are one thousand and twenty-nine primary schools, four hundred and seventy-seven of which are mixed and the rest about evenly divided between the sexes, being either for males or females exclusively. These have a total yearly attendance of from eighty to eighty-five thousand. Beside there are over five hundred private schools, with an annual attendance of about twenty-five thousand. In 1890, congress appropriated over $7,000,000 for educational purposes.

In Santiago are a museum of natural sciences, an academy of fine arts, a conservatory of music and a botanical garden. There is a Methodist college where a good English course is given, and this stands in high estimation; the Presbyterians maintain an efficient seminary; there are also other semi-missionary schools.* The national library contains some 70,000 volumes. Seven daily papers are published in Santiago, with a circulation of 30,000 copies, also several scientific and literary reviews. There are four daily papers in Valparaiso, having a circulation above 20,000. Other cities also have dailies. Valparaiso has a museum of natural history, with sections devoted to the different branches. The museum at Santiago has branches devoted to mineralogy, zoölogy, botany, geology, palæontology, and ethnology, and has had in the past several eminent

*There are probably nearly three-quarters of a million children in Chile between the ages of six and fifteen who should be in school, so that only a small proportion—perhaps one-sixth of them—are availing themselves of the advantages of free schools. Of the three millions of people in Chile, it is a liberal estimate to say that one million can read. But it requires time to bring about changes, in matters like these. As to the upper classes, they are well-educated, well-informed and in the highest degree cultured. They are a quick, imitative people and acquire foreign languages with great facility.

scientific gentlemen interested in its success. The museum of fine arts publishes a review and has a very creditable collection of foreign and native works. An annual salon is also held in the capital, where several hundred works of art compete for the prizes offered. Schools of painting and sculpture have been started, but the attendance is only nominal. To encourage the fine arts, the government offers to send the most proficient pupils to Europe with pensions. The conservatory of music at the capital has a fair average attendance, considerable interest being taken in this branch. Indeed, the pianoforte is a common article of furniture in Chile.

On the whole, Chile is taking a step in the right direction for the formation of a true republic, she is educating her people.

CHAPTER V

CITIES AND GOVERNMENT

Chile has no single city with the population of Buenos Ayres or Rio de Janeiro, but she has her urban population scattered through many important centers. Santiago, the capital had, on January 1st, 1890, a population not far from two hundred thousand. Valparaiso had half as many. Talca, Concepcion, Chillan, La Serena and Iquique came next in order in size and population. Then came Ovalle, Melipilla, Tacna, San Felipe, Copiapo, Curico, Los Angeles, Quillota, Linares, Cauquenes, Angol and Valdivia. There were seventy-seven cities and towns in Chile with populations above that of villages, all important trade centres.

Santiago is the metropolis of Chile, and to it the wealthy and influential persons of the provinces find their way. It is a beautiful city, with its grand plaza, its alameda, its hill of Santa Lucia, its shade trees, its gay political and social life.

Valparaiso, perched upon rugged hills overlooking a blue bay of the Pacific, is an important commercial city. The streets are lined with fine shops, offices, banks and warehouses. There is a fine long mole, supplied with cranes, hydraulic machinery and all necessary appliances for taking care of the traffic of the port. Back of the mole are rows of customhouses,

Plaza del Armas, Santiago.

CHAPTER V

CITIES AND GOVERNMENT

Chile has no single city with the population of Buenos Ayres or Rio de Janeiro, but she has her population scattered through many important centers. Santiago, the capital had, on January 1st, 1899, a population of not far from two hundred thousand. Valparaiso had half as many. Talca, Concepcion, Chillan, La Serena and Iquique came next in order in size and population. Then came Ovalle, Mercedes, Tacna, San Felipe, Copiapo, Curico, Los Angeles, Quillota, Linares, Cauquenes, Angol and Valdivia. There were seventy seven cities and towns in Chile with populations above that of villages, all important trade centres.

Santiago is the metropolis of Chile, and to it the wealthy and influential persons of the provinces find their way. It is a beautiful city, with its grand plaza, its alameda, its hill of Santa Lucia, its shade trees, its gay political and social life.

Valparaiso, perched upon rugged hills overlooking a blue bay of the Pacific, is an important commercial city. The streets are lined with fine shops, offices, banks and warehouses. There is a fine long mole, supplied with cranes, hydraulic machinery and all necessary appliances for taking care of the traffic of the port. Back of the mole are rows of customhouses,

PLAZA DEL ARMAS, SANTIAGO.

bonded warehouses, government buildings, and, a little farther in the background, the city itself, built on terraces of the hills.

Concepcion is a city of over 25,000 people; it promises to be one of the chief cities of Chile. It has a pushing and energetic class of inhabitants. There are three main streets running parallel with each other, well paved and lined with business houses. It has a fine large railway depot, tramways, telegraphs, telephones and electric lights. The city is situated at the head of Concepcion Bay on a charming spot, twenty minutes by rail from Talcahuano, its port. The latter is one of the best ports in Chile and bids fair some time to become a formidable rival of Valparaiso. Tomé and Penco are also ports of Concepcion. From these southern ports are exported vast quantities of wheat, wool, wines, barley, oats, linseed and honey. Transportation facilities are excellent. Beside the railways to the capital and the towns to the south, the steamers of five European lines stop there on their regular trips north.

Between the capital and Concepcion, the provincial cities, situated in the midst of rich agricultural districts, are all thriving. Such are Chillan, Talca, San Fernando, Rengo and Rancagua. So are also the cities farther south in the old Araucanian territories, Los Angeles, Angol, Traiguen, Valdivia. The first three of these towns are of about the same size, each numbering some six or seven thousand inhabitants. Valdivia, a German city, numbers about 23,000 population. These places are situated in a country but recently opened to settlement, and, surrounded as they are by a rich agricultural zone, are destined to become foremost among the cities of Chile.

Cauquenes is a place of from seven to ten thousand

inhabitants, and is noted for its baths and as a summer resort. Puerto Montt is one of the most active cities in southern Chile and numbers about fifteen thousand people. It is a German town.

La Serena in the north is one of the oldest cities in Chile. It has a population of some seventeen or twenty thousand; Copiapo has a population not quite as large as that of La Serena. Iquique comes next with a population about the same as that of La Serena, then Pisagua and Antofagasta, each about half the size.*

Of the political parties of Chile, perhaps enough has been already said. As we have seen, there are two groups, conservatives and liberals, each with several factions. The conservatives are split into three factions: *Conservadores* proper, *Clericales* and *Montt-Varistas*. The liberals have been at different times split into four sections: *Liberales del Gobierno*, *Nacionales*, *Sueltos* and *Radicales*. There are then, the Montt-Varistas, aristocrats; *Clericales*, or church party; *Conservadores*, or Conservatives, but not extremists; *Liberales*, consisting of those holding more moderate views; and lastly, radical extremists and factions with varying shades of political belief.

The government is representative, and, to a certain extent, popular. The president is elected for a term of five years and is not, under the amended constitution, eligible to a second term, except after an interval of five years. He is elected by electors appointed directly by the voters of the provinces, in the proportion of three electors for each deputy to which the province is entitled. His salary is $18,000 per annum.

*In giving the population of Chilean cities, it is difficult to arrive at a mathematical degree of accuracy, as the estimates vary fully one-half. The population of Santiago is placed as low as 186,000 and as high as 237,000; that of Valparaiso from 105,000 to 109,000: Concepcion 24,000 to 40,000; Chillan 21,000 to 60,000, etc. The larger estimates, however, appear to be wide of the mark, such, for instance, as accrediting Tarapacá with a population of 33,000. Still, it must be remembered that all of these cities have recently made large gains.

He is assisted by a council of state, composed of eleven members, five chosen by himself and six elected by the congress; his cabinet consists of six ministers: Interior, Foreign Affairs, Worship and Colonization, Justice and Public Instruction, Finance, Departments of War and Navy, Industry and Public Works.

The president appoints and removes the intendentes of provinces and the gobernadores of departments. Were Chile a true federation this power would not be lodged in the hands of the chief, and intendentes and gobernadores would be elected by the people. The governors of departments appoint the subdelegates who preside over the sublegations, and these in time appoint the inspectors of districts.

Municipal authority is lodged in city councils and they are elected every third year. The judicial authority is vested in a supreme court, which has jurisdiction over the whole republic. Below the supreme court are five courts of appeal, and other subordinate tribunals in the provinces, courts of first instance in the departmental capitals, and subordinate courts in the districts. The judges are appointed by the president under certain rules, and the commissions can only be revoked after a legal trial for cause.

The national congress is composed of an upper and lower house; the senate is elected by the provinces for six years, one senator being allowed to three deputies and every fraction of two deputies; the chamber of deputies is elected by the departments in the proportion of one deputy for every 30,000 inhabitants, or a fraction greater than 15,000. Deputies are elected every three years and the senate renews one-half the number of senators every three years. Both deputies and senators must have property qualifications.

There are twenty-three provinces and one territory,

seventy five departments, eight hundred and fifty-five sublegations and three thousand and sixty-eight districts.

APPENDIX

PROVINCES, CAPITALS AND POPULATION

The following table will give the area and capitals of the different provinces, the population according to the census of November 26th, 1885, and the estimated population for January 1st, 1890. Also the population per square mile.

PROVINCES AND TERRITORIES	CAPITALS	AREA sq. miles	POP. Nov. 26 1885	POP. Jan. 1, 1890 (Es'mat'd)	Pop. per sq. mile 1890
Magellanes, Ter., Tierra del Fuego, Straits, and coast north to 47° S. Lat.	Punta Arenas	75,292	2,085	2,757	——
Chiloé	Ancud	3,995	73,420	77,502	19.0
Llanquihue	Puerto Montt	7,823	62,809	70,503	8.7
Valdivia	Valdivia	8,315	50,938	65,807	7.5
Arauco	Lebu	4,248	73,658	76,067	17.8
Cautin	Temuco	3,126	33,291	35,637	11.0
Malleco	Angol	2,856	59,492	62,308	20.9
Biobio	Angeles	4,158	101,768	118,537	28.0
Concepcion	Concepcion	3,535	182,459	211,730	59.0
Nuble	Chillan	3,556	149,871	155,858	43.7
Maule	Cauquenes	2,930	124,145	126,683	43.0
Linares	Linares	3,488	110,652	114,658	32.6
Talca	Talca	3,678	133,472	139,105	37.2
Curicó	Curicó	2,913	100,002	103,346	35.5
Colchagua	San Fernando	3,795	155,687	159,216	41.7
O'Higgins	Rancagua	2,524	87,641	91,581	35.8
Santiago	Santiago	5,223	329,753	368,615	70.0
Valparaiso	Valparaiso	1,637	203,320	215,940	15.0
Acancagua	San Felipe	5,840	144,125	153,459	25.9
Coquimbo	La Serena	12,905	176,344	186,895	14.3
Atacama	Copiapó	43,180	76,566	66,636	1.5
Antofagasta	Antofagasta	60,968	21,213	34,981	0.6
Tarapacá	Iquique	19,300	45,086	46,876	2.4
Tacna	Tacna	8,685	29,523	30,703	3.5
	Total	293,970	2,527,320	2,715,400	9.2

The province of Cautin was created by law March 12th, 1887, also the province of Malleco. Antofagasta and Tarapacá were received from Peru and Bolivia by the terms of the treaty of peace, October

20th, 1883. Antofagasta was made a province July 12th, 1888. Tacna is to continue in the possession of Chile for ten years dating from the time of the treaty, at the end of which time a plebiscite is to decide to which country it shall belong and an award of $10,000,000 is to be paid by the country gaining it. The population as given in the foregoing table is probably below the actual population, as the census returns are admittedly incorrect. It is usually given at above 3,000,000, with 50,000 Indians. At the last census the foreign population is given at 87,077. Of this number, 34,901 were Peruvian, 13,146 Bolivian, 9,835 Argentinian, 6,808 German, 5,303 English, 4,198 French, 4,114 Italian, 2,508 Spanish, 1,275 Swiss, 1,164 Chinese, 924 Anglo-American, 674 Austrian, 434 Scandinavian, and the rest scattering. This population has largely increased since the last census in 1885, particularly as to the German and English residents. The census gave an equal male and female population, and the number of births and deaths about the same.

DEBT, RECEIPTS AND EXPENDITURES

The debt of Chile stood on January 1st, 1890, as follows:

	Pesos.
External debt	47,116,460
Internal debt	24,013,579
Paper money	22,487,916
Total	93,617,955

The estimated income for 1890 was 58,000,000 pesos, and in addition to this there was a balance from 1889 of 31,257,526 pesos. Estimated expenditures for 1890 67,069,809 pesos. Imports and exports yearly are not far from 65 million pesos each. The peso has a nominal value of one dollar, but its actual value is 91.2 cents (1891).

BANKS

There were at this time 19 banks of issue with a joint capital of 23,111,887 pesos, and a registered issue of 16,679,790 pesos. Beside the regular banks there are a number of land banks which issue scrip bearing interest and lend money upon real estate security. The annual circulation of these varies from sixty to seventy-five million pesos.

MONEY

Beside the silver peso, Chilean money is put out in the following denominations: Ten dollar (condor), five dollar (medio condor, or doblon), two dollar (escudo), and one dollar (peso), gold pieces. There are half, fifth, tenth and twentieth of a dollar silver pieces, two and a half, two, one, and one-half cent pieces on copper and nickel.

CONSTITUTION

OF THE

REPUBLIC OF CHILE

CHAPTER I—THE TERRITORY

ARTICLE 1

The territory of Chile extends from the Desert of Atacama to Cape Horn, and from the Cordilleras of the Andes to the Pacific Ocean, comprising the archipelago of Chiloé, all the adjacent islands and those of Juan Fernandez.

CHAPTER II—THE FORM OF GOVERNMENT

ART. 2

The government of Chile is a popular representative one.

ART.

The Republic of Chile is one and indivisible.

ART. 4

The sovereignty inheres essentially in the Nation, which delegates its exercise to the authorities established by this constitution.

CHAPTER III—RELIGION

The religion of the Republic of Chile is the Apostolic Roman Catholic, and the public exercise of any other is excluded.*

*Other religious denominations are not now prohibited from worshiping in churches owned by private individuals or associations.

CHAPTER IV—Citizens of Chile

The following are Chileans:

1st. Those born within the territory of Chile.

2d. Children of Chilean parents, born in a foreign country, by the sole fact of becoming domiciled in Chile. The children of Chileans born in a foreign country, when the father is at the time in the service of the Republic, are Chileans, even for the ends for which the fundamental laws, or any others, require birth on Chilean territory.

3d. Foreigners who, having resided one year in the Republic, shall declare before the municipal authorities of the territory in which they reside their desire to fix their domicile in Chile, and shall ask naturalization papers.

4th. Those who may obtain naturalization by special favor of the Congress.

Art. 7

The municipal authorities of the department of the residence of such persons as have not been born in Chile, are competent to declare whether or not they are entitled to naturalization under the provisions of paragraph 3d of the preceding article. If the decision of the respective municipality be favorable, the President of the Republic will issue the proper naturalization papers.

Art. 8

The following are citizens with the right of suffrage: All Chileans who, having reached the age of twenty-five years, if unmarried, or twenty-one years, if married, and knowing how to read and write, and shall possess either of the following requisites:

1st. Any real estate, or capital invested in any kind of business or industry. The amount of the real estate or capital will be fixed by special law every ten years, for each province.

2d. The exercise of an industry or trade, or the possession of an employment, rental or usufruct, whose emoluments or products shall be proportional to the real estate or capital mentioned in the preceding paragraph.

Art 9

No person shall enjoy the right of suffrage who shall not be enrolled in the registry of electors of the municipality to which he belongs, and who shall not have in his possession a certificate of qualification three months prior to the election.

Art. 10

The function of active citizenship with right of suffrage is suspended for the following causes:

1st. Physical or moral incapacity that prevents the free and reasonable exercise of the faculties.

2d. The condition of domestic service.

3d. Arrest under an accusation of an offence punishable by a severe or infamous penalty.

ART. 11

Citizenship is lost for the following causes:

1st. Condemnation to a severe or infamous penalty.

2d. Fraudulent failure in business.

3d. Naturalization in a foreign country.

4th. Acceptance of employment, offices, distinctions or pensions from a foreign government, without special permission of Congress.

Those who from any of the above mentioned causes shall have lost their citizenship, may regain it by action of the Senate.

CHAPTER V—PUBLIC RIGHTS OF CHILEANS

ART. 12

The constitution secures to all the inhabitants of the Republic:

1st. Equality before the law. In Chile there is no privileged class.

2d. The right to fill all public employments and offices without other conditions than those prescribed by law.

3d. The equal distribution of imposts and taxes in proportion to their possessions, and the equal distributions of other public burdens. A special law will determine the manner of recruitment and enrollment of substitutes for the land and naval forces.

4th. The liberty of residence in any part of the Republic, of removal from one place to another, or departure from its territory, under the police regulations, and always without injury to other parties; and no person can be arrested, held or exiled, except in the manner prescribed in the laws.

5th. The inviolability of all property, whether belonging to individuals or communities, and no one can be deprived of his ownership of the same, nor of any part of it, however small, or of any right he may have in it, except by judicial decision; save when the interests of the state, specified by law, shall demand the use or expropriation of the same; and in such cases previous indemnification shall be given to the owner by agreement with him or by valuation made by competent men.

6th. The right of assemblage without previous permission and without arms. Meetings held in the squares, streets and other places of public use shall be always governed by police regulations.

The right of forming associations without previous permission. The right of presenting petitions to the constituted authority, on any subject of private interest has no other limitation than that of using in its exercise respectful and proper terms.

THE LIBERTY OF INSTRUCTION

7th. The liberty of publishing their opinions through the press, without previous sensorship, and no one shall be condemned for abuse of this right, except in virtue of a judgment after statement of said abuse by sworn witnesses, and after trial and sentence, according to law.

CHAPTER VI—THE NATIONAL CONGRESS

ART. 13

The legislative power is lodged in the National Congress composed of two chambers, one of Deputies, the other of Senators.

ART. 14

The Deputies and Senators are held inviolable for the opinions they express and for the votes they cast in the exercise of their offices.

ART. 15

No Deputy or Senator, after the day of his election, can be accused, prosecuted or arrested, except *in flagrante delicto*, unless the chamber to which he belongs shall previously authorize such accusation by declaring that there is ground for proceeding to trial.

ART. 16

No Deputy or Senator from the day of his election shall be accused unless before the chamber to which he belongs, or before the Permanent Committee, if the chamber be not in session. If it be declared that there are grounds for proceeding to trial, the accused is suspended from his legislative office and answerable to the proper court.

ART. 17

In case of the arrest of any Deputy or Senator *in flagrante delicto*, he shall at once be brought to the bar of the respective chamber, or before the Permanent Committee, upon the summary charges. The chamber or the committee shall thereupon proceed in accordance with the provisions of the second part of the preceding article.

THE CHAMBER OF DEPUTIES

ART. 18

The Chamber of Deputies is composed of members elected for the departments by direct suffrage, and in the form laid down by the law of elections.

ACT. 19

One Deputy shall be elected for every twenty thousand inhabitants, and for every fraction not less than twelve thousand. There shall also be elected substitute deputies, whose number shall be fixed by law.

ART. 20

The Chamber of Deputies shall be entirely renewed every three years.

ART. 21

The following are the qualifications for election as Deputy:

1st. To be in the enjoyment of the rights of a citizen elector.

2d. An income of five hundred pesos at least.

ART 22.

The Deputies are eligible for re-election indefinitely.

ART. 23

The following persons are ineligible as Deputies:

Priests in regular standing;

Rectors or vice rectors;

Justices of the courts of first instance;

Governors of provinces and departments;

Chileans mentioned in paragraph three of Art. 6, unless they have been in possession of their naturalization papers at least five years prior to their election.

The following are eligible, but must choose between the office of Deputy and their respective employments:

Employés residing out of the place of meeting of the Congress;

Every Deputy who, after his election, shall accept any salaried employment in the exclusive gift of the President of the Republic, shall cease from his representative functions, except in the cases provided for in Art. 90 of this Constitution.

THE SENATE

ART. 24

The Senate is composed of members elected by direct vote of the

Provinces, each one of which may choose one Senator for every three Deputies or fraction thereof, as of two Deputies. In the same manner one substitute Senator shall be elected for each province to replace the regular Senators chosen for that province.

ART. 25

Both the Senators and their substitutes shall continue in office for six years, and may be re-elected indefinitely.

ART. 26

The regular Senators shall be renewed every three years in the following manner:

The provinces which choose an even number of Senators shall renew one-half of their number at the election which takes place every three years; and those which elect an odd number, shall make the renewal in the first three years, leaving for the next triennial election the odd Senator not renewed in the preceding one. Those provinces which have only one Senator, shall make the renewal every six years, and the same rules shall be observed for the substitute Senators.

ART. 27

In case of the death of a Senator, or of the inability of one for any reason to discharge the duties of his office, the province which he represents shall, at the first renewal, choose another to complete the term for which he had been elected. Similar measures shall be taken whenever a Senator is answerable to any of the cases of disability mentioned in Art. 23.

ART. 32

QUALIFICATIONS FOR ELECTION AS SENATOR

1st. The exercise of citizenship at the time.

2d. The age of thirty-six years completed.

3d. Never to have suffered condemnation for crime.

The exclusive condition applied in Art. 23 to Deputies applies likewise to senators.

ART. 36

POWERS OF CONGRESS AND SPECIAL FUNCTION OF EACH CHAMBER

The following powers are delegated exclusively to Congress:

1st. To approve or disapprove of the annual budget of the funds intended for the expenditures of the public administration, which must be presented by the government.

2d. To approve or disapprove of a declaration of war, at the proposal of the President of the Republic.

3d. To declare, in case of the resignation of his office by the President of the Republic, whether the reasons assigned by him for the act incapacitate him or not from the exercise of the duties of said office, and, in consequence, to accept or refuse his resignation.

4th. To declare, in case of doubt concerning the cases specified in Articles 74 and 78, whether the impediment to the exercise of his office by the President is of such a nature as to necessitate the holding of a new election.

5th. To count the votes and verify the election of the President of the Republic in conformity with Articles 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72 and 73.

6th. To make exceptional and transitory laws, whose duration shall not be more than one year, in restraint of the liberty of the person and the press, and to restrict or suspend the liberty of meeting, when demanded by imperious necessity for the defense of the state, for the preservation of the constitutional system or for internal peace. If such laws designate penalties, the application of these shall always be made by the established tribunals.

Beyond the cases prescribed in this paragraph, no law shall be passed to suspend or restrict the liberties or rights secured by Art. 12.

ART. 37

The following are possible only by virtue of law:

1st. To impose taxes of any kind or nature, to suppress existing ones and determine in case of necessity their apportionment among the provinces or departments.

2d. To fix annually the expenditures of the public administration.

3d. To determine also every year the land and naval forces to be maintained in time of peace or war.

The taxes are fixed for the period of eighteen months only, and the land and naval forces for a like period.

4th. To contract indebtedness, to recognize debts already created, and set apart funds to meet them.

5th. To create new provinces or departments; to fix their boundaries; to open better ports, and establish customhouses.

6th. To fix the weight, fineness, value, style and denomination of the coins, and to regulate the system of weights and measures.

7th. To permit the introduction of foreign troops into the territory of the Republic, and determine the length of their stay in the same.

8th. To permit the quartering of bodies of troops in the place of the sessions of the Congress, or within ten leagues of the same.

9th. To authorize the departure of the national troops from the territory of the Republic, and fix the time for their return.

10th. To create or abolish public employments; determine or change their nature, increase or diminish their salaries; to grant pensions and decree public honors for great services.

11th. To grant general pardons or amnesties.

12th. To designate the place of residence of the nation's representatives, and of holding the sessions of the Congress.

ART. 38

The following are the exclusive functions of the Chamber of Deputies:

1st. To judge of the election of its members, pronounce upon charges of nullity made concerning the same, and accept their resignations, when the reasons for the same are of such a nature as to incapacitate them from the exercise of their duties. For a judgment upon these reasons there must be a concurrence of three-fourths of the Deputies present.

2d. To bring charges before the Senate, whenever it shall think proper to enforce the responsibility of the following officials:

Cabinet Ministers and Councillors of State, in the manner and for the crimes set forth in Articles 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97 and 107.

Generals of the army or navy, for having gravely compromised the national safety and honor, and in the form provided for Cabinet Ministers and councillors of state.

The members of the Permanent Committee, for grave omission in the discharge of the duty imposed by part second, Art. 58.

Governors of provinces for the crimes of treason, sedition, violation of the constitution, malversation of the public funds, and official corruption.

Judges of the higher courts of justice for notable dereliction in their duties.

In the last three cases the Chamber of Deputies will first declare whether or not there are grounds for considering the charge, and afterward, at an interval of six days, whether the charge shall be presented, after hearing the report of a committee of five persons chosen by lot from its own members. In case of an affirmative decision, two Deputies shall be appointed to present and prosecute the charge before the Senate.

ART. 39

The following are the functions of the Senators:

1st. To judge of the election of their own members; pronounce

upon charges of nullity made regarding them, and accept their resignations, when the reasons assigned are such as to incapacitate them morally or physically from the discharge of their official duties. No judgment can be made upon said reasons without the concurrence of three-fourths of the Senators present.

2d. To judge officials accused by the Chamber of Deputies in accordance with the provisions of Articles 38 and 98.

3d. To approve nominations made by the President of the Republic for archbishoprics and bishoprics.

4th. To give or refuse their consent to acts of the government in cases where such action is required by the constitution.

LEGISLATION

Laws may originate in the Senate or in the Chamber of Deputies, and be proposed by any member, or in a message addressed by the President of the Republic to those bodies. Laws in relation to taxation of any nature whatsoever, and in regard to recruiting, can originate in the Chamber of Deputies alone. Laws relating to amendments to the constitution and to amnesty can originate only in the Senate.

ART. 41

When a bill has been passed in the body where it originated, it shall be sent immediately to the other chamber for discussion and approval during that session.

ART. 42

A bill rejected in the chamber where it originated, can not be again brought up in the same until the session of the following year.

ART. 43

A bill approved by both chambers shall be sent to the President of the Republic, who, if he approves it, shall promulgate it as a law.

ART. 44

If the President disapproves the bill he shall return it to the chamber where it originated, with such remarks thereon as he may judge proper, within the space of fifteen days.

ART. 45

If the President returns the bill, rejecting it completely, the same shall be considered as not proposed, and can not be again presented in the session of that year.

ART. 46

If the President returns the bill with corrections or modifications,

it shall be reconsidered in both chambers, and if approved by both in the form suggested by the President, it shall become a law and be returned to him for promulgation.

If such modifications and corrections be not approved by both chambers, the bill shall be considered as not proposed, and can not be presented again during the session of that year.

ART. 47

If the said bill be again proposed in any of the sessions of the following years and be approved by both chambers and sent to the President of the Republic, and he shall reject it *in toto*, the chambers shall again take it into consideration and it shall become a law, if approved by a two-thirds majority of the members present in both chambers. The same shall also take place, in case the President returns it with corrections and modifications, and each chamber approve it without such corrections and modifications by the same two-thirds majority of the members present.

ART. 48

If the bill, once returned by the President, be not proposed and approved by the chambers during the two years next following, it shall, if afterward brought up, be considered as a new bill, as far as affected by the provisions of the preceding Article.

ART. 49

If the President of the Republic does not return the bill within fifteen days after its presentation to him, it shall be considered as approved and be promulgated as law. If the chambers close their session before the expiration of the fifteen days within which the bill should be returned, the President shall return it within the first six days of the ordinary session of the following year.

ART. 50

A bill approved by one of the chambers and rejected *in toto* by the other shall return to the chamber where it originated and be again considered, and if it be approved by a two-thirds majority of the members present, it shall be sent a second time to the chamber which rejected it, and it shall not be considered as again rejected by this chamber, unless by the concurrence of the votes of two-thirds of its members present.

ART. 51

Any bill which shall be amended or corrected by the revising chamber, shall be returned to that where it originated, and if such addi-

tions or corrections be approved by an absolute majority of its members present, it shall be sent to the President of the Republic; but if the additions or corrections be rejected, the bill shall be sent a second time to the chamber, and if the said additions or corrections be insisted on by a majority of two-thirds of the members present, the bill shall be sent back to the other chamber and said additions or corrections shall not be regarded as again rejected, unless by the concurrent vote of two-thirds of its members present.

SESSIONS OF CONGRESS

ART. 52

The ordinary sessions of Congress shall begin on the first day of June of each year, and shall close on the first of September.

ART. 53

When convoked in extraordinary session it shall consider the business for which it has been called together, to the exclusion of any other.

ART. 54

The Senate shall not enter into or continue in session without the concurrence of one-third of its members, nor the Chamber of Deputies without that of one-fourth of its members.

ART. 55

If on the day indicated in the constitution for the opening of the ordinary sessions, Congress shall be sitting in extraordinary session, this latter shall be closed and the matter for which it had been convoked shall continue to be considered in the ordinary session.

ART. 56

The Senate and the Chamber of Deputies shall open and close their ordinary, as well as extraordinary sessions, at the same time. The Senate, however, may assemble without the presence of the Chamber of Deputies for the exercise of the judicial functions indicated in part second of Art. 39.

The Chamber of Deputies shall continue its sessions without the presence of the Senate, if at the conclusion of the regular term there shall be pending any charges against the officials designated in part second of Art. 38, but only for the purpose of declaring whether such charges are well founded.

THE STANDING COMMITTEE

ART. 57

Before the close of its ordinary sessions, Congress shall each year

select seven members from each chamber, who shall compose the Standing Committee, which shall form a single body, and whose functions cease *de facto* on the 31st of the following May.

ART. 58

The Standing Committee, as the representative of the Congress, shall exercise supervision over matters pertaining to that body, in so far as concerns all branches of public administration, and it is therefore its duty:

1st. To watch over the observance of the constitution and the laws, and afford protection to individual rights.

2d. To make to the President of the Republic such representations as shall conduce to said ends, and to repeat the same if the former shall not have been sufficient.

When such representations relate to abuses or illegal acts committed by the authorities responsible to the President of the Republic, and he adopts none of the measures within his authority to put an end to such abuses and to punish the officials guilty of the same, it shall be understood that the President and the Minister of the respective department accept the responsibility for the acts of their subordinates, as if they had been done by their order or consent.

3d. To grant or refuse its consent to such acts of the President of the Republic as, according to the provisions of this constitution, must be done with the knowledge and consent of the Standing Committee.

4th. To request the President of the Republic to convoke the Congress in extraordinary session, whenever, in its judgment, such action is demanded by extraordinary and exceptional circumstances.

5th. To render an account to Congress, at its first meeting, of the measures taken by it in the discharge of its office.

The committee is responsible to Congress for an omission to fulfill the duties imposed upon it by the preceding paragraphs.

CHAPTER VIII—THE PRESIDENT OF THE REPUBLIC.

ART. 59

A citizen with the title of "President of the Republic of Chile" is the head of the administration of the state and supreme chief of the Nation.

ART. 60

To become President of the Republic it is necessary:

1st. To have been born in the territory of Chile;

2d. To be eligible as a member of the Chamber of Deputies;

3d. To be at least thirty years of age.

ART. 61

The President of the Republic shall continue in the exercise of the duties of his office during the term of five years, and shall not be eligible for the succeeding term.

ART. 62

To be eligible a second or more times, there must in each case have intervened the space of one term.

ART. 63

The President of the Republic shall be elected by electors chosen by the people by direct suffrage. The number of these electors shall be three times the total number of Deputies belonging to the several departments.

ART. 64

The electors shall be chosen by departments on the 25th day of June in the year when the Presidential term expires. Electors shall have the same qualifications as Deputies.

ART. 65

The electors shall meet on the 25th of July of the year when the Presidential term expires, and proceed to the election of the President in conformity with the general law of elections.

ART. 66

The electoral boards shall form two lists of all those persons who shall have been elected, and, after the same have been signed by all the electors, they shall send them enclosed and sealed, one to the Municipal Government of the capital of each province, in whose archives it shall remain deposited and closed, and the other to the Senate, where it shall be kept in the same manner until the 30th of August.

ART. 67

On that day the aforesaid lists shall be opened and read in a public session of both chambers assembled in the hall of the Senate, the President of this latter body presiding, and the balloting, if such be necessary, shall at once begin.

ART. 68

The person who shall have received an absolute majority of the votes shall be proclaimed President of the Republic.

ART. 69

In case no person shall have received an absolute majority, Congress shall choose between the two persons who shall have received the greater number of votes.

ART. 70

If the first majority shall have been divided between more than two persons, the Congress shall choose among them all.

ART. 71

If the first majority of votes shall have been given to one person, and the second to two or more, the Congress shall choose among all the persons who shall have obtained such first and second majorities.

ART. 72

This choice shall be made by an absolute plurality of votes, and by secret ballot. If the first ballot shall not give an absolute majority, a second shall be taken in which the voting shall be confined to the two persons who in the first ballot shall have received the greater number of votes. In case the number of votes obtained by each is equal, the balloting shall be repeated, and if again equal, the President of the Senate shall give the deciding vote.

ART. 73

Neither the balloting nor counting of the votes in these elections shall take place, unless three-fourths of the total number of the members of each chamber be present.

ART. 74

When the President of the Republic shall have command in person of the armed forces of the Nation, or when, by reason of sickness, absence from the country or other grave cause, he shall not be able to discharge the duties of his office, the Minister of the Interior shall replace him under the title of "Vice-President of the Republic." If the disability of the President shall be temporary, the said Minister shall continue to replace him until the President shall be able to resume the duties of his office. In case of the death of the President, accepted resignation, or other cause of absolute disability, which can not be removed before the expiration of the five years of his term of office, the Minister acting as Vice-President, within a few days after assuming the office, shall issue the necessary orders for holding a new election for President, in the form prescribed by the constitution.

ART. 75

In case the Interior office be vacant, the oldest Cabinet Minister shall take the place of the President, and if all the Ministerial offices be vacant, said place shall be filled by the oldest member of the Council of State, who is not an ecclesiastic.

ART. 76

The President of the Republic can not leave the territory of the Republic during the term of his office, or within one year after the conclusion of the same, without the permission of Congress.

ART. 77

The President shall cease to hold office on the same day that his five year term expires, and shall be succeeded by the President newly elected.

ART. 78

If this latter be temporarily prevented from taking possession of the Presidency, he shall be replaced by the oldest Councillor of State, but if the impediment be absolute or likely to continue indefinitely, or for a period longer than the Presidential term, then a new election shall be held in the manner prescribed by the constitution, and in the meantime the oldest Councillor of State, not an ecclesiastic, shall fill the office in his stead.

ART. 79

When, in the cases contemplated in Articles 74 and 78, an election for President is to take place, at a time other than that prescribed by the constitution, the order for the election of Presidential electors, for the election of President, for the ballotings and verifications made by Congress, shall be given for the same days, and the same forms shall be observed, as prescribed by Articles 65 to 73 inclusive.

ART. 80

The President-elect, upon taking possession of his office, shall take the following oath, which shall be administered to him by the President of the Senate, in presence of the two chambers assembled in the hall of the Senate:

I ———— swear by our Lord and these holy gospels to discharge faithfully the duties of the office of President of the Republic; to observe and protect the Apostolic Roman Catholic Religion; to preserve the integrity and independence of the Republic, and to guard and have guarded the constitution and the laws. So help me God, according as I shall keep my oath.

ART. 81

The President of the Republic is entrusted with the administration and government of the State, and his authority extends to everything that has for its object the preservation of public order in the interior, and the exterior safety of the Republic; and with guarding and having guarded the constitution and the laws.

ART. 82

The following are special prerogatives of the President;

1st. To assist in the making of the laws in accordance with the constitution, and to sanction and promulgate the same.

2d. To issue such decrees, regulations and directions as he may judge necessary for the execution of the laws.

3d. To watch over the official conduct of judges and other judicial officers; and, to this end, he may have recourse to the public authorities, for the enforcement of disciplinary measures in the proper court, or, if there be sufficient grounds, for formulating the necessary charges.

4th. To prorogue the ordinary sessions of Congress for a period of fifty days.

5th. To convoke the same with the consent of the Council of State in extraordinary session.

9th. To appoint and remove at will the Cabinet Ministers and officials of the departments, the Councillors of State of his own choosing, Ministers to foreign countries, consuls and other foreign agents, civil and military governors.

7th. To appoint the judges of the superior courts of justice, and those of first instance, at the proposal of the Council of State, in conformity with part second of Article 104.

8th. To present in threes for appointment as archbishops, bishops and other dignitaries of cathedrals, such persons as may be proposed by the Council of State. The person selected by the President for archbishop or bishop must also receive the approval of the Senate.

9th. To fill the other civil and military offices in accord with the Senate, and, when this body is not in session, by agreement with the Standing Committee, conferring the grades of colonel, naval captains and other superior officers of the army and navy. On the field of battle he may appoint such superior officers at will.

10th. To dismiss public employés for incompetency or other reason affecting injuriously the public service; but with the consent of the Senate, or during the recess of the same with that of the Standing Committee, in the case of chiefs of bureaus or higher employés, and

upon information of the respective chief, in the case of subordinates.

11th. To grant leaves of absence, retirements from service, licenses and privileges of pension, all in accordance with the laws.

12th. To watch over the collection of the public revenues and to decree their disposition, in accordance with the laws.

13th. To exercise the dispensation of patronage to the churches, benefices and priests, in accordance with the laws.

14th. To approve or prevent, with the approbation of the Council of State, the execution of decrees of ecclesiastical councils, papal bulls, briefs and rescripts, but if such contain general provisions, their enforcement can be approved or prevented only by means of a law.

15th. To grant pardons to individuals, with the approval of the Council of State. Cabinet ministers, Councillors of State, members of the Standing Committee, commanders in chief and governors of provinces, accused by the Chamber of Deputies and condemned by the Senate, can be pardoned by Congress alone.

16th. To dispose of the land and naval forces, organize and distribute them, as he shall judge proper.

17th. To command in person the land and naval forces, in accord with the Senate, and, during its recess, with the Standing Committee.

18th. To declare war with the previous approval of the Congress, and grant letters of marque and reprisal.

19th. To maintain political relations with foreign powers, receive their ministers, admit their counsels, conduct negotiations, make preliminary stipulations, conclude and sign all treaties of peace, alliance, truce, neutrality, commerce, concordats and other conventions. Treaties must, before ratification, be submitted to Congress for approval. Discussions and deliberations on these subjects shall be secret, if the President so desire.

20th. To declare a state of siege at one or various points in the Republic, in case of attack from abroad, with the consent of the Council of State, and for a determinate time. In case of internal disturbances, it belongs to the Congress to declare one or more points in a state of siege; but if that body be not in session, the President may do so, with the consent of the Council of State and for a determinate time. If at the reassembling of the Congress, the time specified shall not have expired, the declaration made by the President of the Republic shall be considered as an act of law.

21st. All matters pertaining to police and all public establishments are under the supreme superintendence of the President of the Republic, in conformity with the particular regulations by which they are governed.

ART. 83

Charges can be made against the President of the Republic only in the year next after the conclusion of his term of office, for any of the acts of his administration by which the honor and safety of the State shall have been greatly compromised, or the constitution openly violated. The forms under which charges against the President must be made shall be those of Artlcles 93 to 100, inclusive.

CABINET MINISTERS

ART. 84

The number of Ministers and their respective departments shall be determined by law.

ART. 85

The requisite qualifications of a Minister are:

1st. Birth within the territory of the Republic;

2d. The qualifications necessary for a member of the Chamber of Deputies.

ART. 86

All the orders of the President of the Republic must be signed by the respective Minister; and without this essential requisite they are without force.

ART. 87

Each Minister is personally responsible for the acts signed by him, and *in solidum* for whatever he shall subscribe or agree to with the other Ministers.

ART. 88

At the opening of the sessions of Congress Cabinet Ministers shall give to it an account of the state of the Nation, each in regard to the matters concerning his own department.

ART. 89

They shall also present to that body the annual estimate of the expenses required by their respective departments, and give an account of the disposition of the sums voted for the expenses of the previous year.

ART. 90

The duties of a Cabinet Minister are not incompatible with those of a Senator or Deputy.

ART. 91

Cabinet Ministers, even when not members of the Senate or Cham-

ber of Deputies, may attend the sessions of those bodies, and take part in the debates, but can not vote.

ART. 92

The Cabinet Ministers may be charged by the Chamber of Deputies with the crimes of treason, corruption in office, misappropriation of public funds, subornation, violation of the constitution, impeding the execution of the laws or failure to execute the same, and of gravely compromising the safety and honor of the Nation.

ART. 93

After the presentation of the charge, one of the eight succeeding days shall be indicated, in which the Minister against whom such charge is brought may make answer in respect to the acts imputed to him, and for deliberation in regard to proceeding with the consideration of the accusation.

ART. 94

If it be decided to proceed with the examination of the charge, a committee of nine persons shall be chosen by lot to present within the five days following a report as to whether there exist sufficient grounds for a formal accusation.

ART. 95

On the presentation of the report of said committee the Chamber shall proceed to discuss the same, giving a hearing to the members of the committee, the author or authors of the proposal to bring charges, and to the Minister and such Deputies as may wish to take part in the discussion.

ART. 96

As soon as the discussion shall end, if the Chamber decides to present the accusation, it shall appoint three of its members to represent it in formulating and prosecuting said accusation before the Senate.

ART. 97

As soon as the Chamber shall decide to bring the charges before the Senate, or declare that there are grounds for prosecution, the Minister accused shall be suspended in his official functions. Such suspension, however, shall cease, unless the Senate shall have rendered its judgment within the six months following the date on which the Chamber of Deputies shall have decided to prosecute the charge.

ART. 98

The Senate, acting as a jury, shall try the Minister, and shall con-

fine itself to declaring whether or not he is guilty of the crime or abuse of power charged. The declaration of guilt must be made by two-thirds of the number of Senators present at the session, and by virtue of such declaration the Minister is removed from his office. The Minister pronounced guilty by the Senate shall be sentenced in accordance with the laws, by the ordinary court of jurisdiction, both as to the application of the penalty provided for the crime committed and to the enforcement of his civil responsibility for the damages and losses caused to the State or to individuals.

The provisions of Articles 95, 96, 97 and the present one, shall also be observed in any other accusations or charges that may be made by the Chamber of Deputies in conformity with the terms of paragraph second, Article 38, of this constitution.

ART. 99

Cabinet Ministers may be accused by any private individual, on account of any losses suffered unjustly through any act of the Minister accused. Such charge must be addressed to the Senate for its decision as to whether or not it be well founded.

ART. 100

If the Senate declare that the charge is well founded, the complainant shall cite the Minister to appear before the proper court of justice.

ART. 101

The Chamber of Deputies may bring charges against a Minister during his term of office, or within six months subsequent to its termination. During these six months, he must not absent himself from the Republic without the permission of Congress, or in its recess, of the Standing Committee.

THE COUNCIL OF STATE

ART. 102.

There shall be a Council of State composed as follows:

Of three Councillors chosen by the Senate and three by the Chamber of Deputies, at the first ordinary session after each congressional election, and the retiring Councillors may be re-elected. In case of the death or disability of any of these, the respective Chamber shall appoint a substitute who shall fill his place until the congressional election following:

Of a member of the Superior Court of Justice, residing in Santiago;

Of an ecclesiastic occupying a position of dignity;

Of a general in the army or navy;

Of a chief of some office of the Treasury;

Of an individual who has filled the position of Minister of State, Diplomatic Agent, Intendente, Governor or Chief of Municipality. These last five Councillors shall be appointed by the President of the Republic.

The Council shall be presided over by the President of the Republic, or in his absence by one of its members appointed by itself as Vice-President, who shall be chosen annually, and may be reëlected.

The Vice-President of the Council shall be considered the oldest member for the ends contemplated in Articles 75 and 78 of this constitution.

Cabinet Ministers shall only have a voice in this Council, and if any Councillor be chosen Minister, he shall vacate his former office.

ART. 103

The qualifications for Councillor of State shall be the same as for Senator.

ART. 104

THE POWERS OF THE COUNCIL OF STATE

1st. To give its opinion to the President of the Republic in all cases in which he shall ask it.

2d. To suggest to the President for appointment, in cases of vacancies in courts of first instance and the higher tribunal of justice, such persons as it shall deem suitable, in conformity with the propositions of the Superior Tribunal, as by law provided, and in the form prescribed in the same.

3d. To present nominations by threes for Archbishoprics and Bishoprics, dignitaries and prebends of cathedrals of the Republic.

4th. To take cognizance of all matters pertaining to patronage and protection, which may come into dispute, in obedience to the decision of the Superior Tribunal of Justice, as by law required.

5th. To take cognizance likewise in disputes of jurisdiction between the administrative authorities, and in such as may arise between these and the courts of justice.

6th. To declare whether or not there be grounds for prosecution upon criminal charges against Intendentes, Military Governors, and Governors of Departments; except in the cases in which charges against Intendentes are instituted by the Chamber of Deputies.

7th. To give its assent to the declaration of a general call to arms

in one or more provinces invaded or threatened, in case of foreign war.

8th. The Council of State has the right to move for the dismissal of the cabinet ministers, intendentes, governors, and other delinquent, incapable, or negligent public employés.

ART. 105

The President of the Republic shall propose for the consideration of the Council of State:

1st. All projects of law (bills) which he shall judge proper to submit to Congress.

2d. All projects of law which the Senate and Chamber of Deputies shall pass, and send to him for his approval.

3d. All matters which are required by the constitution to be heard by the Council of State.

4th. The annual estimates of expenditures to be sent to Congress.

5th. All matters in which he shall judge it necessary to hear the opinion of the Council.

ART. 106

The decisions of the Council of State are simply advisory, except in the particular cases in which the constitution requires that the President shall act with its approval.

ART. 107

The Councillors of State are responsible for the decisions they render to the President, which may be contrary to the laws and with manifestly evil intention, and they may be accused and tried in the manner provided in Articles 93 to 98 inclusive.

CHAPTER VIII—THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE

ART. 108

The power of judging civil and criminal causes belongs exclusively to the tribunals established by law. Neither Congress nor the President of the Republic can in any case exercise judicial powers, or advocate pending causes, or revive causes already decided.

ART. 109

By virtue of law alone can any change be made in the powers of the courts, or in the number of their officials.

ART. 110

The judges of the superior tribunals and those of the courts of first instance shall hold office during good behavior. Commercial judges,

common magistrates and other inferior judges shall hold their offices for the time specified by law. The judges, whether perpetual or for a term, can not be deposed from office except for cause legally decided.

ART. 111

The judges are personally responsible criminally for corruption in office, failure to observe the laws which govern trials, and, in general, for any evasion or extortion in the administration of justice. The law shall determine the cases and the manner in which this responsibility shall be enforced.

ART. 112

The law shall determine the qualifications which judges shall respectively possess, and the necessary number of years of practice as advocate before appointment to the superior tribunals or lower courts.

ART. 113

There shall be in the Republic one magistracy (tribunal) whose duty it shall be to have the superintendence direct, correctional and economical, of all the tribunals and courts of the Nation, in accordance with the law determining its organization and attributes.

ART. 114

A special law shall determine the organization and powers of all tribunals and courts that may be necessary for the prompt and full administration of justice throughout the territory of the Republic.

CHAPTER IX—GOVERNMENT AND INTERNAL ADMINISTRATION

ART. 115

The territory of the Republic is divided into provinces, the provinces into departments, the departments into sub-delegacies, and these last into districts.

THE INTENDENTES

ART. 116

The government in chief of each province in all the branches of its administration is vested in an *Intendente*, who shall exercise his powers in accordance with the laws, and under the order and directions of the President of the Republic, whose natural and immediate agent he is. His term of office shall be four years; but he may be reappointed for an indefinite time.

THE GOVERNORS

ART. 117

The government of each department is vested in a governor, sub-

ordinate to the Intendente of the province, and whose term of office shall be three years.

ART. 118

The governors are appointed by the President of the Republic, on recommendation of the respective Intendente, and can be removed by this latter person with the assent of the President of the Republic.

ART. 119

The Intendente of the province is also governor of the department in the capital of which he resides.

THE SUB-DELEGATES

ART. 120

The sub-delegacies are each governed by a sub-delegate, who is appointed by the governor of the department to whom he is subordinate. The sub-delegates shall hold their office for two years; they may be removed by the governor, who shall give his reasons to the Intendente. They also may be re-appointed for an indefinite time.

THE INSPECTORS

ART. 121

The districts are governed by an inspector, under the orders of the sub-delegate, who may appoint or remove him, giving his reasons to the governor.

THE MUNICIPALITIES

ART. 122

In each capital of a department there shall be a municipality, and in such other centers of population as the President of the Republic, with the approval of the Council of State, shall think proper to establish such.

ART. 123

The muncipalities shall be made up of such number of magistrates and aldermen as the law shall fix, having regard to the population of the territory in which they are established.

ART. 124

The aldermen shall be elected by the direct vote of the people and in the manner provided by the law of elections. They shall hold office during three years.

ART. 125

The law shall decide the manner of the election of the magistrates and the length of their term of office.

ART. 126

The following are the qualifications for election as magistrate or alderman:

1st. The active exercise of citizenship;

2d. At least five years residence in the territory of the municipality.

ART. 127

The governor is the chief of all the municipalities in his department, and president of that one in which his capital is established. The sub-delegate is president of the municipality in his sub-delegacy.

ART. 128

The following are the powers of the municipal officers within their territories:

1st. To care for the public health, comfort, display and amusement.

2d. To promote agriculture, education, industry and commerce.

3d. To care for the primary schools and other educational institutions that are supported by the municipal funds.

4th. To have superintendence of hospitals, asylums, houses for abandoned children, jails, houses of correction, and charitable institutions, in accordance with the regulations prescribed for the same.

5th. To have charge of the construction and repair of roads, pavements, bridges, and all necessary or ornamental public works, which are maintained from the municipal funds.

6th. To administer and pay out the fund of ways and means, in accordance with the rules prescribed by law.

7th. To make the allotments of taxes, number of recruits and substitutes apportioned to the Municipality, in case the law shall not have designated other persons or authority for that purpose.

8th. To address to Congress every year, through the Intendente and the President of the Republic, such petitions as it shall judge proper, whether in relation to the general welfare of the State or the particular welfare of the department, and particularly in regard to the raising of means and meeting the extraordinary expenses demanded for the construction of new works of public utility in the department, or for the repair of those in existence.

9th. To propose to the general Government, or to that of the

province or department, such measures of administration as may conduce to the general welfare of the department.

10th. To make municipal ordinances in regard to these subjects, and present them, through the Intendente, to the President of the Republic, for his approval with the advice of the Council of State.

ART. 129

No agreement or regulation of the Municipality which shall not be in conformity with the established regulations, can be carried into effect without being brought to the attention of the Governor, or of the Sub-delegate, when of his jurisdiction, and he can suspend its execution if he finds it prejudicial to public order.

ART. 130

All of the municipal offices belong to the corporation, and no one shall be excused from service in the same unless for cause specified by law.

ART. 131

A special law shall regulate the internal government of municipal bodies and shall designate the duties and powers of all those charged with provincial administration and the manner in which such duties and powers shall be exercised.

CHAPTER X—THE GUARANTEES OF SAFETY AND PROPERTY

ART. 132

In Chile there are no slaves, and he who treads its soil becomes and remains free. No Chilean can engage in the slave trade; and no foreigner engaged in the same can reside in Chile or be naturalized in the Republic.

ART. 133

No one can be condemned without legal trial, and by virtue of a law made before the act for which he is tried.

ART. 134

No one can be tried by special commissions, by other than the courts provided by law and previously established.

ART 135

In order that an order of arrest may be executed, it is necessary that it be issued by the authority having the right to make arrests, and be made known to the arrested person at the time of its execution.

ART. 136

Any delinquent *in flagrante delicto* may be arrested without an order, and by any person, but for the sole purpose of conducting him before a competent judge.

ART. 137

No one can be kept imprisoned or detained, except in his own house, or public places designed for that purpose.

ART. 138

Officials having charge of prisons can not receive into them prisoners without copying into their register the order for the arrest issued by the authority having the right of making arrests. They may, however, receive into the precincts of the prison, as under detention, such persons as may be brought there for the purpose of being presented to the competent judge; but they must report to such judge within twenty-four hours.

ART. 139

If under any circumstances the public authority shall cause the arrest of any inhabitant of the Republic, the officer ordering such arrest shall, within twenty-four hours, give notice to the proper judge, and arraign the person arrested for his disposal.

ART. 140

No magistrate having jurisdiction over a house of detention can be prevented or hindered from visiting a prisoner confined in it.

ART. 141

This magistrate shall, if the prisoner so request, transmit to the proper judge a copy of the order of arrest given to the accused; or demand that such copy be given him; or himself give a certificate of the imprisonment of the person, if at the time of his arrest no copy of said order was given him.

ART. 142

When a sufficient bond has been given for the person or for indemnification for the act, in the form prescribed by law for the particular case, no one not amenable to a severe or infamous penalty can be kept in prison, or under restraint.

ART. 143

Any individual imprisoned or detained illegally through infraction of the provisions of Articles 135, 137, 138 and 139, may, either by himself or by any one acting in his name, have recourse to the magis-

trate designated by the law, to demand the enforcement of the legal forms. Such magistrate shall order the accused to be brought before him, and such order shall be implicitly obeyed by all those in charge of prisoners or places of detention. As soon as he shall have informed himself of the facts in the case he shall cause all legal defects to be remedied and place the accused at the disposal of the proper judge; proceeding summarily and with dispatch, correcting defects or reporting them to the proper authority.

ART. 144

In criminal cases the accused shall not be obligcd to take oath as to his or her own acts, nor shall his or her children or grandchildren, husband or wife, or relatives to the third degree of consanguinity and second of affinity, inclusive, be so obliged.

ART. 145

Tortures shall not be applied, nor in any case shall confiscation of property be imposed. No infamous penalty shall extend beyond the person of the condemned.

ART. 146

The house of every inhabitant of Chilean territory is an inviolable asylum, and can not be torn down except for special cause determined by law, and in virtue of the order of the proper authority.

ART. 147

Epistolary correspondence is inviolable. No papers or documents can be opened, intercepted or searched, except in the cases specially designated by law.

ART. 148

The Congress alone can impose taxes, direct or indirect, and without its special authorization, every authority of the State, and every individual is forbidden to impose them, under any pretext whatever.

ART. 149

No kind of personal service or tax can be exacted, except in virtue of a decree by the proper authority based on the law authorizing such exaction, and showing such decree to the party taxed in the act of imposing such service or tax.

ART. 150

No armed body shall make requisitions, or exact any kind of assistance, except through the civil authorities, and by request of the same.

ART. 151

No kind of labor or industry shall be prohibited, unless opposed to good morals, or to the public health or safety, or unless the interest of the Nation so demand and the law so require.

ART. 152

Every author or inventor shall have the exclusive property of his discovery or production for the time specified in the law; and in case the law require said discovery or production to be open to the public, suitable indemnification shall be made to the inventor.

CHAPTER XI—GENERAL PROVISIONS

ART. 153

Public instruction is one of the first things to claim the attention of the government. The Congress shall formulate a general plan of national education, and the respective Cabinet Ministers shall annually make a report of the condition of the same throughout the Republic.

ART. 154

There shall be an office of Superintendence of public instruction, whose duty it shall be to inspect public teaching under the direction of the government.

ART. 155

No payment shall be taken account of in the Treasury of the State, unless made in virtue of a decree, in which the law is cited or the part of the estimate approved by both Chambers which authorizes such expenditure.

ART. 156

All Chileans able to bear arms shall be enrolled on the militia lists, unless specially exempted by law.

ART. 157

Obedience is the essential necessity of the public forces. No armed body can be a deliberative one.

ART. 158

Every resolution made by the President of the Republic, the Senate, or the Chamber of Deputies, in the presence or at the request of an army, or of a general at the head of an armed force, or of any assemblage of people, who, whether armed or unarmed, shall be disobedient to the authorities, is null in law, and of no effect.

ART. 159

No person or collection of persons shall assume to act for or to represent the people, arrogate to themselves its rights, or petition in its name. The violation of this Article is sedition.

ART. 160

No magistrate, no person or collection of persons can assume, even under pretext of extraordinary circumstances, any authority or rights not expressly conferred on them by the laws. Any act in violation of this prohibition is null.

ART. 161

When one or more places in the Republic shall be declared in a state of siege, in conformity with the provisions in part twentieth of Article 82, only the following powers, by virtue of such declaration, are granted to the President of the Republic:

1st. To imprison persons in their own houses, or in places not jails or others destined for the confinement of common criminals.

2d. To remove persons from one department to another on the mainland, and within the space comprised between the ports of Caldera, on the north, and the province of Llanguihue, on the south. The measures taken by the President by virtue of the state of siege, shall last no longer than this, as otherwise they may be in violation of the constitutional guarantees given to the Senators and Deputies.

ART. 162

No entails of any kind yet established, or which may be established in the future, shall impede the free alienation of the properties effected by them, assuring to the beneficiaries of such entail the value of the property alieniated. A special law shall regulate the manner of carrying this law into effect.

CHAPTER XII—THE OBSERVANCE AND AMENDMENTS OF THE CONSTITUTION

ART. 163

Every public functionary on taking possession of his office shall make oath to support the Constitution.

ART. 164

The Congress alone, in conformity with Articles 40 and following, can settle any doubts that may arise in regard to the meaning of any of its Articles.

ART. 165

No motion for the amendment of one or more Articles of this Constitution shall be admitted, unless it be supported by at least one-fourth of the members present in the Chamber where it is proposed.

ART. 166

If the motion be entertained, the Chamber shall decide whether or not such Article or Articles need to be amended.

ART. 167

If both Chambers by a two-thirds vote in each, shall decide that said Article or Articles should be amended, a resolution to this effect shall be sent to the President, for the purposes expressed in Articles 43, 44, 45, 46 and 47.

ART. 168

When the necessity for said amendments shall be expressed by law, the next Congressional election shall be awaited, and in its first session after said election, the proposed amendments shall be discussed, the bill having its origin in the Senate, according to Article 40, and the same forms shall be observed as for other bills, in accordance with the Constitution.

NOTE.—Articles 28, 29, 30 and 31 were stricken out by amendments adopted in 1874.

AUTHORITIES ON CHILEAN HISTORY

The following books and articles will be found of interest concerning Chile:

"Historia General de Chile," by Diego Barros Arana. In 12 vols. (Santiago, 1884). Also his histories of the war of Chilean independence. These are the best authorities.

Claudio Gay's monumental tomes are a reliable history—"Historia General de Chile."

"Obras Historicas sobre Chile," by Don Vicuña Mackenna. His history of the war with Peru is the best work on that subject.

"Historia General del Reyno de Chile," by R. P. Diego Rosales.

——Molina's History of Chile (translated). (Longmans, 1809). 2 vols.

Ovalle's works and Ercilla's poems.

Historiadores de Chile, coleccion de documentos relativos a la historia nacion[illegible]iago, 1861, and each year following).

Geográfia fisica de la República de Chile. (A. Pissis).

"Descubrimiento y Conquista de Chile," by Miguel Luis Amunátegui. (Santiago, 1885). This is a valuable work now in its second edition.

"Comentarios sobre la Constitución politica de 1833." Manuel Corrasco Albano. (Santiago, 1874, 2d edition).

"Crónica de la Araucania." Horacio Lara. 2 vols. (Santiago, 1889).

"Compendio de la Historia de Chile, 1492-1884." Gasper Toro. (Santiago).

"Historia de la Administracion Errázuriz." This is a valuable work never finished and now out of print. It is preceded by an introduction which contains a review of the movements and struggles of political parties in Chile from the year 1823 to 1871. The author is Isidoro Errázuriz.

Historia de Chile, durante los cuarenta años trascurridos desde 1831 hasta 1871. Dr. Raman Sotomayor Valdez. 2 vols. (Santiago, 1875).

El Libro del Carbon de piedna en Chile. Benjamin Vicuña Mackenna. (Santiago, 1883).

El Libro de la Plata. By the same author.

Historia de la Guerra del Pacifico. 1879-1881. Diego Barros Arana. (Santiago).

Geográfia Descriptiva de la Republica de Chile. Emigue Espinoza. (Santiago, 1890).

Estudio sobre la Organizacion Economica y la Hacienda Publica de Chile. 2 vols. (Santiago, 1880).

Historia de la Guerra de America, entre Chile, Peru y Bolivia. Tomás Caivano. (Florence, 1883).

Los Finances de Chile. Edward Ovalle Correo. (Paris, 1889).

Narracion Historica de la Guerra de Chile con el Peru y Bolivia. Mariano Felipe Paz Soldan. (Buenos Ayres, 1884).

Guerra del Pacifico. Pascual A. Mareno. (Valparaiso, 1885). This is a recapitulation of all the official documents, correspondence and other publications referring to the war with Peru.

El Parvenir en Chile de los Emigrantes Europeos. Louis Dorte. (Santiago, 1884).

Conflicto entre el Presidente de la Republica y el Congreso. (Santiago, 1890). Imprenta de los Debates.

Historia de la Dictadura y la Revolucion en Chile de 1891. Egaña. (Valparaiso, 1891).

Los Capitales Salitreras de Tarapacá. Guillermo E. Billinghurst. (Santiago, 1889).

El Abastecimiento de agua potable del Puerto de Iquique: Estudio escrito por Guillermo E. Billinghurst. (Iquique, 1887).

Condicion legal de los Pemanos nacidos en Tarapacá. Informe espudido. Guillermo E. Billinghurst. (Santiago, 1887).

Condicion legal de los Estacamentos Salitreros de Tarapacá. (Iquique, 1884).

Estudio sobre la Geografía de Tarapacá. Billinghurst. (Santiago, 1886).

Diccionaria Geografía de la Republica de Chile, por Francisco D. Asta Burnoga.

"Historia de la Administracion Santa Maria," por C. Waker Martinez. This work is published in Santiago in two volumes, and is one of the very best later political histories of Chile, though written by a stanch conservative from a partisan standpoint. It is argumentative in style, but a very comprehensive work.

Synopsis Estadística y Geográfica de Chile, 1888.

Estadistica Comercial de la Republica de Chile, 1889.

Memorias presentandos al Congreso nacional por los Ministros de Estado en los departmentos de Relaciones Exteriores, Hacienda, etc. (Santiago, 1890).

Die Republiken von Sud-Amerika, Geographisch und Statistisch, by J. C. Wappäus.

The following works in English will also be found of interest:

"Memoirs of General Miller." This is perhaps the best English account of the War of Independence.

Captain Basil Hall's "Journal in Chile, Peru and Mexico," is also a graphic account of the same struggle. So also are "Lord Cochrane's Services in Chile, Peru and Brazil." (Dundonald). Maria Graham's "Journal of a voyage to Brazil and Chile," etc., and Haigh's "Travels in Buenos Ayres and Chile."

Other valuable works and articles are, Meir's "Travels in Chile and La Plata;" Stevenson's "Twenty Years in South America;" Bonnycastle's "Spanish America;" Watson's "Spanish and Portuguese South America;" Nile's "South America and Mexico," covering the period of the revolution; American Register, Vol. II, page 273; Eclectic Review, Vol. XLII, page 406; Nile's Register, Vol. XIV, page 384.

Later works are, Markham's article in Winsor's "Narrative and Critical History of America," also in the Encyclopædia Brittanica; Appleton's Annual Cyclopædia; "Statesman's Year-Book;" Dahlgren's "South Sea Sketches;" Hunter's "A Sketch of Chile;" "Handbook of the American Republics;" "The Progress and Actual Condition of Chile," by G. Rose-Innes; "South America" (Bates); "Notes of a Naturalist in South America" (Ball). Theo. Child's "Spanish-American Republics," and Maurice H. Hervey's "Dark Days in Chile," are late works.

On the war between Chile and Peru, Mr. Clements R. Markham's "The War between Chile and Peru," is the best account in English. His late work, "A History of Peru," covers the period succinctly.

Lieutenant Mason's "War on the Pacific Coast of South America," —War series No. 11, Washington, 1885—is also a reliable account, and from a military standpoint, the best. Boyd's "Chile in 1879-80," is pleasant reading. On the Civil war of 1891, Mr. Maurice H. Hervey's "Dark Days in Chile," is the most complete account we have in English.

The student of Chilean history will want to look into the Almagro affair in Prescott's "Conquest of Peru," and will read with interest Garcilasso de la Vega's Royal Commentaries, which work is now in very handy form in Markham's translation. He will also read for entertainment, "Wanderings in Patagonia," by Beerholm, "Across Patagonia," by Dixie; "Adventures in Patagonia," by Coan: "Cruise of Tierra del Fuego " by Snow; "South America," by Gallenga, and "The English in South America," by Mullhall.

INDEX

A PAGE

Abascal, José Fernando...149, 157, 159
Acevedo, Tomás Alvarez de...114, 115, 126.
Aconcagua.....111, 164, 211
Acuña, Antonio de, y Cabrera..106, 125
Adams.....306
Agriculture.....253
Aguada des Inglés.....184
Aguillera, Inez.....95
Aguirre, Francisco.....47, 56, 58
Aillavilu.....48
Aillavilu II 97
Albarracain, Colonel.....300
Aldea, Sergeant.....282
Aldea, Don José Antonio Rodriguez.195
Alderete.....49, 56, 61
Aldunate, Luis.....321
Alejo.....106
Alfalfa.....389
Alfonso, José.....264
Allegre, Marquis Selva.....133
Alliance.....233
Almagrians.....23
Almagro.....21, 30, 33
Almagro, Diego.....23, 34
Altamirano, Eulogio.....306
Alva, Francisco de, y Noruena..101-125
Alvarado, General 172, 298
Alvarez.....136
Alvear.....136
Alzerreca, General.....329, 362
Amat, Manuel.....113, 126
Amenguel, Colonel.....301
America.....110

PAGE

Amunátegui, Miguel Luis.....264, 301
Ancon.....190, 223, 324
Ancanamon.....98
Andes.....25, 405
Andres.....71
Andrews, Captain Joseph.....179
Angol.....83, 84, 91, 92, 384, 389, 418
Animals 405
Anson, Lord.....111
Antepillan.....89
Antequera.....132
Antiguena.....73
Antofagasta.....346, 347, 420
Antulevu.....82
Antunecul.....74
Aponte, Gabriel Cano de.....111, 126
Apo-ulmenes.....39
Appendix.....423
Aqueducts.....29
"Aquilles" (warship).....222
Aragon.....110
Araña, Barros 265
Aranda, Martin.....86, 100
Araucanians....28, 30, 31, 37, 40, 48, 181 386.
Arauco.....38, 102, 178, 384
Arauco Company.....330
Arauco, Fort of....52, 74, 76, 87, 99, 106, 111.
Arauco, Siege of.....75
Architecture.....28
Arenales, Colonel.....188
Arenas, Antonio.....306
Argentine Republic.....232, 253

PAGE

Argomedo, José Gragorio.....144
Armangos.....135
Arms.....31
Army.....412
Arrate.....342
Art.....31
Artigas.....136
Astronomy.....31
Atacama desert.....23, 25, 32, 346
Atacama grants.....29
Atahualpa.....21, 24
Aturez.....330
Augustine.....119
Aurelie Antoine I.....239
Authorities on Chilean History.....456
Aveles, General Gabriel de.....121, 126
Ayacucho.....193
Ayacucho, Battle of.....137
Azua, Tomás de.....112
Azuaga, D. Fr. Pedro.....71

B

Baides, Marquis of.....105, 106, 125
Balcarce.....136, 172
Ballenar, Baron of.....118
Balmaceda, José Manuel..329, 332, 336, 337, 345, 355.
Balmaseda, Juan de.....114, 126
Baltimore affair.....367
Banking.....391
Banks.....266, 424
Baptista, Mariano.....306
Baquedano, General.....298, 302, 311, 313, 320.
Barbosa.....301, 311, 359, 362
Barcelo, Colonel.....301
Bargas, Pantano de, Battle of.....137
Barley.....389
Barreda, Francisco Sanchez de la, 111, 126.
Barrionuevo, D. Fr. Fernando.....71
Basque.....110
Bastidas, Roderigo,.....79
Beans.....389
Beauchef, Major.....185, 202
Bella-Vista, Battle of.....210
Bello, Andres.....224, 228
Belgrano, General.....132, 135
Benalcazar.....21
Benavides, Ambrosio de.....114, 115
Benavides, Vincent.....177

PAGE

Benevente.....209
Bernal, Lorenzo.....74, 79
Berney, Antony.....115
Berroeta, Felix de.....113, 126
Bilbao, Francisco.....231
Biobio River.....37, 83
Birds.....406
"Blanco" (vessel).....246
Blanco, Don Ventura.....213
Bolivar, General..133, 139, 192, 210, 218
Bolivia.....133
Boloquesi.....302
Bonaparte, Joseph.....128
Borgoño, Don José Manuel.....172, 213
Boroa.....39, 95
Bovadilla.....53
Boyaca, Battle of.....136
Brayer, General.....168, 172
Brazil.....135, 136, 214
Bread.....29
Bricks.....393
Buena.....346
Buendia, General José.....278
Buenos Ayres.....114, 132, 134, 214
Bulnes, General Manuel..218, 223, 227, 319.

C

Cabinet.....334, 421
Cabinet Ministers.....442
Cabrera, Dr. Ladislao.....275
Cachapoal River.....42, 158
Caceres.....309, 312, 315, 322
Cacique.....29
Cadeguala.....83, 84
Cadiz.....128
Cadiz monopoly.....115
Calderon, Francisco Garcia.....315
Callacalla.....50
Callao.....190, 210, 314
Camacho, Colonel.....295, 300
Cambiaso.....229
Camel.....29
Camera de Apolaciones.....145
Camerones.....324
Campero, Narcisco,.....295, 299, 316
Campino, Don Joaquim.....206
Campo.....93
Camus.....342
Canals.....123
Cancha-Rayada.....153, 170

PAGE

Cañete....66, 74, 76, 384
Cañete, Massacre of....66
Canseco, Lieut. Diez....285
Canterac, General....192
Canto....316, 322, 343, 346, 359
Cape Horn....325, 404
Capitals....423
Captains of the Friends....110
Capuchins....232
Caracas....134, 137
Caracoles mines....256
Caralava....92
Carampangui....98
Caravajal, Don Fermin....118
Carbajal....287
Cardeña....221
Carmargo....41
Carrasco, Francisco Antonio...125, 126, 142.
Carrera, José Miguel....144, 147, 175
Carrera, Juan....147, 159
Carrera, Luis....147
Carrillo....221, 306
Cavalho, Colonel....353
Carving....31
Casanate, Pedro Portale....106, 125
Casma....223
Castaneda, Gregori....73
Castelli....134
Castellon, Carlos....321
Castillero....86
Castro....76, 107, 202
Castro, Vasca de....45
Catalonia....121
Catipillan....83
Catipiuque....86
Catiray....98
Caupolican....51, 54, 58, 61, 69
Cauquenes....116, 418, 419
Cauques....27
Cauton River....49
Cavendish, Sir Thomas....84
Caxamarca....22, 27
Cayancara....82
Cerda, Cristoval de la....101, 125
Cerdeña....222
Cereals....407
Cerro Grande, Battle of....235
Chacabuco....163
"Chacabuco"....179
Chacajco....39

PAGE

Chacao....77
Chanarcillo....229
Charez, Colonel Silva....235
Charles II....109
Charles III....114
Charles IV....127
Checacupe....132
Chief....29
Children of Sun....31
Chillan....103, 106, 107, 150, 218, 418
Chiloé..68, 76, 94, 107, 116, 148, 202, 210, 211, 404.
Chilotes....28
Chiquilanians....28, 80
Chivecura....91
Choapo....112
Chonos Islands....404
Chorillos....311
Chorocomago....184
Christiancy....306
Chupas, Battle of....23, 35
Cicarelli....229
Cienfuegos, José Ignacio...152, 204, 225
Cisneros, D. Fr. Augustin....79
Cisniros....133
Cities....416
Citizens....426
Civilization....28
Civil Service....327
Clay....30
Clericales....335
Clentaru....106
Climate....32, 387
Cloth....30
Clothing....31
Coal....261, 391
Coal Mines....232
Cobija....323
Cochrane, Lord Thomas...181, 190, 373
Coelemu....112
Colchagua....211, 218
Colcura....106
Coleta....346
Colhue....39
Coliguna....114
Colocolo....51, 62, 71, 88
"Colocolo" (warship)....322
Colombia....137
Commerce....414
Company of Jesus....119
Complexion....29

PAGE

Concepcion..48, 58, 79, 84, 107, 112, 211, 216, 418, 419.
Concepcion, Diocese of.....118
Concha, José de Santiago.....107, 111, 123, 126.
Concon, Battle of.....360
Conde de la Conquista.....143
Condell, Captain.....281
Condorcanqui.....132
Congress.....421, 428
Congressionalists.....346
Conquistadores.....29
Conservadores.....335
Conservatives.....335
Constitution.....149, 215, 218, 241, 328, 333, 425.
Consulting Council.....209
Copiapins.....27, 47
Coptapo....33, 41, 44, 111. 229, 235, 418, 420.
Copper.....31, 267, 395
Coquimbo... ...33, 41, 46, 196, 211, 235
Cordova, Alonzo de, y Figueroa...102, 106, 125.
Cordova, Luis Fernandez, y Arce, 102, 125.
Coronel.....232
Corral Castle.....185
Corsairs.....84
Cortez, Pedro.....92
Corteo.....44
Council of the Indes.....134
Council of State 421, 444, 445
Count of Populations.....112
"Covadonga" (gunboat).....245
Covarrubias, Alvaro.....239
Covarrubias, Marquis of.....118
Coya.....91
Coya, Clara Beatrice.....89
Creoles.....129
Crops.....267
Crosbie, Captain.....189
Cruz, Don Anselmo.....186
Cruz, José Marie de la.....231
Cuevas.....162
Cujo.....92, 114
Cultivation 28
Cumberland.. 180
Cunches.....28, 50, 67
Cuquimpuans.....27
Curalé.....177

PAGE

Curanteo 104
Curés.....28
Curico.....111, 112, 116, 418
Curignancu.....113
Curimilla.....104
Customs.....374
Customhouses.....226
Cuzco.....23

D

Damas River.....49
Davila, Colonel.....309
Daza, General Hilarion.....275
Debt.....205, 268, 317, 331, 424
De Hoz.....47
Deputies.....429
Derteano, Dionisio..... 305
Diaz, Alonzo.....79
Dike at Santiago.....121
Dioceses.....118
Distaff.....30
Dominicans.....119
Drawing.....31
Drunkenness 29
Durois.....241
Dutch.....84
Duties.....331
Dyes.....31

E

Earthquake..... .79, 112, 401
Easter Island.....405
Echeverria, Don Joaquim.....186
Education.....330, 415
Edwards.....330
Egan, Patrick.....371
Egaña, Juan 156
Egaña, Don Mariano,..... 198
Electoral College.....237
Electricity..... 330
Elespuru.....221
Elizande... 213
Elorreaga.....153
El Paposo.....102
Emeraldas River.....22
Encalada, Manuel Blanco.....153, 172. 180, 182, 204, 211, 222.
Encol.....39
England 133
English..... ....84, 105, 111, 119, 377
Ercilla, Alonzo de.....68

PAGE

Errazuriz, Fernando.....198, 202
Errazuriz, Fredrico....247, 255, 262, 318
Escala, General Erasmo.....278, 290
"Esmeralda".....182, 189, 245
Espejo.....172
Espinosa, Julio.....365
Espiritu Santo.....83, 85
Estanco.....130
Exports.....267, 268, 419
Eyzaguirre, Augustin.....152, 198, 211
Eyzaguirre, José Alejo.....225

F

Farmer, The.....29
Fauna.....405
Feudal tenure.....47
Ferdinand VII.....127, 128, 180
Fernandini.....221
Ferreti, Mastai.....204
Feuillé.....107
Figueras.....121
Figueroa, Don Tomas de.....145
Finances.....226
Fine Arts.....417
Fire Department.....331
Flora.....407
Florin.....225
Food.....29
Forests.....407
Fort Liben.....83
Fowls.....29
France.....232
Franciscans.....119, 151
Frate, Celestino del.....269
Freire, Ramon... 162, 176, 177, 196, 201, 212.
Freire, Francisco.....330
French.....114, 119, 121
Frias.....260
Fruits.....407
Fuegians.....384
Fuente, Luis Merlo de la.....97, 125
Fuentes, Captain.....351

G

Gainza, General Gavina.....158
Gallo, Pedro Leon.....235, 237
Galvarino.....181
Galvez.....247
Gamarra.....220, 299
Gamboa, Martin Ruiz de.....77, 80, 125

PAGE

Games.....40
Garcia de Garcia, Aurelio..284, 306, 322
Garcilasso.....28
Garezan.....287
Garin, Captain.....351
Garments.....30
Garido.....222
Garro, Don José de.....107, 126
Gas.....232
Gasco.....46
Gavilan.....167
Gay, Claudio.....224
"General Orbegoso" (warship).....219
Germans.....232, 377
Glass.....393
Godeffroy & Son.....249
Godinez, Juan.....59
Godoi.....365
Godoi, Manuel.....127
Gordas.....141
Gold.....31, 43, 49
Gorbea.....224
Gorostiago, Col. Alejandro.....322
Government.....409, 420, 425
Governors.....421, 447
Goyeneche.....133
Gramuset, Antony.....114
Grapes.....389
Grasales, Doctor.....118
Grass.....389
Grau, Miguel.....280. 285, 286, 288
Great Britain.....232
Guaianeco.....404
Guaitecas.....404
Guano.....240, 259, 268, 324, 396
Guanoalca.....84, 86
Guayaquil.....130
Guechiuntereo.....85
Gueagan.....29
Guemes, Miguel.....239
Guenucolquin.....104
Guentecol.....239
Guepotan.....83, 85
Guill, Antonio de, y Gonzaga...113, 126
Guipuzcoa.....121
Guise, Captain.....181, 189
Guzman, Luis Muñoz de.....118, 123, 126, 198.

H

Habits.....31

PAGE

Haciendas.....377
Hamlets.....29
"Hanibal of the Andes".....161
Harbors.....402
Harrison, Benjamin F.....370
Henriquez, Father Camilo.....156
Henriquez, Juan de.....107, 126
Hilliar, Captain.....143
Hill of the Baron.....222
Himeria, Bishop of.....326
Holland.....94
Holy Alliance.....204
Hospitals.....330
Hospitallers.....119
Hotham, Rear-Admiral.....342
Hoyos, Colonel.....185
Hoz, Sanchez de.....41
Huacho.....190
Hualqui.....113
Huamachuco.....27, 322
Huancayo.....325
Huanuco.....27
Huaque.....132
Huaro.....190
Huascar.....24
Huasco.....33, 112, 113
Huayana Capac.....22, 27
Huenecura.....95
Huilliches.....28
"Hussars of Death".....171

I

Iglesias.....309, 323
Illegitimacy.....326
Illicura.....39, 99
Immigration.....390
Imperial.....49, 83, 94
Imperial, Siege of.....70
Imports.....268
Incas.....22, 28
"Independencia" (steamer).....181, 245
Indians.....30, 404
Industries.....28
Infante, José Miguel.....152, 198
Inspectors.....448
Intendentes.....421, 447
Intrepid.....181
Iquique.....346, 418
Irizarri, Antonio José de.....156, 199
Irrazabal, Don Fernando.....118
Islands.....403, 404

PAGE

Italians.....119
"Itata".....347, 368
Itata River.....46, 151

J

Janequeo.....85
Jariez.....228
Jauregui, Augustin de.....114, 126
Jesuits.....112, 119, 232
Jesus.....91
Jonte, Antonio.....135, 144
Juan Fernandez Islands...111, 116, 159, 405.
Jujay.....160
Junin.....346
Junta de Gobierno.....143
Justice, Administration of.....421, 446

K

Karampanque.....82
Kilacoyan mines.....91
Kilpatrick.....246
King Charles.....23
Korner, Colonel.....346

L

La Cerda.....147
La Cotero.....295, 314
Lacunza.....119
La Fuente.....221
Lagomarsino, Captain.....302
Lagos, Colonel Pedro.....303, 311
La Igualdad.....230
Lake Lauquen.....49
Lakes.....388, 400
Language.....28
La Paz.....133
La Perouse.....120
La Plata.....135
La Plata, Viceroyalty of.....114
La Puerta.....307
La Serena.....45, 47, 84, 107, 418, 420
La Serna.....191
Las Heras, Juan Gregorio..157, 172, 187
Las Salinas, Battle of.....22, 34
Lastarria, José Victorino.....239, 264
Lastra, Francisco de.....155, 217
Latorre, Captain.....283, 302
Lautaro.....54, 60
"Lautaro"(frigate).....179

PAGE

Lauzas....134
Law of Civil Responsibilities....236
Laws....31
Lazarettos....330
Lead....31
Leaven....29
Lebas....172
Legislation....433
"Lerzundi" (warship)....243
Leucoton....57
Leviantu....114
Levipillan....101
Leyra, Colonel....302
Liberales del Gobierno....332, 335
"Liberating Army of the Andes"....161
Library, National....156, 416
Liceo de Mora....224
Lientur....101
Ligua....112
Lillemu....76
Lillo, Eusebio....306
Lima....23, 130, 133, 188, 324
Linares....418
Lincopichion....105
Lincoyan....48, 56, 65, 71
Liquors....29
Lircay, Battle of....218
Lisperguer, Juan Rodulfo....96
Literature....224
Lizarroga, D. Fr. Reginaldo....79
Loans....261
Lobos....324
Loncomallu....104
Loncomilla, Battle of....231
Lonconobal....82
Loncothegua....91, 101
Loom....30
Los Angeles....111, 151, 418
Los Loros, Battle of....235
Lota....232
Lowe....172
Loyola, Don Martin Oñez de....89, 91, 92, 125.
Luco, Barros....339
Lumaco....89, 97
Luque, Father....22
Lynch, Patrick, 305, 307, 310, 315, 322, 373

M

Mackenna, Benjamin Vicuña..1521, 72, 235, 263, 373.

PAGE

Magellan, Ferdinand....23
Magellan, Straits of, 32, 51, 229, 266, 404
Magistracies....117
Magu....29
Maize....29, 389
Manco....24
Mancura, Marquis of....104
Manso, José de....111, 126
Manufactures....31
Manzanera....185
Mapochinians....27, 42
Mapocho River....43, 113, 121, 122
Mapocho (valley)....28
Maquegua....39
Marco....129
Maria Louisa....127
"Maria Isabel"....180
Mariantu....53, 71
Mariloan....214
Marino....137, 158
Mariquina....39
Markets....226
Marmolejo, D. Fr. Bartolemé Roderigo Gonzales,....71
Maroto, General....163
Marriage....270, 326
Martin, Gasper....144, 148
Martinez....304, 311
Martinez, Carlos Walker....261
Marven....39
Matta....237, 369
Maturano, Marcas....239
Maule, Province of....116, 118, 211, 218
Maule River....22, 28, 148
Maypo....122, 157
"Maypo"....347
Mazarredo, Eusebio....242
Meal....29
Medellin, D. Fr....71
Medina, Don Francisco Todeo Diaz de, y Collado....123, 126
Meiggs, Henry....241
Melendez, Pedro....98
Melilanca....83
Melipilla....41, 111, 418
Melipuru....65
Membrillar....153
Mendoza, Don Garcia Hurtado de..60, 63, 122, 125.
Menesés, Francisco de....106, 125
Mestizos....81

PAGE

Metals....32
Military System....39
Militia....113
Millacolquin....89
Millalauco....62
Miller, Major....172, 179, 185, 373
Minerals....268
Mines....260, 377
Mining....28, 31
Mirabé....191
Miraflores....314
Miranda....44, 137
Missionaries....97, 99, 110
Mocha....104
Mocopulli....203
Molina, Alonzo....84
Molina, Juan Ignacio....119
Molina, Pedro....107
Monteagudo....170, 193
"Monteaguado" (warship)....219
Money....267, 424
Monopolies....120
Monroy, Alonzo....42, 44
Montalban, Diego....100
Monte Pinto....63
Montero, Diego Gonzales....106, 125
Montero, Lizardo....293, 316, 323
Montevideo....134
Montt, Jorge....339, 367
Montt, Manuel....229, 233, 237, 251, 319
Montt-Varistas....233, 247, 321, 332, 335
Monvoisin....228
Moon....31
Moore, Captain....280
Moquequa....191
Mora....224
Moraga, Captain....351
Morales, Don Francisco Xavierde, 114, 126, 129.
Morillo....129
Morro Solar....312
Moya....221
Mt. Mariguenu....56, 74, 86
Mt. Sarmiento....404
Municipal Officers....421, 449
Muñoz, Colonel....299
Muxica, Don Martin....106, 125
Muzi, Don Juan....204

N

Nacionales....335

PAGE

Nagtolten....39
Nancu....98
Napoleon....127
Narborough, Sir James....105
Nativity, Fort of....102
Navamorquende, Marquis of....107, 125
Navarro....176
Navy....377, 413
Neculguena....101
Negrete....111, 114
Neirie....163
Nepotism....330
Newspapers....416
Nic-Aguirre, Don Juan....124
Nicochea....164, 172
Niebla....185
Nieto....133
Nitrate....268, 273, 324, 336, 346, 393
Nobility....39
Nongoniel....83
Novoa....209
Nugent....203, 214
"Numancia" (frigate)....244
Numbers....31
Nunez, Admiral Mendez....245, 246

O

Obando, Francisco de....112, 126
O'Brien, Captain....172, 179
Ochagavia....217
"O'Higgins"....181
O'Higgins, Ambrosio....116, 118, 120, 126
O'Higgins, Bernardo....148, 151, 152, 157, 168, 186, 195, 200, 373.
O'Higginistas....210
Oil....31
Olaneta....137
Olivares....119
Ongolmo....71
Orbegoso....223
Order of Mercy....118
Ordoñez....170
O'Reilly, General....188
Orgañez....26
Ornaments....31
Oro, Diego del....53
Osborn....306
Osorio....129, 159, 168
Osorno....69, 95
Osorno, Marquis of....118
Ovalle....418

PAGE

valle, Alfredo....365
valle, Juan Antonio....119, 142
valle, Tomás....217

P

achacamac....21
acific Steam Navigation Co....414
aicavi....98
aillaeco....88
aillamachu....89, 91, 93, 95
aillataru....76, 77
ainting....31
alacios....287
alican....40
anama....193
araguay....132
ardo, Arias....74
areja, General Antonio....149
asses....400
asso....135
astene, Jean Baptista....45
atagonia....325
atagonians....384
aucarpata....222
aullu Topu....24, 25, 26
aynenancu....79, 82
ehuenches....28, 80, 114, 162, 218
elantaru....89
elucones....210
ena....135
eña, Captain....304
enalosa....86
enco....40, 48
eneones....27
enquistos....149
ensions....327
eralta, Francisco Ibanez de....107, 126
ereda, Angel de....106, 125
ereja, Admiral....243
erez, José Joaquin....135, 230, 236, 237, 247, 319.
eru....102, 272
eruvians....25, 29, 289
etorca....112
ezet, President....245
ezuela....133, 179, 189
hilip II....61
hilip V....109
hysics....31
ica, Marquis de la....106
icoaga....221

PAGE

Piculgue....103
Pierola, Nicolas de....295, 309, 315
Pigs....29
Pincheira....214, 218
Pinchincha, Battle of....137
Pineda, Alvaro....96
Pino, Joaquin del....122, 126
Pintado, Bernardo Vera....142
Pinto, Colonel Castro....300
Pinto, Francisco Anibal....210, 212, 216, 264, 318.
Pinzon, Admiral....242
Pipiolas....209
Pirates....84
Pisagua....346, 420
Pisco....189
Pissis....229
Pius IX....204
Pizarro, Francisco....21, 35
Pizarro, Gonzalo....24, 46
Pizarro, Hernando....23
Pizarro, Juan....24
Plains....32
Planchon....162
Plants....29
Police....331
Political Parties....420
Ponchos....32
Ponte, Marco del....160, 162, 165
Population....32, 262, 420, 423
Portada de la Guia....223
Portales, Don Diego....147, 217, 221, 222, 223.
Portales, Cea & Co....205
Portugal....127
Posadas....136
Post offices....412
Potatoes....29
Potosi....137, 160
Potrillo....184
Pottery....30
Poveda, Tomás Martin de....107, 126
Prado, President....245, 280, 282, 289
Pran....66
Prat, Belisario....265, 282
Prato, Belisario....336
President....333, 420, 436
Prieto, Joaquin....178, 216, 223, 227, 319
Promancions....27, 34
Property rights....29
Protector of Peru....118, 191

PAGE

Provinces....116, 423
Prueba....183
Public works....391
Puchanqui....86
Pudeto, Battle of....210
Puelches....28, 39, 83, 85
Puerta Olivia....347
Puerto Montt....232, 420
Pueyredon....136
Pulse....29
Pumacagua....159
Punta Arenas....229, 385
Puren....39, 84
Puren, Fort of....111
Putaendo....162
Putapichion....101

Q

Quanagua....39
Quecheregua....39, 154
Quemada, Juan de Xara....98, 125
Quepuanta....104
Quevada, Dr....259
Quiapo....71
Quichua....28
Quilacura....46
Quillai....31
Quillin....105, 111, 114
Quillota....41, 222, 418
Quillotanes....27, 45
Quilo....155
Quinel....102
Quinones, Francisco de....93, 125
Quintano....172
Quintanilla, Gen. Antonio....210
Quintero....345
Quintero Bay....84
Quintuguenu....86
Quirihue....112
Quiroga, Roderigo de....72, 76, 79, 125
Quito....21, 133, 137
Quitoan Kingdom....27

R

Rabbit....29
Radicales....335
Railroads....232, 236, 241, 253, 259, 268, 330, 331, 391, 409.
Ramirez, General....133, 259
Ramon, Alonzo Garcia....62, 81, 84, 94, 125.

PAGE

Rancagua....158, 236
Rapel River....28
Rayna....144
Recabárren....290, 313
Recloma....50
Religion....31, 242, 425
Rencu....65, 71
Repocura....39
Revenues....226, 266, 331
Reyes, Alejandro....239
Reyes, Antonio Garcia....230
Reynoso, Alonzo....64, 69
Reynoso, Francisco....52
Rezabal, José de....121, 126
Riggin, Charles W....369
Rights of Citizens....450
Rio, Juan Garcia del....192
Riojo, Fort....185
Rios, Colonel....293
Rios, Gonzalo....45
Rivera, Alonzo de....94, 95, 98, 123
Riveros, Galvarino....284, 290, 296, 305
Rivers....388, 400
Rivos....221
Roads....25, 121
Robelledo....101
Roble....151
Robles, Colonel....342
Robleria....103
Robolledo, Juan Williams....245, 278
Rodgers, Commodore....246
Rodriguez....287
Rodriguez, Manuel....162, 171, 175
Rodriguez, Carlos....213
Rodriguez, José Santiago....204
Rodriquez....134
Rojas, José Antonio de....115, 142
Roman Catholics....242
Rondeau....136
Rosales....119, 144
Rosalis, Don Rosario de....139
Rosas, Domingo Ortiz de....112, 126
Royal Audience....96
Rozas, Domingo....405
Rozas, Doctor Juan Martinez de....144

S

Saavedra....25
Saavedra, Cornelio....265, 315
Salamanca, Manuel de....111, 126
Salas, Manuel....156

PAGE

Salaverry-Gamarra 220, 221
Saldias.....178
Salt.....31
Salta.....134, 160
Salvador.....234
San Bruno.....160
San Carlos.....150, 184, 202
San Carlos, Duke of.....118
Sanchez, Juan Francisco..150, 153, 208
San Felipe.....235, 418
San Fernando.....111
San Francisco.....341
San Fuentes.....234, 251, 332, 336
Sangarara.....132
San Juan.....312
San Lorenzo,.....135
San Luis de Loyola,.....92
San Martin...118, 133, 136, 160, 164, 200
San Miguel, D. Fr. Antonio de, y Solier.....79
San Pedro.....106
San Roman.....221
San Rosendo.....106
San Sebastian.....121
Santa Barbara.....113
Santa Cruz, Andres.....220, 223, 294
Santa Juana.....177
Santa Maria, Domingo....235, 245, 265, 318, 325, 327, 329, 332.
Santa Rosa.....164
Santa Teresa.....312
Santiago.....42, 107, 211, 376, 415, 418
Santiago, Diocese of 118
Santo Domingo.....121
Saravia, Diego.....96
Saravia, Melchor, Bravo de.....78, 125
Sardinia.....232
Sarmiento, Domingo Faustino.....228
Schley, Captain.....368
Schools.....269, 413, 415, 416
Senate.....421
Senators.....429
Serrano, Lieut.....282
Seville.....128
Siereo.....29
Silva, General-.....309, 322
Silva, Waldo.....338
Silver.....31
Simpson, Robert.....223
Sinchi Rocca.....27
Sinclair, Sir John.....214

PAGE

Slavery.....117
Smallpox 118
Smuggling.....194
Smyth's Channel.....404
Soap.....31
Socabaya, Battle of.....221
Solar, Miguel.....164, 213, 221
"Sons of the Land".....171
Soto, Colonel.....342
Sotomayor, Alonzo de.....80, 84, 125
Sotomayor, Emilio.....275, 293, 311
Sotomayor, Luis de.....86
Sotomayer, Rafael.....264, 284, 300
Spaniards.....25
Spindle,.....30
Steamship Lines.....225, 331, 414
Suarez, Colonel.....309, 316
Suarez, Inez.....42
Sub-delegates.....448
Sucre.....137
Sueltos 335
Suffrage.....426
Sun.....31
Syri Tupac.....89

T

Tacna.....418
Taforo, Francisco de Paullo....269, 325
Tagle, Francisco Ruiz.....217
Tagle, Torre.....193
Tajamar.....121
Talambo.....242
Talaverrano, Fernando.....100, 125
Talbot, John W.....369
Talca.....94, 104, 111, 150, 153, 235, 418
Talcahuana.....69, 150, 167, 169
Talcamavida, Fort of.....106, 113
Taltal.....347
Tapia, Juan.....84
Tarapacá.....324, 336, 346
Tariff.....196, 202, 232, 267
Tarochina.....82
Tavira, San Salvador de.....243
Telegraph.....241, 262. 268, 412
Telephone.....330
Tierra del Fuego.....404
Timber.....390
Tin.....31
Tithes 130
Tobacco.....130, 196, 317
Tocapilla.....346

PAGE

Tocornal, Manuel Antonio.....230, 239
Toesca, Joaquin.....124
Tonatiuh.....21
Tools.....31
Toquis.....30, 39
Torrico.....221, 314
Tounens, M. de.....239
Trade.....266
Treaties.....121, 232, 253, 323, 325, 371
Tribes.....27
Tribunal of Audience.....116
Tribunal of Vigilance.....160
Trinidad.....83, 84
Tristan.....129, 135
Tucapel.....39, 53, 63, 71, 88, 102
Tucapel, Fortress of.....52, 111
Tucuman.....73, 135
Tumbez.....27
Tunconobal.....67
Tupac Amaru.....89, 132
Tupac Yupanqui.....22
Tupper, Colonel.....218
Tutuben.....111

U

Ubalde.....132
Ulloa, Lopez de, y Lemus.....100, 125
Ulloa, Pedro Sorez de.....101, 125
Ulmen.....29, 39
Umachiri.....133
University, National.....112, 156, 415
Urban Population.....418
Uribe, Lieut.....282
Urmeneta, José Tomás.....255
Urriola, Colonel.....231
Uspallata Pass.....162
Ustariz, Juan Andres de.....107, 126
Utensils.....30
Uthal-mapu.....38
Utiflame.....99

V

Vaccination.....118, 331
Valdez, General.....298
Valdiveiso, Raphael Valentine....225, 233, 257, 269.
Valdivia (city).....84, 93, 107, 148, 184, 384, 418, 419.
Valdivia, Fortress of.....116
Valdivia harbor.....104
"Valdivia" (vessel).....190

PAGE

Valdivia, Luis de.....97
Valdivia, Pedro de...35, 36, 40, 118, 125, 221.
Valparaiso.....84, 107, 208, 211, 376, 418
Valparaiso, Marquis of.....118
Valverde, Colonel.....278
Varas, Antonio.....230, 233, 236, 330
Vecchio.....100
Vega, Francisco Laso de la.....103, 125
Vegetables.....29, 407
Velasco.....78
Venezuela.....137
Venganza.....179
Vera, Doctor Bernardo.....156, 206
Vergara, Eujenio.....321
Vergara, José Francisco,..300, 306, 321, 330.
Vial, Don Agustin.....198, 230
Vicuña, Claudio.....348, 357, 365
Vicuña, Francisco Ramon.....215, 235
Vicuña, Manuel.....225
Vidaurre, Juan.....222, 235
Viel, Admiral.....365
Vilcapugio.....135
Villac Umu.....24
"Villa de Madrid" (vessel).....246
Villagran, Francisco de...46, 47, 56, 73, 125.
Villagran, Pedro.....59, 125
Villalobos.....160
Villa Nueva.....163
Villarica.....49, 79, 86, 94
Vilumilla.....110
Vineyards.....377, 389
Viscarra, Pedro de.....89, 92, 125
Volcanoes.....32

W

Wheat.....389
Wheelright, William.....225
Whitehead.....240
Wine.....130, 389
Wine-making.....389
Women.....30
Wyndham.....179

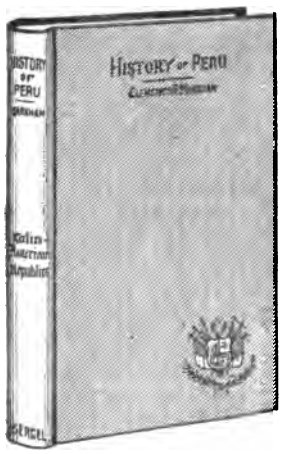
X

Xauxa.....27, 193
Ximenes.....101

Y	PAGE
Yaghans	384
Yanacocha	221
Yerbas Buenas	150
Yumbel	93, 106
Yungay	223
Yupanqui	27

Z	PAGE
Zambrano, Mateo de Toro	143
Zañartu, Luis de	113
Zapiga	341
Zentano, Don Ignacio	186
Zuniga, Francisco de	104, 125
Zurita, Juan,	73

LATIN-AMERICAN REPUBLICS



Under this general title we are publishing a series of histories of South American and Central American Republics, countries which are known to English and American readers only through the medium of books of travel and histories of limited periods. Closer commercial relations with these countries, their enormous resources, and the many thrilling incidents in their histories make most important this series of books, giving a complete presentation of their past and present national life. Each volume is being written by a foremost authority, will cover the period from pre-Columbian times to 1892, and will be profusely illustrated.

I. History of Peru, by Clements R. Markham. C. B., F. R. S., F. S. A., President Hakluyt Society, late Secretary Royal Geographical Society, and author of "Cuzco and Lima," "Peru and India," etc. 8vo. Cloth, - - - - - - - - $2.50

II. History of Chile, by Anson Uriel Hancock, 8vo. Cloth, - - - - - - - - $2.50

Author of "Old Abraham Jackson," "Coitlan; A Tale of the Inca World," etc.

III. History of Brazil, by John C. Redman and William Eleroy Curtis, - - - - - $2.50

Author of "Capitals of Spanish America," etc., and Director of the Bureau of American Republics.

IV. History of Argentina, by Mary Aplin Sprague. 8vo. Cloth, - - - - - $2.50

V. History of Bolivia, by T. H. Anderson, United States Envoy Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to Bolivia. 8vo. Cloth, - - - - $2.50

Other volumes are in preparation.

The above books will be sent postpaid on receipt of price by the publishers.

CHARLES H. SERGEL & CO., CHICAGO.

THREE LITERARY MASTERPIECES

By ALFRED DE MUSSET:—

Barberine, and Other Comedies. 16mo. Cloth, gilt top, - - - - - - - - - - $1.25

The grace and delicacy of his remarkable dramas, the intensity with which the story is adapted to the moral, the abundant wit which illustrates and pervades them, make them unique in literature.—GEORGE SAINTSBURY.

Strange, fantastic, exquisite little comedies.—HENRY JAMES

De Musset was the merry and capricious Ariel, taking it into his head here and there to play the part of Caliban: he was the sly Puck, taking delight in the ass's head of Titania's lover. The utmost of which the mind is capable in suddenness, caprice, and promiscuity, seemed to compose his essence; the grotesque, the quaint, the impossible welled within him every instant with the most charming inspirations, and formed the many colored tissue of his style.—*Demogeot.*

The Beauty Spot, and Other Stories. 16mo. Cloth, illustrated, gilt top, - - - - - $1.25

In the quality of his fancy Musset always reminds us of Shakespeare. * * * Several of his tales are masterpieces.—*Henry James.*

His *nouvelles* are extraordinarily brilliant; his poems are charged with passion, fancy and fine satiric power; in his plays he hits upon a method of his own, in which no one has dared or availed to follow him with any closeness.—*Encyclopedia Britannica.*

The Confession of a Child of the Century. 16mo. Cloth, gilt top, - - - - - - - - $1.25

"The Confession of a Child of the Century" is rather a monody than a story; it opens with a chapter of wonderful force and effect—a sort of battle symphony, rising to sublime bursts. The whole book abounds in sublime passages of the greatest eloquence and beauty, in pithy and pregnant sentences which condense great observation and knowledge of human nature, in chapters which are perfect poems of fancy and tenderness, and interrupt the chant of the narrative like strains of soft music.—*Westminster Review.*

The above books are beautifully bound in gold and silver and blue and brown. They will be sent postpaid on receipt of the price by the publishers.

CHARLES H. SERGEL & CO., CHICAGO.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
3 9015 01219 5619